This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

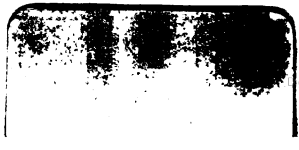
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

3 3433 07139467 4

Digitized by Google

4-23-58 10447

Belle Kermit Roosevelt



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

COMPLETE ITALIAN MASTER;

10447

CONTAINING

The best and easiest Rules for attaining that LANGUAGE:

By Signor VENERONI,

Italian Secretary to the late French King.

Translated into ENGLISH, and compared wih the last LYONS' Edition.

A NEW EDITION,

CAREFULLY REVISED AND IMPROVED,

And the *Italian* Words properly accented, to facilitate the Pronunciation to Learners.

LONDON:

Printed for E. WINGRAVE, in the Strand;

Successor to J. MARDON.

1809

LIBRERIA NOVA
BUENOS AIRES
"LA ANTIQUARIA"

Digitized by Google

T. C. Hansard, PRINTER, Peterborough-court, Fleet-street, London.

Digitized by Google

THE

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE,

TO THE

NEW EDITION.

WHEN we reflect on the number of great men in every department of sciences and arts, whom Italy has been continually producing since the glorious age of Leo X. as likewise on the pleasure and instruction to be obtained by visiting that happy country, and the necessity of understanding the Italian language, to make that visit to any purpose; it is no wonder that the Grammars and Dictionaries, written to propagate the knowledge of the Italian tongue, have been so greatly multiplied. Without a proper acquaintance with this idiom, all the treasures of Italian learning and literature, all the discoveries and inventions of genius and industry in that nation, would be lost to the rest of mankind. No doubt, a translation, which requires a knowledge of the original in one man only, may supply the want of that blessing in thousands. But where the interpreters are few, the mistakes and inaccuracies must, from man's natural aversion to much trouble, when his interest does not lead him to discoveries, be proportionably numerous. Besides, there is a fine spirit so peculiar to every language, as to evaporate almost entirely, in the most studied and cautious endeavours to transfuse it into others: and, though the bulk of mankind may take up with the body only, there will always be, in every civilized nation, a number of refined and philosophical minds, ambitious of possessing the better part, sufficient to justify any pains taken to help them to the acquisition of that rational and sublime enjoyment.

It was upon these principles, the editor undertook, some years ago, a translation from the French, with improvements and additions, to make it suit the English

Digitized by Google

diom, of the then best as well as newest edition of VENERONI'S GRAMMAR, a work far surpassing all other introductions to that elegant tongue, which, for its richness and softness, and the stores of every kind of useful knowledge and polite entertainment locked up in its authors, is inferior to no language in Europe. These improvements consisted of an Introduction to Syntax; an Essay on Italian Poetry, or a Treatise on the Italian Versification; the different Compositions in Verse, and Poetic Licences; a Treatise on compound Words, Capitals, and Stops; and finally, a Discourse on Expletives, the energy and beauty of which constitute great part of the merit of most languages.

But, *non omnia possumus omnes.* Such is the reputation of Veneroni's Grammar on the Continent; and so great the number of those who wish to be able not only to understand but to speak the Italian language; that very material observations upon that work have been published abroad since our last edition of it in English. This consideration, joined to that translation's being out of print, has induced us to offer the public the following New Edition, in which we have combined the fruits of our own enquiries and remarks, with those of learned foreigners. We have likewise added some new Grammatical observations on the Italian language; with Remarks on the Letters of the Alphabet; some new Dialogues, new Phrases, Letters, and Stories; also the Italian words properly accented, to facilate the pronunciation to learners. After all, we must not take upon us to say that it is impossible any better edition of this Work should *ever* appear. But this we may safely affirm, that it will be many years before Veneroni's Grammar of the Italian language can be carried to a greater degree of perfection than that in which we now offer it to the English reader; and therefore, we venture not only to offer it, but recommend it; and besides, stake our credit to the justness of that recommendation.

INTRO-

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

TO THE

ITALIAN TONGUE,

For the Use of those who do not understand LATIN.

THE most expeditious and the surest way of writing and speaking Italian, French, and all other languages, with propriety, is to learn them by the principles of Grammar. Yet, nobody has hitherto undertaken to explain the terms of that art, which are puzzling to such as do not understand Latin, and particularly to the Fair Sex. In order therefore to facilitate the method of acquiring this agreeable language, I have given an explanation of the necessary terms in the following Introduction.

But before I enter upon the subject, I must acquaint the reader, that in the present Grammar, I have made use of the orthography embraced by the modern Italians, as the safest, and best adapted for rendering the study of this language easy to foreigners; as also with a view of serving a great many Italians themselves, who perhaps are not perfectly acquainted with the orthography which now prevails among the best writers of their own nation.

N. B. In order, therefore, to establish this modern orthography, I have omitted a great number of accents with which most Italian Grammars were formerly crowded; and I have retained only a few grave ones, where they may be of use to distinguish one word from another, or for the right pronunciation of some particular term. For which reason, I have retained the grave accent on the last vowel of the third person singular

Digitized by Google

An Explanation of the TERMS *of Grammar.*

THE first terms of grammar are the Letters. There are no more than twenty letters in the Italian tongue according to the opinion of some grammarians, viz. *a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, z.*

According to others there are twenty-two: and the letters which they add, are *j* and *v* consonants. The latter opinion deserves the preference. The Italians do not make use of *k, x, y.*

The letters are divided into vowels and consonants.

The vowels are *a, e, i, o, u.* They are called vowels, from their forming a perfect sound alone, without the assistance of the other letters: as *a* is pronounced single: *e* the same; and in like manner the other vowels.

The consonants are the other letters, *b, c, d, f, g, j, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, z.* We give them the name of consonants, because we cannot pronounce them without the help of a vowel before or after them: example, *b* is pronounced as if there was a *b* and *e* together, to wit, *be*; *f*, as *ef*, and so of the rest.

H, especially at the beginning of a word, is not properly a letter, but only a note of aspiration; therefore it is never pronounced in Italian: yet the use made of it in the middle of words, is greater than most people imagine. See what we say of it, in treating of the pronunciation of consonants.

It is the mixture of the letters, that generally forms the different words which every language is capable of producing: and, that some order may be observed in the infinite number of words, they have been reduced to nine heads, or parts of speech, though most Italians reckon no more than eight.

A speech is composed of sentences.
Sentences are composed of words.
Words of syllables.
Syllables of letters.

Letters

Digitized by Google

Letters are certain marks or characters, which serve to form the syllables and words, as, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *e*, &c.

A syllable is part of a word pronounced with a single sound, and composed of one, two, or three letters, as, *astrólogo*, an astrologer, is composed of four syllables, *as-tro-lo-go*, the second of which is composed of three letters, and the rest of two. *A-mo*, I love, is composed of two syllables, the former of a single letter, and the latter of two.

Sometimes a word contains but one syllable, and then we call it a monosyllable (a term of Greek derivation), that is to say, having but one syllable; as, *rè*, a king; *me*, me; *te*, thee, &c.

A word consists either of one or more syllables; as *rè*, *amóre*.

A sentence is composed of many words, that form a complete sense; as, *per ben parlare Italiano, bisogna parlare Toscano, e pronunciare come i Romani*; to speak good Italian, we must speak as they do in Tuscany, and pronounce as they do at Rome.

A speech, or discourse, is composed of nine parts; which are—the Article, Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle, Adverb, Preposition, Conjunction, and Interjection—We cannot name any word but what is contained under one of these parts, which are all comprised in the following Treatise. Those who reckon but eight parts of speech, leave out the Article.

Digitized by Google

An Explanation of the PARTS *of Speech.*

IN order to understand a language with ease, we should endeavour to obtain a perfect knowledge of the parts of speech and their meaning; otherwise it is impossible ever to understand, or speak it correctly. According to the above order, I should begin with the Article; but, that I may be the better understood, I shall commence with the Noun.

Of the NOUNS.

A Noun is a word which serves to name and distinguish some thing: as, *Dio*, God; *ángelo*, an angel; *uómo*, a man; *ciélo*, heaven; *térra*, earth; *cavállo*, a horse; *líbro*, a book; *cappéllo*, a hat; *távola*, a table; *páne*, bread; *víno*, wine, &c.

There are two sorts of nouns: one is called a noun-substantive, and the other a noun-adjective.

The noun substantive is that which subsists by itself, or that expresses the name of a thing, which we presently understand upon the first mentioning; as heaven, earth, the king, a horse, a book; we know the meaning of the words, heaven, earth, the king, &c.

The noun-adjective is a word that denotes the qualities of the substantive, and that cannot be understood when mentioned by itself; as great, *gránde*; fine, *béllo*; little, *píccolo*; red, *rósso*: we know not what is great, fair, little, or red, unless we join a substantive to it; as a great book, a fine book, a little book, a red book; a great hat, a fine hat, a little hat, a red hat.

Every noun is either of the masculine or the feminine gender.

The masculine gender is marked by the article *il*, or *lo*, in English *the*.

The feminine gender is marked by the article *la*, in English also by *the*.

All nouns, before which we may place *il* or *lo*, are of the masculine gender; and those, before which we place *la*,

Digitized by Google

la, are of the feminine gender; example, *il libro*, the book: *il fuóco*, the fire; *lo spécchio*, the looking-glass; are of the masculine gender; *La térra*, the earth, *la cámera*, the chamber, *la pénna*, the pen; are of the feminine gender.

*** Observe, that the noun substantive is never but of one gender; that is to say, either masculine or feminine, as *Dío*, God, *ciélo*, heaven, *giardíno*, garden, are always of the masculine gender, and never of the feminine. *Térra*, the earth, *cámera*, a chamber, are feminine and never masculine.

The noun adjective ought to agree with the substantive; when it terminates in *o*, it is masculine; and when it terminates in *a*, it is feminine. Take notice, that all nouns adjective masculine, ending in *o*, may become feminine, by changing *o* into *a*; *béllo*, *bélla*, handsome; *píccolo*, *píccola*, little; *buóno*, *buóna*, good; *sánto*, *sánta*, holy.

There are some nouns adjective, which, without changing their termination, are of both genders; and they are those which, in Italian, end in *e* in the singular number, as, *illústre*, *ammirábile*, *fácile*, &c. One may say, *un' uómo illústre*, an illustrious man: *una dónna illústre*, an illustrious woman: *úno spírito ammirábile*, a wonderful wit; *una bellézza ammirábile*, a wonderful beauty: *un libro fácile*, an easy book; *una leżione fácile*, an easy lesson.

*** Observe, that all nouns adjective, which end in *e* in Italian, are of the common gender.

All nouns before which *il* or *lo* and *la*, in English *the*, may be placed indifferently, are adjectives; as, *il prudénte*, *la prudénte*, prudent; *il dótto*, *la dótta*, learned.

The nouns, before which *il* or *lo*, and *la*, in English *the*, must not be placed indifferently, but only one of them, are nouns substantive; as, *il sóle*, the sun; *la lúna*, the moon; *il giardíno*, the garden; *il frútto*, the fruit; *la virtù*, virtue; *la prudénza*, prudence.

Nouns that can change *o* into *a* are also adjectives; thus of *dótto*, learned, you may form *dótta*, learned;

Digitized by Google

but of *lúna, giardíno, térra,* &c. which are nouns substantive, you cannot form *lúno, giardína, térro,* &c.

A noun is also of the singular or the plural number.

The singular number is used where we speak of one thing only; as, the prince, *il princípe;* the body, *il córpo;* the horse, *il cavállo:* where we speak but of one prince, of one body, and of one horse.

The plural number is used when we speak of more than one; as, the princes, *i príncipi;* the bodies, *i córpi;* the horses, *i caválli:* here we speak of many princes, many bodies, and many horses.

These little words of two or three letters, as *il* or *lo, la,* in English *the; gli* or *i,* which signify *the* in the plural, and are placed before nouns to mark the gender, number, and case, are called Articles.

Of the ARTICLES.

THE Article is a declinable word, of one, two, or three letters, which is put before the nouns to shew their gender, number, and case.

The gender and number have been explained already.

But not to perplex the memory, I have inserted the explanation of the cases after the parts of speech, as it will be time enough then to learn them; and it is sufficient, at present, to know that the articles in English are *the, of the, to the, from the;* and they are used both in the singular and plural number.

You cannot always know the gender, number, or case of nouns, except by the article that precedes them. If one should ask, for example, what gender the word *piéde,* a foot, is of, it would be impossible to know, without prefixing an article to it: the articles *il* and *lo* serve for the masculine, and *la* for the feminine; so that in saying *il piéde,* the foot, the article *il* shews it is of the masculine gender.

In like manner, if a person should ask what number any

Digitized by Google

any other word is of, the question could not always be resolved, without putting the articles *il, lo, i,* or *gli,* before it, to mark the singular or the plural number.

*** Observe, that when an article comes before a word beginning with a vowel, the last letter of the article must be cut off; that is to say, you retrench the vowel at the end of the article, and in the place of it, you put an apostrophe, which is made thus (’). Example: in prefixing an article to *amóre, onóre, ánima,* you must not pronounce, or write, *lo amóre, lo onóre, la ánima;* but *l'amóre, l'onóre, l'ánima,* &c.

In like manner you retrench the vowel in other cases: *dell' amóre, dell' onóre, dell' ánima; all' amóre, all' onóre, all' ánima; dall' amóre, dall' onóre, dall' ánima.*

The Italians never make an elision before words beginning with a *j* or *v*, because the letters *j* and *v* are properly consonants; and those who confound them with the vowels *i* and *u*, are mistaken.

Of the PRONOUNS.

A Pronoun, which the Italians call *Pronóme,* or *Vicenóme,* is a declinable part of speech; so named, because it is used instead of a noun. There are seven sorts of pronouns; to wit,

Pronouns
- Personal,
- Conjunctive,
- Possessive,
- Demonstrative,
- Interrogative,
- Relative,
- Improper.

Some, by useless subdivisions, have, to the preceding, added

Pronouns
- Reciprocal,
- Neuter,
- Monosyllabic,
- Disjunctive, &c.

I shall

Digitized by Google

I shall mention a word or two, by the way, of the former seven.

Of Pronouns personal.

The pronoun personal marks the three persons; to wit, the first, second, and third, as well in the singular as plural.

The first person is he, or she, who speaks; and it is expressed by I, *io*; we, *nói*.

The pronoun personal, *io*, marks the first person singular; as, I speak, *io parlo;* I sing, *io cánto;* I believe, *io crédo: nói* marks the first person plural; as, we speak, *nói parliámo*, &c.

The pronouns personal I, *io;* we, *nói;* belong as well to the masculine gender as to the feminine: so that a woman as well as a man may say, I sing, *io canto;* I see, *io védo:* we sing, *nói cantiámo;* we see, *nói vediámo*, &c.

The second person is that to whom we speak; and it serves also for the masculine and feminine; to wit, thou, *tu*, in the singular number; you, *vói*, in the plural; example, thou speakest, *tu párli;* thou dost sing, *tu cánti;* you speak, *vói parláte:* you sing, *vói cantáte*, &c.

The third person is that of whom we speak; to wit, he, *egli*, for the masculine; she, *élla*, for the feminine; and, in the plural, the masculine makes *églino*, they; the feminine, *elléno:* as, he speaks, *egli párla;* he sings, *egli cánta:* she speaks, *élla parla*: they speak, *églino párlano*, m. *elléno párlano*, f.

** Observe, that there is only *I* and *we* for the first person: there is also only *thou* and *you* for the second; consequently, every sentence, in which there is neither *I, we, thou,* nor *you,* must be of the third person; as the king is willing, *il re vuóle;* the master teaches, *il maéstro inségna*, &c. both which sentences belong to the third person, because they have neither *I, we, thou,* nor *you.*

Of

Digitized by Google

Of the Pronouns conjunctive.

The pronouns conjunctive in Italian are *mi*, me *or* to me; *ti*, thee *or* to thee; *si*, himself *or* to himself, herself, *or* to herself; *ci*, us, *or* to us; *vi*, you, *or* to you; *loro*, them *or* to them.

The pronouns conjunctive have a very great resemblance and affinity with the pronouns personal, as they are always put before the verb, except *lóro;* but with this difference, that the pronouns personal make the action of the verb, before which they are placed, and the pronouns conjunctive receive it; example, *io canto*, I sing; *vói parláte*, you speak; it is *I* and *you* that make the action of the verbs *sing* and *speak*, before which they are placed; and consequently they are pronouns personal. But when we say, *Dio mi véde*, God beholds me, it is *God* makes the action of the verb *behold*, and *me* receives it. In like manner, when we say, *io vi prégo*, I pray you; *vói ci consideráte;* you consider us; I want to know which are the words in these two phrases, that make the action of the verbs, *pray* and *consider?* It is *I* that pray; therefore *io*, I, is the pronoun personal; and *ci*, you, is the pronoun conjunctive.

In the second phrase *vói ci consideráte*, you consider us; it is *vói*, you, that is the pronoun personal, and causes the action of the verb *consider:* but the word *ci*, us, that receives it, is the pronoun conjunctive, &c.

Of Pronouns possessive.

The pronouns possessive mark the possession of a thing: the pronouns possessive are *my, thy, his* or *her, their, our, your:* example, *my horse; thy hat; his* or *her book; my chamber; thy daughter; his house; our judgment; our intention; your wit; your pen; my children; my land; thy pleasures; thy actions; his glass; his chaise; our horses; our towns; your clothes; your hands; their father; their kindred.*

Of

Digitized by Google

Of Pronouns demonstrative.

The pronouns demonstrative serve to point out, as it were, to a person or thing; as *this*, and *that*; *these*, and *those*: example, *this couch*; *this woman*; *that man*; *these books*, &c.

Of Pronouns interrogative.

The pronoun interrogative is used in asking a question; there are but three in English, to wit, *who? what? which?* example, *what would you have? who is there? what woman is that? what do you mean? which man do you mean?*

Of Pronouns relative.

A pronoun relative has reference to a thing or person spoken of before; as, *which*, *who*, *that*, when they are not interrogatives; example, *the book that I read*; *the master who teaches*; *the lesson which I study*.

Of Pronouns improper.

The pronouns improper are, *every*, *every one*, *all*, *any*; or, *nobody*, *none*, *several*, *some other*, &c. They are called improper, because, strictly speaking, they are not pronouns.

*** Note, that those pronouns improper are very much like adjectives, being most of them of the masculine and feminine gender in Italian: but as there is no such distinction as masculine and feminine, in the English pronouns improper, there can be no example of them given here: so that I refer beginners to the third chapter concerning pronouns, where it will be rendered more intelligible to them.

The pronouns improper have also their distinction of singular and plural number; but this, as well as the gender, cannot be explained here by example; it shall be done with more convenience and perspicuity in its proper place.

Of

Digitized by Google.

Of the VERBS.

THE Verb, and the Noun, are the two principal parts of Speech.

The Noun serves to name any thing.

The Verb serves to denote every action that may be performed, by expressing the person and tense; as, *to laugh; to love; to sleep; to run; to nourish; to die; to sing; to teach: I love, we love; I laugh, we laugh,* &c.; *I will love, we will love; I will laugh, we will laugh,* &c.

The verb has neither masculine nor feminine gender; but is distinguished by three *times*, viz. the *present*; the *preter-perfect*, or time past; the *future*, or the time to come. Generally before the verb, there is a pronoun personal; as, *I sing, he sings, we sing; you dance; they sing; I sing, I sung, I will sing, we shall sing.* In which examples the difference of the time of performing the action is obvious.

The change of time or tenses is, in the grammatical phrase known by the name of *conjugation.*

The conjugation of verbs is composed of four parts, viz. of moods, tenses, persons, and number.

Of the MOODS.

A Mood is a grammatical term, used to express the internal operation of the mind and will, and the different ways and manners of acting.

Now this may be done after five manners or moods; and these moods are called indicative, imperative, optative, subjunctive, and infinitive.

The indicative, or demonstrative, as others call it, is the first mood: it shews and declares simply and absolutely, and without any condition, the thing signified by the verb; as when I say, *I sing; I have sung; I will sing;* one may plainly perceive, that there are in these three examples, the time present, past, and to come: without our being obliged to enquire, whether this verb depends on some particle, or mark, as *that, provided that,*

Digitized by Google

that, &c. in which case, the verb would not be in the indicative, but in the subjunctive.

The imperative marks the action of the verb in commanding and forbidding: example, *sing you, do not sing; go thou, do not go.* It is obvious that, in the foregoing examples, the person speaks either in the way of command or prohibition; and of course, in the imperative.

The optative expresses the action of the verb by wishing and desiring; as *would I had fifty thousand pounds a year; could I but go to Rome; had I but that, how happy should I be!*

The subjunctive or conjunctive, is so called, because it is generally used, with conjunctions before it; such as, *that, although, to the end that, provided that:* example, *my master is willing that I do my duty; although he say that I may write; provided that he come; he desires that I may sing.* The verbs, *do, say, write, come* and *sing*, which follow the conjunctions, are of the subjunctive mood.

The manner of applying conjunctions to verbs will be illustrated when we come to speak of the syntax of verbs, in the second part of this grammar, to which we refer the reader.

The infinitive represents the action of the verb, without marking either the number or person; as, *to love, to write;* one cannot tell what number of persons this action *to love*, or *to write*, is to be done, nor who is to do it.

Of the TENSES.

VERBS have properly but three Tenses; the present, the preter, and the future.

The present denotes a thing done at the very time we are speaking; as, *I sing, you sing*, &c.

The preter, or time past, denotes an action which is no longer present; as, 1. *I did sing;* 2. *I sung;* 3. *I have sung;* 4. *I had sung.*

These four examples plainly shew that an action may be past in four different manners, which is the reason that

Digitized by Google

that there are four different tenses that mark the time past; they are,

1. The preterimperfect,
2. The preterperfect definite.
3. The preterperfect,
4. The preterpluperfect.

The preterimperfect serves for the actions which were present at a certain time; example, *I did sing* or *I was singing, when you came in:* the word, *I did sing*, shews that the action of singing was doing when you came in.

The preterimperfect definite marks and defines the time, the year, or the day, when the action was done; as, *I sung yesterday; I spoke to the king last year.*

We also make use of this tense, in telling or relating any action: example, *last year the king took the field; he made himself master of several towns, and conquered whole provinces; he defeated the enemy, who made a vigorous defence; he struck a terror into his neighbours, and at last forced them to accept of such a peace as he pleased to prescribe.* All the verbs of this example are in the preterperfect definite.

Those who do not understand Latin, have some difficulty to distinguish the preterimperfect from the preterperfect definite: in order to clear this matter, let them read the two following observations.

*** 1. Note, that the preterimperfect may be applied to a time past, or to that which is still in being. By the time still in being, or not quite past, we are to understand a day, a night, a week, a month, a year, the age we live in.

By the time past or that which is no more, we understand yesterday, the day before yesterday, last week, last month, last year, last age. Hence we may use the preterimperfect thus: *I did write to-day, I did sing this week, I did read this month.* On the contrary the preterperfect definite is applied to the time past, and never to that in being; we may say, *I wrote yesterday; I read last week;* but we must not say, *I wrote to-day, I read to-day.*

2. But, to make the difference between the preterimperfect, and the preterperfect definite, more plain and easy

Digitized by Google

easy to the ladies, it suffices to know that the first person of the preterimperfect is always terminated in *vo*, or *va*, in Italian; as *amávo*, I did love; *cantávo*, I did sing; *godévo*, I did enjoy, &c. The preterimperfect definite never has that termination: as *amái*, I loved: *godéi*, I enjoyed, &c.

The preterperfect expresses actions perfectly past; as, I have sung, *ho cantáto;* I have enjoyed, *ho godúto.*

Observe, that we always make use of two verbs to express the preterperfect or compounded tense; as, I have written, *ho scritto;* I had written, *avévo scritto.* It is obvious, that *ho* is one verb, and *scritto*, another. These two verbs are expressed in Italian, as well as in English; but in Latin they make use of a single verb only.

We generally use the preterperfect, to express an action done at a time which is still in being, and not entirely elapsed, as, *I have given; I have written; I have spoken to-day, this morning, this week, this month, in my life-time,* &c. and not as some people, who confound the preterperfect definite with the preterperfect, saying, *I gave, I spoke to-day, this month,* &c. because *to-day, this month,* &c. are times still in being, which we ought to express by the preterperfect, *I have given, I have spoken,* &c. *to-day, this month,* &c.

The preterpluperfect denotes not only an action perfectly past, but likewise shews that it was over before another action of which we are speaking, began: example, *I had supped, when you was singing; I had done writing, when you entered.*

Here it appears plainly that there are four preterits, or past tenses; viz. two simple, and two compound.

The simple are the preterimperfect and the preterperfect definite, which in Italian are expressed by a single verb, with a pronoun personal before it; as, *leggévo*, I did read; *leggévi*, thou didst read; *leggéva*, he did read; *léssi*, I read; *leggésti*, thou readest; *lésse*, he reads. In those examples, there is no more than one verb.

The two compound preterits are the preterperfect and the preterpluperfect; which are always expressed by two verbs,

Digitized by Google

verbs, with a pronoun personal before them; as, *I have written, thou hast written, he has written,* &c. *I had given, thou hadst given, he had given,* &c. In these examples there are two verbs.

The future is a tense that signifies something to come; as, *I will sing, I will speak,* &c. It is either simple or compound; simple in the examples above mentioned; compound when I say, *I shall have read; I shall have written,* &c.

Of the PERSONS.

THE tenses of verbs are composed of three Persons.

The first is always expressed by *I* in the singular number, and by *we* in the plural; as, *I sing, we sing.*

The second person is marked by *thou* in the singular, and *you* in the plural; as *thou singest, you sing.*

The third is *he* and *she* in the singular, and *they* in the plural; as, *he speaks, she speaks, they speak.*

Of the NUMBERS.

THE tenses of the verbs have also two Numbers, the singular and the plural; singular, *I love, thou lovest, he loves;* plural, *we love, ye love, they love.*

Of the PARTICIPLES.

THE Participles are so called, because, although they are verbs, they partake of the nature and quality of adjectives; as *amáto, amáta,* loved; *ornáto, ornáta,* adorned: one may say, *I loved,* and *I have loved; I adored, I have adored;* which are verbs: we also say, *a man beloved, a woman loved, a God adored, a divinity adored;* then those words *loved, beloved, adored,* &c. are nouns adjective, and consequently participles, from their partaking of the nature of adjectives

Digitized by Google

tives and verbs, and from their serving to form the preterperfect.

*** Observe that whenever two verbs follow one another in the same phrase, and that the first is one of the tenses of the verbs *to have* or *to be*, the second is a participle; as, *I have seen, you have spoken, he hath written, I am loved, we are commended:* the words *seen, spoken, written, loved, commended,* are participles.

The former five parts of speech, namely, he Article, Noun, Pronoun, Verb, and Participle, change their termination in Italian: example, *il cavállo del príncipe è béllo,* the prince's horse is handsome; *i caválli de' príncipi sono bélli,* the princes' horses are handsome. By those two examples you may see the change of the articles, nouns, and verbs. By the two following you will see a change of the pronouns and participles: *La vóstra léttera è scritta in una maniéra affettuósa e famigliáre:* your letter is written in an affectionate and familiar style: *Le vóstre léttere sono scritte in términi affettuósi e famigliári,* your letters are written in affectionate and familiar terms.

The other four parts of speech admit of no alteration: as, *mólto,* a great deal, which is an adverb; *con,* with, a preposition; *che,* that, a conjunction; *oimè,* alas, an interjection: they are constantly pronounced and written in the same manner; and it may be observed, that those words have neither gender, number, case nor time.

Of ADVERBS.

ADVERBS are words that help to express in a better manner what the verb denotes, and add more or less force and significancy to it; as, *well, ill, more, clearly, better, hardly:* example, when I say, *I teach,* this expression shows what I do, that is *I teach;* but it does not point out the manner how I teach. To convey this meaning, I add an adverb, thus, *I teach plainly.* We have already observed, that adverbs have neither gender, number, nor case.

There

Digitized by Google

There are a great many sorts of adverbs; but I shall here only give examples of two or three of the most common sort.

Adverbs of time; such as, *when, yesterday, to-night, to-day, to-morrow, late, soon, a long while, always, never,* &c.

Adverbs of place; as, *where, here, there, above, below, towards, far, near,* &c.

Adverbs of quantity; as, *how much, how many, much, as much, little,* &c.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

THE Prepositions, like the Adverbs, have neither gender, number, nor case: they are always prefixed to nouns, articles, and verbs, and therefore are called prepositions from the Latin word *præponere*, to set before; as, *upon, near, before, without, out, in, against, for;* as, *upon the house, near the palace, in the garden, against reason, in court.*

*** Observe, that there is a great difference between the adverb and preposition; as the adverb requires nothing after it, but the sense is complete without the addition of another word; example, *he teaches well, you speak learnedly, you write fast.* But on the contrary, the preposition always requires some word to follow it; for example, *you are before me, it is upon the table, they are in the garden,* &c.

*** Observe also, that the prepositions sometimes become adverbs, when we speak absolutely, and there is neither article, noun, nor pronoun, after the prepositions: for example, *my brother walks before, he will come after, they are behind, she is near.*

In those four examples, *before, after, behind* and *near,* are adverbs; but if we said, *my brother walks before his company, he will come after us, the servant is behind us, she is near us;* then *before, after, behind, near,* are prepositions.

Digitized by Google

Of CONJUNCTIONS.

THE Conjunctions serves to join and connect words and sentences together; such as, *and, or, but, though, that, as, provided that, in short,* &c. example, *Peter* or *Paul, black* or *white; I promised it to you,* but *you must give it me again.*

Of INTERJECTIONS.

THE Interjections are words that make sense of themselves, and serve to express any violent emotion; as, *alas! fie! courage! halt! hush!* There are also interjections of cursing and swearing.

An explanation of the CASES.

WE have already taken notice, that there are four parts of speech which never change, viz. Adverbs, Conjunctions, Prepositions, and Interjections; for example, *prudently, and, upon, alas!* These words are always written and pronounced after the same manner; and have neither masculine nor feminine gender, neither singular nor plural number.

The five others, which are, the Article, the Noun, the Pronoun, the Verb, and the Participle, alter their termination: as, *the day; I, we; I love, I loved.*

The variation of articles, nouns, and pronouns, is called a Declension.

The change of verbs is called a Conjugation.

A declension has six variations, which are called Cases; viz. nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, vocative, and ablative.

The case, or variation of nouns, is known only by the article.

I must

* *A great part of this treatise of cases is applicable only to the learned, and to some foreign languages, such as French and Italian; for in English we have no variation in the noun, except the genitive,* as man, man's; *and none at all in the article, since we only make use of the little signs, or particles, to distinguish the cases;* as, of, to, for, from, &c.

Digitized by Google

I must put you in mind of what I observed before, when treating of the articles, viz. when an article happens to precede a word beginning with a vowel, the vowel at the end of the article is retrenched, and an apostrophe is placed in its stead.

The articles of the nominative are *the*, both in the singular and plural in English: as, *the sun, the earth, the ladies.*

This case is called the nominative, from *nominare*, to name; because it declares the name of any thing with the article *the*, and this article, with the following noun, makes the nominative; as, *the sun, the moon, the earth, the horses, the men, the women.*

The articles of the genitive are *of the*, and *of:* for example, *of the sun, of the moon, of the men, of London.*

We give the name of the genitive to this case, because it shows the author or cause of the noun of which we speak: an example will make it clearer.

When we say, *the heat of the sun;* in this example, *of the sun* is the genitive, because the sun is the author and the cause that produced the name *heat:* and so, in the following examples, *the length of the earth, the father's son, the fruit of the tree, the beauty of Paris.*

The word genitive comes from *gignere*, which signifies to beget, or produce.

The dative is marked by the articles *to the*, and *to*, for the singular and plural: example, *to the sun, to the prince, to London, to the men, to the houses*, &c.

The dative serves to make known to whom, or to what, we give or address the thing spoken of; as, *to give alms to the poor; to write to the king, to the queen, to London, to Rome.* The word dative comes from *dare*, to give.

The accusative is like the nominative, and the articles are the same; as, *the sun, the earth, the women.*

The word accusative is derived from the Latin *accusare*, to accuse.

The only difference between these two cases is, that the nominative is before the verb, and the accusative after it.

To distinguish the nominative from the accusative you have only to remember, that the nominative names

Digitized by Google

the person or thing that makes the action of the verb, and the accusative accuses or names that which receives it; example, *the king loves the queen.*

The king is the nominative case, because it is the king that makes the action of loving; and *the queen* is the accusative, because it is the queen that receives the action of loving from the king.

*** Note, that the accusative is generally put after verbs active, and prepositions; as, *I behold the sun, with the princes, for the king,* &c.

The vocative is always distinguished by the article *ô:* it is used in calling out to a person: example, *ô Peter, ô Paul,* &c. Most commonly we put no article at all to express the vocative: as, *sir, madam, Mary, Peter,* &c.

The word vocative comes from *vocare,* to call.

The ablative, in English, is expressed by the articles *from the, from,* and *by.*

The ablative is generally put after the verbs passive. Now the ladies, and those who do not understand Latin, will easily know what a verb passive is, being always composed of two verbs; the first of which is some tense of the verb *essere,* to be; and the other a participle; so that these two together make a verb passive, after which the ablative case is put: example, *I am esteemed by the king.*

The ablative is also used after the following verbs; *to take away, to receive, to obtain, to separate,* &c. Example.

To take from the hands,
I have received from the prince,
He is separated from me,
I am driven from London,

} The last words are in the ablative case.

The word ablative derives its original from the Latin *ablatum,* which signifies taken away; *I am beloved by the prince. I have received a hundred crowns from the prince.*

It is the same thing as if I should say, *I have taken from the prince love, and a hundred crowns.*

*** Remember, that though the articles of the genitive and ablative are the same in English in both numbers, yet they are differently expressed in the Italian.

After a master has exercised his scholars in these parts of

Digitized by Google

of speech, and made them understand the meaning of tenses, genders, numbers, and persons, he ought to propose parts of speech contained therein; for example, *the soldiers that fight bravely for the king, are esteemed and praised by the whole kingdom.*

The, is a definite article, of the plural number, of the masculine gender, and the nominative case.

Soldiers, is a noun substantive, of the same number, gender, and case.

That, a pronoun relative of the plural number, and nominative case.

Fight, a verb of the present indicative, and third person plural.

Bravely, an adverb.

For, a preposition.

Their, a pronoun possessive.

King, a noun substantive, masculine, in the accusative singular.

Are, a verb in the third person plural, and present indicative.

Esteemed, a participle.

Are esteemed, a verb passive, of the third person plural, and present indicative.

And, a conjunction.

Praised, a participle.

Are praised, a verb passive, of the third person plural, and present indicative.

By, a preposition.

All, a pronoun improper.

The, an article definite.

Kingdom, a noun substantive, masculine.

By the whole, in the ablative; because *are esteemed*, and *are praised*, are both verbs passive, and require an ablative case after them.

It is extremely difficult for those who do not understand Latin, ever to speak or write Italian correctly, without perusing this short introduction; which will not only be a great assistance to them in learning it, but also save them much time and trouble, as those, whom I have had the honour to teach, can testify.

Digitized by Google

After this introduction is perfectly understood, the next thing to be done is, to learn how to find out the words in the Dictionary, where they are all placed in an alphabetical order.

The nouns substantive are to be found by their singular number, and not by their plural: therefore you must not look for *heavens, horses,* but *heaven, horse.*

The nouns adjective are sought for by the masculine, and not by the feminine: for example, to know the Italian of *fair,* you must look for *bèllo,* and not *bélla.*

The way of finding out the verbs in the Dictionary, is by their infinitives. In English, the infinitive is known by the particle *to,* placed before the verb; *as, to love, to sing.* In Italian, the infinitives terminate in *áre, érè,* or *ire.* So that, if I want to know the infinitive of *amiámo, crediámo, sentiámo,* I must not look for *ámo, crédo, sénto,* but for *amáre, crédere, sentíre;* and so form them according to the rules of each conjugation.

The END *of the* INTRODUCTION.

Digitized by Google

THE ITALIAN MASTER.

PART I.

THE first thing that ought to be learnt, is the ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION: this is confined to some syllables, which the Italians pronounce after a different manner from the English, as may be seen at the end of this discourse, where the whole difficulty of the Italian Pronunciation is included in a Period of seven lines.

Of the Italian Pronunciation.

THE Italian tongue has two and twenty letters, which are pronounced after the following manner, by the Tuscans: the difference between them and the other Italians is, that the latter pronounce the letters *b, c, d, g, p, t, z,* with a single *e* after them, saying *be, tche, de,* &c.

A	Pronounced.	*aw,*	M	Pronounced.	*emme,*
B		*bee,*	N		*enne,*
C		*tchee,*	O		*o,*
D		*dee,*	P		*pee,*
E		*e,*	Q		*coo,*
F		*effe,*	R		*erre,*
G		*dgee,*	S		*esse,*
H		*acca,*	T		*te,*
I		*ee,*	U		*oo,*
J		*j* consonant,	V		*v* consonant,
L		*elle,*	Z		*dséta,*

Hence

Hence it appears, that the Italian pronunciation is very different from the English, and we must take care to sound the letters exactly as they are marked in the preceding alphabet.

The Italians have no such letter as *h*, *x*, or *y*; at least they never make use of them, but in mentioning foreign names, as *Stockholm*, *Xenocráte*, &c. and then they pronounce the former word, as if it were a *c* instead of *k*; and the latter, as if it were an *s* in the room of the letter *x*. You are also at liberty to write *Stocolm*, and *Senocráte*.

The letters are divided into vowels and consonants, as I have already remarked in the Introduction.

Of the Pronunciation of the Vowels.

THE vowels, which are *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, are pronounced *aw*, *a*, *ee*, *o*, *oo*. The vowel *o* has two sounds; one open, like *o* in *dóre* and *stóre*: the other close, like *u* in *stumble*, or *turret*. It is close in words where *o* is accented; in words ending in *óne*, *óra*, *óre*, *óso*, except when *u* goes before, and then it is pronounced open, as in English; thus, *cuore* pronounce *core*, a heart. It is also close before *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*; as *cólmo*, *pónte*, sound *culme*, *punte*, except when *i* or *u* comes before it. It is close too before *gn*: as *Bológna*, sound *Bolunnia*; but every where else it is pronounced open.

*** Observe, that *u*, when a vowel, is pronounced like *oo* in English, as *publicazióne* read *pooblicattióne*. You see, by this example, the pronunciation of the five vowels.

Note also, that *u* becomes a consonant, when it begins a syllable with another vowel; and then it is pronounced as in English; example, *váso*, *véro*, *vóstro*, *virtù*.

The diphthongs, which are nothing more than the union of two or three vowels, are pronounced distinctly, and yet form but one syllable; as, *mái*, never; *i miéi*, mine; *i tuói*, thine; *i suói*, his; but to pronounce them properly, we should hear them sounded by a master. See the collection

Digitized by Google

tion of syllables and words, the most difficult to pronounce, when we speak of *s* before *o*, after treating of the pronunciation of consonants.

Of the Pronunciation of Consonants.

SOME of the consonants vary from the English pronunciation, especially, *c*, *g*, *z*, to which may be added *h*, *t*, and *s*, upon each of which there are several particulars to be observed.

C, before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, and before the consonants *l*, *r*, is pronounced the same as in English; for instance, *cása*, *cóllo*, *cúra*, *Christo*, *cleménza*, *crudéle*, a house, a neck, care, Christ, clemency, cruel.

C, before the vowels *e*, or *i*, sounds like *che* and *chi*, in the English words *cherry* and *chick*: example, *Césare*, Cæsar; *cecità*, blindness; *città*, a city; pronounce *Chesare*, *chechita*, *chittà*.

*** Observe, that to speak according to the nicety and delicacy of the Italian language, we ought to sound a *t* in *Chesare*, *chechità*, *chittà*, &c. so smoothly as not to be able to distinguish whether we pronounce a *t* or a *d*.

If two *cc*'s come before the vowels *e* or *i*, the former is sounded as a *t*, and the latter like *che* in *cherry*: example *accénto*, an accent; *bráccio*, an arm; pronounce *átchento*, *brátchio*.

When, after *ci*, there is a vowel; as, *cia*, *cie*, *cio*, *ciu*, you must pronounce them in one syllable, so as to drown, in some measure, the sound of the vowel *i*: example, *Fráncia*, *ciélo*, *bácio*, pronounce *Fránchia*, *chiélo*, *báchio*.

The syllables *sce*, *sci*, are pronounced *she*, *shi*: example, *scémare*, diminish; *lasciáre*, to let alone; read *shemáre*, *lashiáre*.

The syllables *che*, *chi*, whether in the beginning, or at the end of a word, are pronounced *ke*, *ki*: example *cherubíno*, a cherubim; *chiódo*, a nail; *giovénchi*, heifers; pronounce *kerubíno*, *kiódo*, *giovénki*.

Digitized by Google

G, before the vowels, *a*, *o*, *u*, and before consonants, is pronounced as in English: example, *gábbia*, a cage; *góbbo*, hunchbacked; *gústo*, taste; *grádo*, a degree; *grído*, a cry.

G, before the vowels *e* or *i*, as *ge*, *gi*, is pronounced as if there was a *d* before the *g*: example, *gélo*, frost; *giro*, a turn; pronounce *dgélo*, *dgíro*.

When two *gg*'s come before the vowels *e*, *i*, the former *g* is pronounced as a *d*, and the latter as a *g*: for example, *oggétto*, an object; *oggì*, to-day; read *odgétto*, *odgì*. But as well in *gélo*, and *giro*, as in *oggétto*, and *oggì*, &c. we must not lean too hard on the *d*, but pronounce it so smoothly, as to render it almost imperceptible to the ear.

When after the syllable *gi* there is a vowel, as *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, the *g* must not be sounded at all, and the *i* is pronounced like an English *j* consonant: for example, *giardíno*, *giórno*, *giúdice*, pronounce *jardíno*, *jórno*, *joúditche*.

G, before an *l*, is melted into another *l*: example, *figlio*, *fóglio*, *pigliáre*, read *fillio*, *fóllio*, *pilliáre*; except *negligenza*, *negléttо*, *Inglése*, *glóbo*, and *conglutináre*, where the sound is the same as in English.

The syllables *gna*, *gne*, *gni*, *gno*, *gnu*, are pronounced as *nnia*, *nnie*, *nni*, *nnio*, *nniu*: for example, *guadagnáre*, to gain; *agnéllo*, a lamb; *ignúdo*, naked; *incognito*, unknown; read *guadanniáre*, *anniéllo*, *inniúdo*, *inconnito*. In short *gn*, before a vowel, retains the same sound, as in the French words *Espagne*, *Allemagne*.

The syllables *ghe*, *ghi*, are pronounced like *gue*, and *gui*, in the English words *guest* and *guide*; as, *bottéghe*, *shops*, sound *bottégue*; *luóghi*, places, sound *luógui*.

The letter *h* is never aspirated, nor pronounced at the beginning of words; as, *hóra*, an hour; *ho*, I have; *humáno*, humane. But, according to the modern orthography, all those words are written without an *h*; except the three persons singular, and the third person plural of the present indicative of the verb *avére*; and this in order to distinguish the verb *ha* from the sign of the vocative *ó*, or from *e* the conjunction: as likewise *hái* from *ái* the article, in the dative plural

Digitized by Google

plural masculine gender, *ái signóri*, to the lords; and, lastly, *ha* from the dative indefinite, *a Piétro*, or *Piétri*, to Peter; and *hánno* from *ánno*, which signifies a year.

The Italians never pronounce the letter *h*, and in their present practice they even omit it in writing, except when it happens to be preceded by a *c* or *g*, as in the words *chiáro*, clear; *chiáve*, a key; *piághe*, wounds, &c. However, there are but very few words in which they make use of the letter *h*, for now they write *uómo*, *onóre*, *umáno*, &c. and not *huómo*, *honóre*, *humáno*, &c.

The letter *j* is not the same as the vowel *i*, as some would have it, but a real consonant, being written in a different manner; and besides, of itself, it is incapable of forming a syllable: example, *ajuto*, help; we do not say *a-i-úto*, but *a-ju-to*. This letter ought to be pronounced in the same manner as *i* in the French words *voïelle* and *baïonette*. N. B. The letter *j* is used at present in the beginning of words, which were formerly spelt with an *h*, followed by a vowel: example, *jéri*, instead of *hiéri*, yesterday; *jdrópico* for *hidrópico*, dropsical, &c. It is likewise put in the room of *y*, which was formerly made use of at the end of words: for example, it was the custom to make the plural of *stúdio*, *stúdy*; but now they write *studj*, study, and studies; *senty*, I felt; but now *sentj*. It is, moreover, inserted in all words, where there are three successive vowels, in order to separate them: example, *aiúto*, help, now, *ajúto*, &c.

The letter *s*, in the beginning of words, is pronounced as in English: for example *salúte*, *sóle*, *sále*, *singolâre*, *sérvo*, *sópra*.

Sa, in these words; *cosa*, a thing; *róso*, gnawed; must be pronounced like the first syllable of *sálute*, that is to say, strong.

The same may be said of all adjectives ending in *óso*; as *glorióso*, glorious; *vittorióso*, victorious; as well in the singular as in the plural, masculine and feminine.

With regard to adjectives terminating in *ese*, and to words in *uso*, the letter *s* must be pronounced as in the

Digitized by Google

English words, *misery*, *desire*, &c. except *fúso*, a distaff, where the letter *s* must be sounded, as in *salúte*.

Così, in like manner, is pronounced *cóssi*; that is, with a strong hissing, as if there were two *ss*'s, and dwelling upon the last. The Neapolitans say *cousi*, which pronunciation must be avoided.

Pronounce then the letter *s* between two vowels, like a *z*; as *sa, se, si, so,* read and pronounce them as if they were written *za, ze, zi, zo*; but in all words that have *si* added to them; as *scrivesi*, they write, *s* preserves its natural sound.

Observe, that all other pronunciations of the letter *s* are condemned at Rome and Siena, which are the two cities where they speak the best Italian: and from thence came the proverb, *lingua Toscána in bócca Romána*.

The syllable *ti* is pronounced *tsi*; as *natione, grátia,* pronounce *natsione, grátsia*. But the modern Italians write those words, and the like, with a *z*, instead of the letter *t*; as *nazione, grázia, vízio, silénzio*, &c.

In the following words, the syllable *ti* is pronounced hard; as *simpatía*, sympathy; *natío*, native, genuine; *malattía*; distemper; *questione*, question; *molestía*, trouble; and a few verbs, as *tiéne, potiáte, patiámo, patiáte*, which are to be learnt only by practice.

Z is pronounced three ways, like *ds*, like *s*, and like *ts*: the general rule is to pronounce it like *ds* in all words that are written in Italian and English with a *z*: for example, *zóna*, a zone; *zodíaco*, the zodiac; *Lázaro*, Lazarus; *gazétta*, a gazette; read *dsóna, dsodíaco, Ládsaro*, and *gadsétta*.

Z is pronounced also like *ds* in the following words; *mézo*, or *mézzo*, the middle; *rózzo*, homely; *zibétto*, civet; *ziffera*, a cypher; *zígrino*, chagrin; *zénzero*, ginger.

Take notice that both the single and double *z* are always pronounced like *ds*, when they happen to come after the vowel *e*, as *mézzo*, middle; and after the vowel *o*, as *rózzo*, homely.

Z is pronounced like *s* in *safe*, in all words terminating in *énza; prudénza, diligénza, paziénza*, &c. pronounce *prudénsa, diligénsa, patsiénsa*, &c.

The

Digitized by Google

The same may be said in regard to words terminating in *anza*, or in *onza*, and when the *z* follows the letter *l*: for example, *ignorántza, Magónza, pólzo, hólzo*, &c. Nay, we find some of these words written with an *s*; yet most people make use of the *z*.

All the other *z*'s, single as well as double, are pronounced like *ts*: example, *fazzoléttο*, a handkerchief; *gentilézza*, a genteel air; *pózzo*, a well; *nózze*, a wedding; *orazióné*, prayer; pronounce *fatsoléttο, gentilétsa, pótso, nótse, oratsióne*; and be sure to dwell a little upon the sound of the *t* before *s*.

The other consonants, *b, d, f, l, m, n, p, r*, are pronounced as in English. Instead of *k*, we use *ch*; instead of *ph, f*.

The Italian *v* is pronounced as in English; but it is not the same letter as the vowel *u*, as some pretend. See what has been said concerning *j* consonant, and apply the arguments to the present case.

*** Observe that when two *vv*'s come between two vowels, we ought to pronounce only one of them. The Italians make use of two, to show that those verbs are derived from the Latin. Only you must mind to dwell somewhat longer upon the vowel which precedes the two *v*'s. Hence it ought to be pronounced as if it were detached from the remainder of the word, as if they wrote *a-venire, a-ventizio*, instead of *avvenire, avventizio*. We meet with some Italian words, which are written with two *vv*'s, and yet are not of Latin origin; as for instance, *avantággio, avveráre*, &c. But I apprehend it is wrong to spell them after that manner, and that the right orthography is *avantággio, averáre*, &c.

Digitized by Google

A Collection of Words and Syllables, the most difficult to be pronounced.

BEFORE you read this collection, mind the pronunciation of the syllables, *cia, cie, cio, ciu; sce, sci; gia, gie, gio, giu; gli, glia, glio.*

Ce, ei, pronounce as *che, chi,* in *cherry* and *chick.*

Cicerône, céci, cecità, cénere, céna, cenáre, cérchio, cíbo, città, citáre, accínto, báccio, ciaschedúno, ciélo, cioè, ciárma.

Che, chi, pronounce *ke, ki.*

Che dite? che fáte? che volète? chi cercáte? chi volète? chi domandáte?

Ge, gi, gli, pronounce *dge, dgi, lli.*

Gésto, génio, gélo, gente, giro, giúdice, maggióre, leggiádro, leggiádra, giórno, gióvane, giúgno, figlio, figlia, pigliáre; gionchíglia, fóglio, orgóglio, fággio, mággio.

Gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu, pronounce *nia, nie, ni, nio, niu,* in one syllable; as we have already observed, when treating of the pronunciation of consonants.

Bagnáre, guadagnáre, légna, ingegnéro, magnífico, pégno, légno, signóre, ingégno, ignúdo.

Scia, scie, sci, scio, sciu, pronounce *shia, shie, she, sho, shiu.*

Sciática, sciégliere, discifráre, discióglicre, asciútto.

Sa, se, si, so.

Mind the pronunciation of *salúte, cósa, rósa, róse, spósa, cása, virtuóso, così.*

Ti, pronounce *si.*

Natióne, ostinatióne, inclinatióne, grátia, giurisditióne, attióne. The present orthography of all those words and such like derived from the Latin, is with a *z* instead of *t*; thus they write *nazione, vizio, grázia,* &c. This is the most approved orthography, as we have already observed.

U, pronounce oo.

Tu, virtù, pugnáre, púgno, matúro, funésto, múro, brúno.

U before

Digitized by Google

U before *e*, pronounce *o*.

But when those two vowels form but one syllable, you are to pronounce the *u* almost insensibly.

Buóno, fuóco, giuóco, figliuólo, figliuóla, suócero, suócera.

Except from this rule, *dúo, túo, súo, virtuóso*, &c. because here the *u* and *o* are two syllables.

The Florentines in the words *buóno, fuóco*, &c. pronounce the *u* somewhat stronger than the Romans, who indeed sound those words in such a manner, as if there were no *u* at all.

V v, pronounce *v*.

Avvenire, inavvertènza, avvézzo, avvénto.

Remember what has been said of the pronunciation of the consonant *v*.

Z, or *zz*, pronounce *ts*.

In the words *nózze, fazzolétto, pózzo, pazzía, pázzo*.

Z, or *zz*, pronounce *ds*.

In the words *mézo, mézzo, Lazáro, zóna, zodoiáco, zigríno, rózzo*.

Z, pronounce *s*.

In words ending in *anza, enza, onza*, and after the letter *l*: example, *ignoránza, diligénza, Magónza, pólzo, bólzo*.

To get true Italian accent, it will be sufficient to read over the following lines, where all the difficulty is in the syllables marked with a star: whosoever has learnt to pronounce them properly, will soon be master of the Italian pronunciation.

Ciaschedúno sa, che côme non v'è cosa, che più displáccia a Dio, che l'ingratitúdine, ed inosservánza, de' suói precétti; così non v'è niénte che cagióni maggiormente la desolazióne dell' univérso, che la cecità, e supérbia degli uómini, la pazzía de' Gentíli, l'ignoránza, ed ostinazióne de' Giudéi, e scismátici.

"Every

Digitized by Google

"Every one knows, that as there is nothing that more displeases God, than ingratitude and the neglect of his commandments; so there is nothing that occasions more the desolation of this world, than the blindness and pride of men, the folly of the Gentiles, the ignorance and obstinacy of the Jews and schismatics."

A Recapitulation of the Italian Pronunciation.

	Pronounce	Example	*Read*
ce	che*	*céna*	chena
ci	chi†	*cittá*	chitta
cia	chia	*ciascúno*	chiascuno
cie	chie	*ciélo*	chielo
cio	tchio	*bácio*	batchio
ge	dge	*génio*	dgenio
gi	dgi	*giro*	dgiro
gia	ja	*giardíno*	jardino
gie	je	*Giesù*	Jesu
gio	jo	*Gióve*	Jove
giu	joo	*giústo*	joosto
gli	lli	*pigliáre*	pilliare
gna, gne, &c.	nnia, nnie	*regnáre*	renniare
che	ke	*che*	ke
chi	ki	*chi*	ki
sce	she	*scemáre*	shemare
sci	shi	*lasciáre*	lashiare
ti	tsi	*natióne*	natsione, or nazione
u	oo	*virtù*	virtoo
u before *o*	o	*buóno*	bono
vv	v	*avvenire*	a-venire
z	s	*diligénza*	diligensa
	ds, *or*	*zéfiro*	dsefiro
	ts	*nezzo*	notse

* As in che-rish.
† As in chi-valry.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. I.

Of Articles in general.

THERE are two sorts of articles, one definite, the other indefinite.

The definite marks the gender, number, and case of the nouns which it precedes; as,

The prince, *il príncipe;* of the prince, *del príncipe;* to the prince, *al príncipe;* from or by the prince, *dal príncipe;* the princes, *i príncipi;* of the princes, *dei príncipi;* to the princes, *ái príncipi;* from or by the princes, *dái príncipi:* the earth, *la térra;* of the earth, *délla térra;* to the earth, *álla térra;* from or by the earth, *dálla térra:* the earths, *le térre;* of the earths, *délle térre;* to the earths, *álle térre;* from or by the earths, *dálle térre.*

The articles *il,* or *lo, la, del, dello, al, allo, dal, dalle, della, alla, dalla, i, gli, le,* are called definite articles, because they mark and define the masculine or feminine gender, the singular or plural number of nouns, to which they are prefixed.

The definite articles have six cases, the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, vocative, and ablative.

The indefinite article may be put before the masculine as well as the feminine gender, before the singular as well as the plural number.

The indefinite articles in Italian are the following monosyllables:

di, a or *ad* before a vowel, *da.*

One may put *di* before a noun masculine as well as a feminine; as *una coróna di rè,* a king's crown; *úna líbra di páne,* a pound of bread: the words *rè* and *páne* are masculine: *un cappéllo di páglia, tre líbre di cárne,* a hat of straw, three pounds of meat; the words *páglia* and *cárne* are of the feminine gender.

The indefinite article *di* is also put before the plural as well as the singular number: example, *una coróna di fióri,* a crown of flowers; *un tóndo di cáppari,* a plate of capers.

The

Digitized by Google

The indefinite article has but three cases, the genitive, dative, and ablative.

Of is expressed in Italian by *di; to* by *a* or *ad* before a vowel; *from* by *da*.

Of the definite Articles.

THE English Tongue has but one definite article, namely *the*, which serves for both numbers.

The Italian has three, viz. *il* and *lo* for the masculine, and *la* for the feminine.

The article *il* is prefixed to masculine nouns beginning with a consonant, and makes *i* in the plural; as *il pádre, i pádri; il fratéllo, i fratélli; il líbro, i líbri; il ciélo, i ciéli.*

The article *lo* makes in the plural *gli*, and is put before two sorts of nouns, viz. before masculine nouns beginning with *s*, and followed by a consonant; as, *lo stúdio, lo spírito, lo scoláre; gli stúdj, gli spíriti, gli scolári; lo spécchio, gli spécchi.*

If the letter *s* be followed by a vowel, we must make use of the article *il* and not *lo*, as, *il soldáto, il sacraménto, il signóre, il sécolo, il supérbo;* and not *lo soldáto, lo sacraménto*, &c.

When the article *lo* happens to be before nouns beginning with a vowel, then we retrench the vowel, and insert an apostrophe: example, *l'amóre, l'onóre, l'ingégno*, and not *lo amóre, lo onóre, lo ingégno; gli amóri, gli onóri, gl' ingégni*, in the plural. The same may be said in regard to the article *la* for the feminine. We have touched upon this subject in the introduction to the Italian tongue, where we delivered some rules concerning the articles.

The article *la* serves for the feminine, and makes *le* in the plural: as, *la cása, le cáse; la chiésa, le chiése; la méssa, le mésse; la térra, le térre; la cámera, le cámere; la pórta, le pórte; la stráda, le stráde; la stélla, le stélle.*

The

Digitized by Google

The Declension of the Masculine Articles il *and* lo.

I Do not put the accusative, because it is the same with the nominative; nor the vocative, because it is expressed by *o* in both languages.

Sing. Nom.	*il*	*lo*	the
Gen.	*del*	*dello*	of the
Dat.	*al*	*allo*	to the
Abl.	*dal*	*dallo*	from, and by the
Plur. Nom.	*i*	*gli*	the
Gen.	*dei, de'*	*dégli*	of the
Dat.	*ai, a'*	*ágli*	to the
Abl.	*dai, da'*	*dágli*	from *or* by the.

We do not use in the plural the articles *li, delli, alli, dalli,* as the ancients did. Yet they may be used in verse, and in Dante they occur frequently, though a great number of our best poets endeavour to avoid them.

*** Note, that to write correctly we must not abridge the article *lo* in the plural, unless the following noun begins with an *i;* therefore you must write *gl'ingégni, gl'incéndj,* with an apostrophe, and *gli amóri, gli onóri,* without one. Nevertheless you are to make but one syllable of the article and the subsequent vowel; so that you must pronounce *glia-móri, glio-nóri,* and not *gli a-móri, gli-o-nóri.* In this respect the Italian language is extremely delicate.

The Declension of the Feminine Article la.

Sing. Nom.	*la*	the
Gen.	*délla*	of the
Dat.	*álla*	to the
Abl.	*dálla*	from the
Plur. Nom.	*le*	the
Gen.	*délle*	of the
Dat.	*álle*	to the
Abl.	*dálle*	from and by the.

*** You must not abridge *la* in the plural, unless the following word begins with an *e;* and therefore we write *l'eminénze, l'esecuzióni,* with an apostrophe, and *le ánime,* *le*

Digitized by Google

le últime, le invenzióni, le ómbre, without one. And yet we write *le effígie* in the plural, to distinguish it from the singular, because this noun hath the same termination in both numbers; you are to observe the same in regard to the word *eséquie.*

The declension of the Article il *with a masculine noun, whose first letter is a consonant.*

Sing.	Nom.	*il líbro*	the book
	Gen.	*del líbro*	of the book
	Dat.	*al líbro*	to the book
	Abl.	*dal líbro*	from *or* by the book.
Plur.	Nom.	*i líbri*	the books
	Gen.	*dei*, or *de' líbri*	of the books
	Dat.	*ai*, or *a' líbri*	to the books
	Abl.	*dai*, or *da' líbri*	from *or* by the books.

The declension of the Article lo *before a masculine noun, whose first letter is an* s, *followed by a consonant.*

Sing.	Nom.	*lo spécchio*	the glass
	Gen.	*déllo spécchio*	of the glass
	Dat.	*állo spécchio*	to the glass
	Abl.	*dállo spécchio*	from the glass.
Plur.	Nom.	*gli spécchj*	the glasses
	Gen.	*dégli spécchj*	of the glasses
	Dat.	*ágli spécchj*	to the glasses
	Abl.	*dágli spécchj*	from the glasses.

The declension of the Article la, *before a feminine noun, beginning with a consonant.*

Sing.	Nom.	*la cása*	the house
	Gen.	*délla cása*	of the house
	Dat.	*álla cása*	to the house
	Abl.	*dálla cása*	from the house.
Plur.	Nom.	*le cáse*	the houses
	Gen.	*délle cáse*	of the houses
	Dat.	*álle cáse*	to the houses
	Abl.	*dálle cáse*	from the houses.

The

Digitized by Google

The article *la* is also prefixed to feminine nouns beginning with an *e*, followed by a consonant; as *la stráda, le stráde*, the street, &c.*

The declension of the Article lo, *with an* apostrophe, *or* elision.

Sing. Nom.	*l' amóre*	the love
Gen.	*dell' amóre*	of the love
Dat.	*áll' amóre*	to the love
Abl.	*dáll' amóre*	from the love.
Plur. Nom.	*gli amóri*	the loves
Gen.	*dégli amóri*	of the loves
Dat.	*ágli amóri*	to the loves
Abl.	*dágli amóri*	from the loves.

The declension of the Article la, *with an* apostrophe.

Sing. Nom.	*l' ánima*	the soul
Gen.	*dell ánima*	of the soul
Dat.	*all' ánima*	to the soul
Abl.	*dall' ánima*	from the soul.
Plur. Nom.	*le ánime*	the souls
Gen.	*délle ánime*	of the souls
Dat.	*álle ánime*	to the souls
Abl.	*dalle ánime*	from the souls.

*** Observe, that the English have no variation in their articles for the plural; they say, *the men, the women;* the Italians have an article for each gender in the plural, *gli uómini, le dónne, i libri, le stélle.*

Of the indefinite Article.

THE indefinite article has but three cases, and serves as we have already mentioned, for the singular and plural, for the masculine and feminine.

Gen.	*di*	of
Dat.	*a*, or *ad* before a vowel,	to
Abl.	*da*	from, *or* by.

The

Digitized by Google

The following example will show, that nouns declined by the indefinite article have no article in the nominative, accusative, or vocative.

Nom.	*Róma*	Rome
Gen.	*di Róma*	of Rome
Dat.	*a Róma*	to Rome
Acc.	*Róma*	Rome
Voc.	*o Róma*	*o* Rome
Abl.	*da Roma*	from Rome.

The indefinite article is used in declining the nouns that have no article in the nominative; such as the names of angels, *d' ángeli;* of men, *d' uómini;* of cities, *di cittè;* of months, *di mési;* as also the pronouns personal, demonstrative, interrogative, and relative; for example, *London, January, February, March, April; me, thee, him, we, you, this, that, those, these, who,* &c.

Who, or which, in Italian *quále,* may be declined by the definitive articles: for we say, *il quále,* and *la quàle, del quále,* and *della quále,* &c.

The indefinite article may also be prefixed to all other sorts of nouns, as I have already observed: for we say, *una libra di páne,* a pound of bread; *un cappéllo di páglia,* a hat of straw; *una tázza d' argénto,* a cup of silver; *un vestito di pánno,* a suit of cloth.

If the indefinite article *di,* or *da,* precedes a noun, beginning with a vowel, we must make an elision in the genitive and ablative, and use *ad* in the dative, as, nominative, *António;* genitive, *d' António;* dative, *ad António;* accusative, *António;* ablative, *d' António,* or rather *da António,* the better to distinguish the ablative from the genitive, which makes *d' António.*

*** Observe, that in speaking of any part of the body, it is more elegant to make use of the indefinite than definite article: hence we say, *mi trarrà l' ánima di córpo,* he will tear my soul from my body; *mi tóglie il líbro di máno,* &c. he snatches a book out of my hand, &c.

The indefinite article is also put before infinitives, and signifies *to;* as, it is time to speak, to sleep, to read, to study, to write, to love, to go; *è témpo di párlare, di dormire, di léggere,*

Digitized by Google

léggere, di studiáre, di scrívere, d' amáre, d' andáre: but we make an élision when the verbs begin with a vowel; as *d' amáre, d' andáre.*

*** Note whenever you meet with *of* and *to* in English, remember they are the indefinite articles; and then you must make use of the indefinite article *a* or *ad* in Italian.

Remarks on the Articles.

First, *HIM* or *it* before a verb is always expressed by *lo:* as, I see him or it, *io lo vedo;* we know it, *noi lo sappiámo,* I know it, *io lo so.*

Secondly, *Her* or *it* before a verb is expressed by *la:* example, I know her, *io la conósco,* I do not know her, *non la conósco.*

Thirdly, *Them* before a verb is expressed by *li* for the masculine, and by *le* for the feminine: example, *io li védo,* or *io le védo,* according to the gender.

Fourthly, The words *lo, la, li, le,* must be always put after the adverb *écco,* and also after the infinitives and gerunds; as, there he is, *éccolo;* there she is, *éccola;* there they are, *éccoli* for the masculine, and *éccole* for the feminine; to see him, instead of saying, *per lo védere,* we must say, *per vedérlo,* because *védere* is in the infinitive: in like manner, to express *seeing him,* we must not say, *lo vedéndo,* but *vedéndolo,* because *vedéndo* is a gerund, and the Italian rule requires that these words *lo, la, li, le,* should always follow the infinitive and gerund, as also the word *écco,* but never precede them.

*** Remember, that I have been speaking of the words *lo, la, li, le,* and not of the articles *lo, la, li, le,* and that a little above I said also the words, *lo, la, li, le,* because these words *lo, la, li, le,* when they precede the verbs, are not articles, but pronouns relative. They are articles only, when they precede the nouns or pronouns.

Fifthly, The preposition *in* is sometimes expressed in Italian by *in;* as, in Paris, *in Parígi;* in France, *in Fráncia;* in a chamber, *in úna cámera;* in a fire, *in úno fúoco;* in all the earth, *in tútta la térra;* in a glass, *in un bicchierre;* in a bottle, *in una bottíglia.*

When

Digitized by Google

When the preposition *in* is followed by the article *the*, or by a pronoun possessive, as, *in the, in my, in thy, in his;* we must render it by *nel, néllo, nélla, nei, négli, nel mio, nel tuo, nel suo:* example, in the garden, *nel giardíno,* and not *in il giardíno.*

In the spirit, *nello spírito,* and not *in lo spírito:* the ancients made use of *in lo* and *in la.*

Come in lo spécchio il sol, non altriménte,
La dóppia fíra déntro vi raggióva.

And as for the feminine, we find in Petrarch,

Ma ben ti prégo in la térza sfera.
Il dì sésto d' Apríl in l' óra prima.

We say, *nello spírito,* because *spírito* begins with an *s* followed by a consonant.

In the house, *nélla cása.*
In the gardens, *nei* or *ne' giardíni.*
In the fires, *nei,* or *ne' fuóchi.*
In the spirits, *négli spíriti.*
In the houses, *nélle case.*
In my garden, *nel mio giardino.*
In thy book, *nel tuo libro.*
In his bed, *nel suo létto.*
In her chamber, *nélla súa cámera.*
In his books, *ne' suói libri.*
In her chambers, *nélle sue cámere.*

When *in* precedes the pronouns possessive of the masculine gender, in the plural, it is expressed by *ne'* with an apostrophe, and not by *nei;* as, in my book, *ne' miéi libri;* at least this is the common practice.

Sixthly, You see by these examples that *in the* is expressed in Italian by *nel* or *néllo;* in the feminine by *nélla.*

Nel is placed before the same nouns that we put the article *il,* and in the plural it makes *nei* or *ne',* in the.

Néllo is put before the same nouns that we put the article *lo,* and in the plural it makes *négli.*

Nélla is put before the same nouns as the article *la,* and in the plural it makes *nélle.*

We may express *in* by *in,* when it is before a pronoun possessive feminine, by transposing the pronoun possessive at the end of the phrase; as, in my chamber,

in

Digitized by Google

in cámera mia; in your house, *in cása vóstra;* in her shop, *in bottéga sua;* but this rule is only for feminine nouns, and not masculine.

Seventhly, When after the preposition *with*, which in Italian is expressed by *con*, we find the article *the*, or a pronoun possessive, as, with the, with my, with thy, with his: we must not say, *con il, con lo, con la*, but *col, colla, coi, con gli, colle:* example, with the prince, *col príncipe*, and not *con il príncipe.*

With the hand, *colla máno.*
With the scholar, *collo scólare.*
With the princes, *coi príncipi.*
With the princesses, *colle principésse.*
With the scholars, *con gli scolári.*
With my book, *col mio libro.*
With my pen, *colla mia pénna.*
With your friends, *co' vóstri amici.*
With my books, *co' miéi libri.*
Col makes the plural *coi* and *co'.*
Collo makes *con gli; colla* makes *colle.*

Nevertheless, when the following words begin with the letter *s* and another consonant, it is more elegant to write *con lo* and *con gli;* thus you will say, *con lo strúle, con lo scholáre, con gli stúdi;* and *coll* or *col'* when the word begins with a single consonant, or with a vowel.

Eighthly, When the preposition *with* is followed by a pronoun possessive, and this by a noun of quality, or kindred; as, with your majesty, with your highness, with your excellency, with his brother, with her mother, with her sister: *with* must then be rendered by *con*, as, *con vóstra maestà, con sua altézza, con vostra eccellénza, con suo frátello, con sua mádre, con sua soréllu*, without using the article.

*** Observe, we may also make use of *col* and *colla*, by transposing the pronouns possessive after the noun, and say *colla maestà vóstra, coll' eccellénza sua, col fratéllo suo, colla mádre sua*, &c.

Ninthly, If the pronouns possessive are in the plural, then we must express *with* by *co'* for the masculine, and by *colle* for the feminine: example, with my brothers, *co' miei fratélli*, and not *con miei fratélli*: with my

Digitized by Google

my sisters, *colle mie sórelle*, and not *con mie sorélle*: if you have a mind to insert the article, you must use the same transposition, and say, *coi fratélli miei, coi parénti vóstri, cólle sorélle tue, colle mádri nóstre*, &c.

*** Note, that the ancient authors, and some modern ones say, *con il, con la*, &c.

CHAP. II.

Of NOUNS.

THE Italian nouns have but five terminations, viz. those of the five vowels, *a, e, i, ò, u*.

They have but two genders, the masculine and the feminine.

The Italian nouns have no variation of cases, like the Latin; and it is the article only, that distinguishes the case: example, nom. *il signóre*; gen. *del signóre*; dat. *al signóre*; acc. *il signóre*; voc. *ó signore*; abl. *dal signóre*. Nom. plur. *i signóri*; gen. *dei signóri*; dat. *ai signóri*, &c.

*** Take notice as a general rule, that all masculine nouns make their plural in *i*; example, *il púpa*, the pope, *i pápi*; *il pádre*, the father, *i pádri*; *il libro*, the book, *i líbri*, &c.

Of Nouns ending in a.

NOUNS ending in *a* are feminine, and form their plural in *e*; as, *la cása*, the house; *le cáse*, the houses; *la chiésa*, the church; *le chiése*, the churches; *la carrózza*, the coach; *le carrózze*, the coaches.

Exceptions.—First, All nouns ending in *ca* and *ga*, have an *h* in the plural between the *c* or *g* and the final vowel, to avoid the harshness of sound; as, *la mánica*, the sleeve, *le mániche*; *la piága*, the wound, *le piághe*.

Secondly,

Digitized by Google

Secondly, Nouns ending in Italian in *tà*, and in English in *ty*, never change their termination in the plural; as *la purità*, *le purità*, purity; *la castità*, *le castità*, chastity, &c.

*** Yet observe, that those nouns are syncopated or shortened, and their real termination is in *ade* or *ate*, according to the most ancient poets. In the plural they change their termination into *i*; so we say, *beltáde* or *beltáte* in the singular, and *beltádi* or *beltáti* in the plural. I do not remember to have ever seen these nouns written in the plural with a *t*. Though they make use of the termination in *ade*, yet it is better and more usual to say *bontà* than *bontáde*, and *generosità*, than *generositáde*, &c.

Thirdly, Nouns masculine ending in *a*, form their plural in *i* as *pápa*, *pápi*; *profèta*, *profèti*.

We must except *potestà* in the masculine, which signifies a power or state, and retains in the plural the same termination; for we say, *tutt' i potestà uniti*, all the powers united. I say in the masculine, because in the feminine, when this word denotes capacity or ability, it follows the general rule.

Of Nouns ending in e.

ALL Nouns ending in *e*, whether masculine or feminine, substantives or adjectives, form their plural in *i*; example, *il pádre*, the father; *i pádri*, fathers; *la mádre*, a mother; *le mádri*, the mothers: *prudénte*, *prudénti*, prudent.

Exceptions.—First, *Mille*, a thousand, which makes in the plural *mila*.

Secondly, These five nouns, *rè*, a king; *spécie*, a sort; *superficie*, a superficies; *effigie*, an effigy; *l' eséquie*, a funeral; which have no change of termination in the plural; for we say, *il rè*, *i rè*; *le spécie*, *la spécie*; *la superficie*, *le superficie*; *l'effigie*, *l'effigie*; *le eséquie*, *le eséquie*: without

Digitized by Google

curtailing the article of the two last nouns in the plural to distinguish it from the singular, *l'effigie, l' esequie.*

Observe that we seldom make use of the word *esequie* in the singular.

I have taken no notice here of the noun *requie,* repose, coming from the Latin word *requies;* because I never saw an instance where it was used in the plural. However, it would admit of no variation in the plural more than *re*, &c.

Rules for finding out the Gender of Nouns in e.

First, NOUNS ending in *me* are masculine: example, *il costúme,* a custom; *il fiúme,* a river; *il ráme,* brass; *il vérme,* a worm.

There are two feminine nouns in *me,* viz. *la fáme,* hunger, and *la spéme,* hope.

Secondly, there are but four feminine nouns in *re;* viz. *la fébre,* a fever; *la mádre,* a mother; *la tórre,* a tower; *la pólveré,* dust.

All the nouns in *ore* are masculine: as *il fióre,* a flower; *il calóre,* heat; *il furóre,* rage; *lo splendóre,* splendor; *il cuóre,* the heart; *il predicatóre,* a preacher.

There are four nouns in *re* of both genders, viz. *il* and *la cárcere,* a prison; *il* and *la cénere,* ashes; *il* and *la fólgore,* lightning; *il* and *la lépre,* a hare.

Thirdly, The Italian nouns ending in *ine, ione,* and *one,* are some masculine and some feminine, as, *l'órdine,* order; *la grándine,* hail; *la prigióne,* a prison; *il bastóne,* a stick; we say, *il fine,* when we take it for *aim* or *design;* and *la fine,* when we mean the *end;* though in the latter signification it is usual also to say, *il fine* and *la fine.*

Fourthly, There are but two nouns in *nte,* feminine; to wit, *la génte,* a nation, and *la ménte,* the mind: all the other nouns ending in *nte* are masculine: as *il dénte,* a tooth; *il pónte,* a bridge; *il mónte,* a mountain; *il gigánte,* a giant &c. We are speaking here only of nouns-substantive, but not of adjectives.

There

Digitized by Google

There are three nouns in *nte* that have two genders: viz. *il* and *la fánte*, a servant, *il* and *la fróute*, the forehead; *il* and *la fónte*, a fountain.

Fifthly, The other different terminations in *e* keep the same gender, as in French and Latin: example, *il pésce*, fish; *la vóce*, a voice; *la cróce*, a cross; *il látte*, milk; *la lóde*, praise: except,

La siépe, a hedge; *la grégge*, a flock or herd. We say likewise *il grégge*, in the masculine.

Of Nouns in i.

THE Italian language has but seventeen nouns terminated in *i*; they are the same in the plural as in the singular, and are distinguished by the articles;

To wit,

il dì,	the day,	*i dì*, the days.
il Lunedì,	Monday,	*i Lunedì.*
il Martedì,	Tuesday,	*i Martedì.*
il Mercordì,	Wednesday,	*i Mercordì.*
il Giovedì,	Thursday,	*i Giovedì.*
il Venerdì,	Friday,	*i Venerdì.*
la diócesi,	a diocese,	*le diócesi.*
il barbagiánni,	an owl,	*i barbagiánni.*
l' ecclissi,	an eclipse,	*le ecclissi.*
l' éstasi,	an extacy,	*gli éstasi.*
la périfrasi,	a periphrasis,	*le périfrasi.*
l' énfasi,	an emphasis,	*le énfasi.*
la metamórfosi,	a metamorphosis,	*le metamorfósi.*
la crísi,	a crisis,	*le crísi.*
la tési,	a thesis,	*le tési.*
la Genési,	Genesis,	
un pári,	such a one,	*i & le pári.*

This last noun is of all genders and numbers; and we say, *un pári vóstro*, such a man as you; *una pári vóstra*, such a woman as you.

Génesi has no plural, and is of all genders. In Dante we meet with *lo Génesi*, but the generality of good writers say *la Génesi*.

Digitized by Google

There are also some proper names in *i*, as, *Giovánni*, *Parígi*, *Nápoli*; and the numeral nouns, as, *diéci*, *úndici*, *dódici*, *trédici*, *quattórdici*, *quíndici*, *sédici*, *vénti*.

Of the Nouns in o.

OF all the nouns in *o*, as well substantive as adjective, there are but very few feminine; *la máno*, and *l' éco*, are of this gender. Generally speaking the rest are masculine, and make their plural in *i*: for example, *il fratéllo*, a brother; *i fratélli*, brothers: *il fazzolétto*, a handkerchief; *i fazzolétti*: *la máno*, *le máni*; *uómo*, a man, makes *uómini* in the plural.

*** Note, that the nouns substantive in *ano* frequently change their termination into *aio*: for we say,

Gennáro and *Gennáio*, January.
Febráro, and *Febráio*, February.
Calzoláro and *calzoláio*, a shoemaker.
Mortáro and *mortáio*, a mortar.

There are some nouns in *o* that end more elegantly in the plural in *a* than in *i*, and then they are feminine in the plural; they are as follow:

l' anéllo,	*le anélla*,	the rings.
il bráccio,	*le bráccia*,	the arms.
il budéllo,	*le budélla*,	the guts.
il calcágno,	*le calcágna*,	the heels.
il cérchio,	*le cérchia*,	the hoops.
il ciglio,	*le ciglia*,	the eyebrows.
il córno,	*le córna*,	the horns.
il díto,	*le díta*,	the fingers.
il ditéllo,	*le ditélla*,	the armpits.
il fílo,	*le fíla*,	the threads.
il frútto,	*le frútta*,	fruit.
il gésto,	*le gésta*,	actions, feats.
il grído,	*le grída*,	the cries.
il gúscio,	*le gúscia*,	the shells.
il ginócchio,	*le ginócchia*,	the knees.
il lábro,	*le lábra*,	the lips.
il lenzuólo,	*le lenzuóla*,	the sheets.

il légno,

Digitized by Google

il légno,	*le légna,*	the sticks.
il mélo,	*le méla,*	the apples.
il mêmbro,	*le mémbra,*	the members.
il múro,	*le múra,*	the walls.
il migliáio,	*le migliáia,*	thousands.
il miglio,	*le míglia,*	miles.
l' orécchio,	*le orécchia,*	the ears.
l' ósso,	*le ósса,*	the bones.
il páio,	*le páia,*	pairs.
il pómo,	*le póma,*	apples.
il púgno,	*le púgna,*	fists.
lo stáio,	*le stáia,*	the bushels.
il ríso,	*le rísa,*	laughters.
l' uóvo,	*le uóva,*	the eggs.
il rúbbio,	*le rúbbia,*	the measures.
il vestígio,	*le vestígia,*	the footsteps.

Nouns ending in *co* and *go*, of two syllables, take an *h* in the plural to avoid a harsh pronunciation: example, *il fuóco*, the fire, *i fuóchi*, the fires; *il luógo*, the place, *i luóghi*, the places.

Two are excepted.

Il pórco, a hog; *i pórci*, hogs: *il Gréco*, Greek; *i Gréci*, Greeks.

The other nouns in *co* and *go*, of more than two syllables, do not take an *h* in the plural: as, *amico, amici*, friends; *doméstico, doméstici*, domestics; *canónico, canónici*, canons; *cattólico, cattólici*, catholics; *médico, médici*, physicians; *mendico, mendici*, beggars.

The following words are excepted.

Albérgo, albérghi, dwellings.
Antico, antichi, ancients.
Astrólogo, astrologer, makes *astróloghi* and *astrologi*.

In like manner *mónaco*, a monk, forms in the plural *mónachi*, and *mónaci*.

Antico, antichi, the ancients.
Beccafico, beccafichi, beccafigos.
Bifólco, bifólchi, labourers.
Catafálco, catafálchi, scaffolds.
Dialogo, diáloghi, dialogues.

Digitized by Google

Fiamingo, Fiaminghi, Flemings.
Recíproco, recíprochi, reciprocals.
Siniscálco, siniscálchi, stewards.
Tedésco, Tedéschi, Germans.
Tráffico, tráffichi, tradings.

*** Some authors are generally for retrenching the final *o*, in the words ending in *io*, to form their plural. They are in the right, if the final *io* makes but one syllable; as *bácio, baci,* kisses; *figlio, figli,* sons; *sággio, sággi,* sages; *ócchio, ócchi,* eyes: but if the final *io* happens to be a dissyllable, then there must be a long *j* in the plural; as *natío,* native, in the plural we ought to write *natj.*

In the other examples above produced, the reason why we do not put the long *j*, is to avoid the harsh pronunciation which would follow from the junction of two *ii*'s. And yet the long *j* is sometimes admitted in order to avoid any ambiguity in the sense. And for this reason we write *témpj,* temples, and *principj,* principles, which otherwise would be confounded with *témpi,* times, and *principi,* princes.

Nouns ending in *cio, chio, gio,* and *glio,* generally make but one syllable of *io,* and their plural by changing *io* into *i*: as *impáccio,* trouble, *impácci; ócchio,* an eye, *ócchi; pággio,* a page, *pággi; fóglio,* a leaf, *fógli.*

Of Nouns in u.

THE Italian language has but very few nouns in *u*; they do not change their termination in the plural: example:

la grù,	a cane,	*le grù.*
gioventù,	youth,	*le gioventù.*
la servitù,	servitude,	*le servitù.*
la tribù,	a tribe,	*le tribù.*
la virtù,	virtue,	*le virtù.*
la schiavitù,	slavery,	*le schiavitù.*

Remarks

Digitized by Google

Remarks on some Nouns.

*** When the letter *l* is found in Latin and French after *f, b, p,* we must change *l* into *i*. Example, fleur, *fiore;* blanc, *biancho;* blanche, *bianca;* plein, *pieno;* temple, *tempio;* plumb, *piombo.*

*** Note, the Italians never put a *c* or *p* before a *t,* but the *p* and *c* are changed into *t:* example, doctus, *dotto;* doctor, *dottore;* act, *atto;* aptitude, *attitudine;* adoption, *adozione.*

Ph is changed into *f:* example, philosopher, *filosofo:* *s* is changed into *s* or *ss,* and sometimes into *c;* as Xerxes, *Serse;* Alexander, *Alessandro;* excellent, *eccellente.*

Of the Augmentatives.

THE Italians have this peculiarity in their language, that they can augment or diminish the signification of the nouns, by only adding certain syllables to the end of them, which they call augmentatives or diminutives.

Augmentatives are words which by the increase of a syllable, increase also in their signification.

There are two sorts of augmentatives; the first terminated in *one,* to express any thing great and large; as, *cappello,* a hat, change the last letter *o* into *one,* and you make it *cappellone,* a great large hat: *salá,* a hall, change *a* into *one,* and you will find *salone,* a great large hall; *frate,* a friar, *fratone,* a fat overgrown friar; *casa,* a house, *casone,* a great house; *libro,* a book, *libróne,* a huge large book: and so of the rest.

*** Observe, that the augmentatives ending in *one* are always masculine, though the nouns from whence they are formed be feminine; example, *una porta, un portone; la camera, il camerone.*

The other augmentatives are formed by changing the last letter of the word into *accio,* for the masculine, and into *accia* for the feminine: but then these augmentatives declare the thing somewhat contemptible; as *cappello,* a hat, *cappellaccio,* a great ugly hat.

Digitized by Google

Sála, salácciа, a great nasty hall.

Cása, cabáccia, a great filthy house.

Nouns terminating in *ame* denote plenty or abundance; as *gentáme*, abundance of people, *osséme*, abundance of bones.

Observe, nevertheless, that in those terminations there are nouns which are not augmentatives; for instance, in *one*, we find *bastóne*; in *áme, fláme*: in *áccio*, and in *áccia, láccio, fáccia*, &c.

Of Diminutives.

ALTHOUGH the diminutives are increased by the addition of one or more syllables, yet they lessen the signification of their primitives.

There are two sorts of diminutives, one of kindness and flattery, another of compassion.

The diminutives of kindness and flattery have their terminations in *ino, etto, ello*, for the masculine; and in *ina, etta, ella*, for the feminine; example, from *póvero*, poor, come *poverino, povertto, poverello* a poor little man; *poverina, poverétta, poverélla*, a poor little woman.

The diminutives of compassion end in *uccio, uzzo, icciuólo*, for the masculine, and in *uccia, uzza, icciuóla*, for the feminine; example, from *uómo*, a man, is formed, *uomúccio, uomúzzo, uomicciuólo*, a poor little man.

*** Note, the diminutives convey no bad meaning like the augmentatives; so that to express a little old man, you may use indifferently *vecchiétto, vecchíno, vecchiettíno, vecchiarélla, vecchiarellíno, vecchiúzzo*: as also *casína, casétta, casúzza, casúccia*, to express a small house.

*** Note also, that the diminutives in *ino* and *ina*, have something of tenderness, flattery, and cajoling in them; example, the little pretty prince, *il principíno*; the little pretty princess, *la principína*.

In her pretty little chamber, *nel suo bel camerino*.

Cáne, a dog, makes its diminutive *cagnuolíno*, a little pretty dog.

Távola, makes *tavolíno*, a little table.

Cása, a house; *casino*, a little house.

Cámera,

Digitized by Google

Cámera, a chamber; *camerino*, a little chamber.

Berrétta, *berrettino*, a little cap: which shews that several feminine nouns in *a* make their diminutives in *ino*.

Of Nouns-Adjective.

THE adjectives always agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case.

There are two sorts of adjectives, one terminated in *o*, the other in *e*. The adjectives in *o* serve for the masculine: example, *bélla*, *sánto*, *dótto*, *ricco*, *póvero*: these adjectives, and all others ending in *o*, form their plural in *i*; as *bélli*, *ánti*, *dótti*, *ricchi*, *póveri*.

To make these adjectives of the feminine gender, you must change *o* into *a*, as *bélla*, *bélla*; *dótto*, *dótta*; *ricco*, *ricca*: and in the plural you must change *a* into *e*; as *bélle*, *dótte*, *ricche*.

The other adjectives ending in *e* are of the masculine and feminine gender, without ever changing their termination, and they form their plural in *i*, as well for the masculine as feminine: examples, *un uómo prudénte*, *una donna prudénte*, *dúbi úomini*, *prudénti*; *dúe dónne prudénti*.

From the adjectives we may form comparatives and superlatives.

Of Comparatives.

THE English comparatives are adjectives, before which are put the particles, *more*, *less*, *better*, or *worse*, &c.

The Italian comparatives have before them *più*, *méno*, or *méglio*; as, *più dótto*, more learned; *méno dótto*, less learned; *più bélla*, more handsome; *méno bélla*, less handsome.

The comparatives serve to compare one thing with another: *the sun is larger than the earth*; *your sister is better drest than your niece*. In these examples we compare the sun with the earth, the sister with the niece.

There are four Italian comparatives, which end in *ore*; they may also be expressed by *più*, except *migliore*

Digitized by Google

or *méglio*, which are comparatives without the help of the particle *più*.

maggióre,	more great,	*più gránde.*
minóre,	less,	*più piccolo.*
peggióre,	worse,	*più cattívo.*
meglióre,	better,	*méglio.*

To which may be added *superióre*, superior, and *inferióre*, inferior, or lower.

Observe, that the Italians never make use of the words *péggio* and *méglio*, but when they want to express the French words *pire* and *mieux*, that is *worse* and *better*, taken as adverbs. When the comparative is to agree with the substantive, they say, *peggióre* and *miglióre*.

*** Observe also, that there can be no comparison made without the word *than*, and that this word is not expressed in Italian by *che*, but by the articles of the genitive, *di, del, dello, della, dei, degli, delle*.

*** When the word *than*, which is after the comparative, is followed by an article, or a pronoun possessive, as, *than the, than my, than thy, than his, than ours, than yours, than theirs*, &c. in that case the word *than* is expressed by the definite articles, *del, dello, della, dei, degli, delle*. Example.

Clearer than the sun,	*più chiáro del sóle.*
More white than the snow,	*più bíanco della néve.*
More learned than the scholar,	*più dótto dello scoláre.*
Longer than the days,	*più lúnghi dei giórni.*
Fairer than the stars,	*più bélle delle stelle.*
Clearer than the glasses,	*più chiári degli spécchj.*
Bigger than my book,	*più gránde del mio líbro.*
Larger than my hand,	*più lárga della mia máno.*
Richer than your relations,	*più ricchi de' vostri parénti.*

*** But if the word *than* is not followed by an article, or a pronoun possessive, *than* is expressed by the indefinite article *di*. Example,

More

Digitized by Google

More learned than Cicero, *più dótto di Cicróne.*
More esteemed than I, *più stimáto di me.*
Bigger than the whole earth, *più gránde di tutta la térra.*
Richer than that man, *più ricco di quésto ómo.*

*** If after *than* there happens to be a pronoun possessive, followed by a noun of quality or kindred in the singular, *than* is expressed by the indefinite article *di:* example.

More handsome than my brother, my sister, your excellency, &c. *più bello di mio fratéllo, di mia soréllа, di vostra eccellenza,* &c. We may likewise make use of the definite article, but in that case we must place the pronoun and the noun substantive, according to what has been observed at the end of the first chapter; and we must say, *più bello del fratéllo mio, della soréllа mia, dell' eccellénza vostra,* &c.

*** If the pronoun possessive is in the plural number, as, *my brothers, their aunts, their highnesses,* we must use the definite articles, *de'* and *delle;* example, more powerful than my brothers, *più poténti de' miei fratélli, delle mie zie, delle altézze loro.*

*** If the word *than* is followed by an adjective or by a verb, or adverb, it is rendered by *che:* example,

More white than yellow, *più biáncho che giallo.*
More poor than rich, *più povero che ricco.*
He writes more than he speaks, *scrive piú che non parla.*
It is better late than never, *è meglio tárdi che mái.*

When the Italians have a mind to heighten their comparisons, they make use of *via più, assai più, molto più,* a great deal or much more: as also of *via méno, assai méno, mólto méno,* a great deal or much less.

Example—Cæsar is much more esteemed than Pompey.
Césare è via più stimáto di Pompéo.
Césare è assai più stimáto di Pompéo.
Césare è molto più stimáto di Pompéo.
Pompey was much less happy than Cæsar.
Pompéo è stato via méno, assai méno, molto méno felice di Césare. In all these examples one may say also, *che Pompéo che Césare.*

Digitized by Google

*** See the second part of this book, in the chapter of the concord of nouns, the rule concerning the comparison, when it is made by *as, much as, so,* &c.

Of Superlatives.

THE English superlative is nothing but a noun adjective, to which you prefix the particle *most*, in order to heighten the sense; as *most learned, most honoured.*

The Italian superlative is formed from the noun adjective, by changing the last letter into *issimo*, for the masculine, and into *issima*, for the feminine; thus from *gránde* you form *grandissimo*, most great; from *bella, bellissima*, most handsome.

The most is expressed by *il più, la più;* as, the most fair, or fairest, *il più bélla, la più bélla, i più bélli, le più bélle;* the most large, or largest, *il più grande.*

*** Observe, that by changing the last letter of adjectives in *issimaménte*, the superlative adverbs are composed; as, from *dótto*, learned, *dottissimaménte*, most learnedly; from *ricco*, rich, *ricchissimaménte*, most richly; from *prudénte*, prudent, *prudentissimaménte*, most prudently.

You are also to take notice, that the positive is sometimes used in the Italian language instead of the superlative, as, *è la bélla delle bélle;* as if one were to say, she is the fairest of the fair.

There is also another species of superlative; for we say, *un úomo dótto dótto*, to signify a very learned man.

Observations on some Nouns.

TAKE notice that these six words, *uno, bélło, gránde, sánto, quello, buóno*, are abridged or retrenched, before masculine nouns beginning with a consonant, and we only put

Un, bel, gran, san, quel, buon; as *un libro, bél cáne, gran fuóco, san Michéle, quel bastóne, buon figliuólo.*

Before the feminine nouns we put

Una, bélla, grande, sánta, quélla, buóna.

None but *gran* is shortened before feminines.

See, in the second part, the chapter concerning words that are to be abridged.

Fráte

Digitized by Google

Frâte signifies a friar, or brother of a religious order. In this sense we abridge the word *fráte* before the proper names of men, and we only use *fra;* as, brother Peter, *fra Piétro;* brother Paul, *fra Paólo;* brother Augustine, *fra Agostíno;* brother John, *fra Giovánni.*

We must remember that *fra*, before numeral nouns, signifies *in:* example, in a year, *fra un ánno;* in two months, *fra duói mesi;* in fifteen days, *fra quíndici giórni.*

Of Numeral Nouns.

ONE, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten, eleven, twelve, thirteen, fourteen, fifteen, sixteen, seventeen, eighteen, nineteen, twenty, twenty-one, twenty-two, twenty-three, &c. thirty, forty, fifty, sixty, seventy, eighty, ninety, a hundred, two hundred, three hundred, a thousand, two thousand, a million, a tenth, a dozen, a score, a thirtieth.

UN, úno, úna, dúe, & due, tre, quáttro, cinque, sei, sétte, ótto, nóve, diéci, úndici, dódici, trédici, quattórdici, quíndici, sédici, diécisétte, or *diciasétte, diéci ótto,* or *dicia-otto, diéci-nove,* or *dicia nóve, venti, ventúno, venti-dúe, vénti-tre, &c. tránta, quaránta, cinquánta, sessánta, settánta, ottánta, nonánta, cento, ducénto, trecénto, mille, dúe míla, milliône,* or *migliône, una decína, una dozína, uno ventína, una trentína.*

Ordinal Nouns.

FIRST, second, third, fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh, eighth, ninth, tenth, eleventh, twelfth, thirteenth, fourteenth, fifteenth, sixteenth, seventeenth, twentieth, one-and-twentieth, thirtieth, fortieth, fiftieth, sixtieth, seventieth, eightieth, ninetieth, the hundredth, the thousandth, the last.

PRÍMO, secóndo, térzo, quárto, quínto, sésto, séttimo, ottávo, nóno, décimo, undécimo, duodécimo, décimo-térzo, décimo-quárto, décimo-quínto, décimo-sésto, décimo-séttimo, décimo-ottávo, décimo-nóno, ventésimo, ventésimo primo, trentésimo, quarantésimo, cinquantésimo, sessantésimo, settantésimo, ottantésimo, nonantésimo, centésimo, millésimo, último.

Digitized by Google

The proportional numbers are *sémplice, dóppio, triplicáto, quadruplicáto, centuplicáto,* single, double, threefold, fourfold, a hundredfold.

The distributive nouns are *ad uno ad uno,* one by one: *a due a due,* two by two, &c.

In French and English all ordinal numbers may be formed into adverbs, but in Italian they have only *primieraménte,* and *secondariaménte.*

To express thirdly, fourthly, &c. they say *in térzo luógo, in quárto luógo,* &c. in the third place, in the fourth place, &c.

A Method (for those who understand FRENCH) to learn a great many ITALIAN Words in a short time.

THOUGH Italian is said to be corrupted Latin, yet it has a greater conformity and resemblance with the French than with any other language; for the French words, with a very little variation, are all Italian, as may be seen by the following examples; only we must observe, that the French syllable *cha* is always expressed in Italian by *ca,* rejecting *h:* example, *Charbon, charité, chasteté, chapon, charette, chandelle, chapeau,* the Italians say, *Carbóne, carità, castità, capóne, carétta, candéla, cappéllo.*

To learn a great number of Italian words in a short time, we must observe the following rules.

FRENCH Terminations that end in ITALIAN in a.

French words ending in *ance;* as constance, vigilance, &c. in Italian end in *anza; constánza, vigilánza,* &c.

Those in *ence* in French; as clemence, diligence, prudence, end in Italian in *enza; cleménza, diligénza, prudénza.*

AGNE makes *agna;* montagne, *montágna;* campagne, *campágna.*

OGNE makes *ogna;* Catalogne, *Catalógna;* charogne, *carógna.*

IE makes *ia;* comedie, *comédia;* here you lean the accent upon the *e,* and not upon the *i,* as in French, poesie, *poesía.*

OIRE

Digitized by Google

OIRE makes *oria*; gloire, *glória*; victoire, *victória*.
TÉ makes *tà*; pureté, *purità*; liberalité, *liberalità*. See what has been said in the exceptions of nouns terminating in *a*.
URE makes *ura*; avanture, *véntura*; imposture, *impostúra*.

FRENCH Terminations ending in ITALIAN in E.

AL, *ale*; cardinal, *cardinále*; mal, *mále*.
ABLE, *evole*; charitable, *caritatévole*; honorable, *onorévole*; louable, *lodévole*.
ANT, *ante*; vigilant, *vigilánte*; amant, *amánte*.
ENT, adjective, *ente*; prudent, *prudénte*; diligent, *diligénte*.
EUR, *ore*; honneur, *onóre*; chaleur, *calóre*.
IER, *iere*; cavalier, *cavaliére*; picquier, *picchiére*.
ION, *ione*; union, *unióne*; portion, *porzióne*.
ISON, *gione*; raison, *ragióne*; prison, *prigióne*.
ON, *one*; charbon, *carbóne*; canon, *canóne*; baron, *baróne*.
ONT, *onte*; front, *fronte*; pont, *ponte*.
OIS, names of nations, *ese*; François, *Francése*; Hollandois, *Olandése*; Anglois, *Inglése*.
UDE, *udine*; inquiétude, *inquietúdine*.
ULIER, *olare*; regulier, *regoláre*; particulier, *particoláre*.

FRENCH Terminations ending in ITALIAN in O.

AGE, *aggio*; page, *pággio*; équipage, *equipággio*.
AIN, *ano*; vilain, *villáno*; humain, *umáno*.
AIN, *and* IEN, names of nations, *áno* and *íno*; Romain, *Románo*; Italien, *Italiáno*; Napolitain, *Napolitáno*; Parisien, *Parigíno*.
AIRE, *ario*; salaire, *salário*; téméraire, *temerário*.
EAU, *ello*; chapeau *capéllo*; manteau, *mantéllo*.
ENT, substantive, *ento*; sacrement, *sacraménto*.
EUX, *oso*; généreux, *generóso*; gracieux, *grazióso*.
IN, *ino*; vin, *vino*; jardin, *giardíno*.
IF, *ivo*; actif, *attívo*; passif, *passívo*.
C, *co*; porc, *pórco*; Turc, *Túrco*; Grec, *Gréco*; escroc, *scrócco*, doubling the letter *c*.

Change

Digitized by Google

Change of Terminations of VERBS and PARTICIPLES.

ER, *are;* aimer, *amáre;* parler, *parláre.*
ENDRE, *endere;* prendre *prèndere;* rendre, *réndere.*
IR, *ire;* partir, *partíre;* sentir, *sentíre.*

The participles in *é* make *ato;* aimé, *amáto;* orné, *ornáto;* chanté, *cantáto;* parlé, *parláto.*

The particles in *i* make *ito;* dormi, *dormíto;* senti, *sentíto;* pati, *patíto;* menti, *mentíto.*

There are a great many Italian words that have no manner of analogy or resemblance with the French; as *le ciglia,* the eyebrows; *fazzolétto,* a handkerchief; *góbbo,* crooked; *chiamáre,* to call; *scherzáre,* to play; and many others, which hinder these rules from being general.

Other Terminations of the ITALIAN Nouns, derived from the Latin.

The Latin ablative generally makes the Italian nominative; as *calóre, onóre, péttine, vérgine.*

The natural nominatives change their last syllable into *o;* as sacerdotium, *sacerdózio,* &c. But if the last syllable of the nominative begins with a consonant, the consonant continues, and the vowel *o* is added to it: examples, *tempus,* say *témpo; cornu, córno;* retaining the *p* and *n,* which are the first letters of the last syllable of the nominative *tempus, témpo,* and the nominative *cornu, córno.*

The neutral nominatives in *en* drop the letter *n;* as nomen, *nóme;* flumen, *flúme;* changing also the letter *l* into *t,* as hath been already observed, where we treated of nouns ending in *u.*

The greatest part of the Latin infinitives, of the second and third conjugation, make the Italian infinitives; as, *dolére, tenére, solére, temére, vedére, crédere, léggere, diféndre:* but the *e,* in those words which are accented, is pronounced in a different manner, being the close *e,* like that in the French word *malgré.*

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

Of PRONOUNS.

THE pronouns are either personal, conjunctive, possessive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or improper.

Of Pronouns Personal.

THE pronouns personal are *io* and *noi* for the first person, and they serve for the masculine and feminine.

Tu and *voi*, for the second, and these serve also for the masculine and feminine.

Egli for the third person of the masculine gender, and it makes *églino* in the plural.

Ella or *essa* (because *lui* for the masculine, and *lei* for the feminine, are never used in the nominative) for the third person in the feminine gender form in the plural *elleno*; but *esse* is preferable. Hence we never say *lui* or *lei mi dia una présa di tabácco*, give me a pinch of snuff. But *signóre, V. S.* or *essa*, or *la di lei persóna mi dia una présa di tabácco.*

The pronouns personal are declined by the article indefinite, *di, a, da.*

The Declension of Pronouns Personal.

First Person.

Sing.	Nom.	I	*io.*
	Gen.	of me,	*di me.*
	Dat.	to me,	*a me*, or *mi.*
	Acc.	me,	*me*, or *mi.*
	Abl.	from me,	*da me.*
Plur.	Nom.	we,	*noi.*
	Gen.	of us,	*di noi.*
	Dat.	to us,	*a noi*, or *ci.*
	Acc.	us,	*noi* or *ci.*
	Abl.	from *or* by us,	*da noi.*

With

Digitized by Google

With me, is rendered by *con me,* or *méco; mé* after the imperatives, is expressed by *mi;* as speak to me, *parlátemi;* tell me, *dítemi;* send me, *mandátemi;* write to me, *scrivétemi.*

Us, after the imperative, is rendered by *ci:* example, tell us; *díteci:* give us, *dáteci;* show us, *mostráteci.* In these examples *us* is not a pronoun personal, but conjunctive as you will see hereafter.

Second Person.

Sing.	Nom.	thou,	*tu.*
	Gen.	of thee,	*di te.*
	Dat.	to thee,	*a te,* or *ti.*
	Acc.	thee,	*te,* or *ti.*
	Abl.	from thee,	*da te.*
Plur.	Nom.	you *or* ye,	*voi.*
	Gen.	of you,	*di voi.*
	Dat.	to you,	*a voi,* or *vi.*
	Acc.	you,	*voi,* or *vi.*
	Abl.	from you,	*da voi.*

With the, is rendered by *con te,* or *teco, with you;* after imperatives, by *vi,* and not by *voi;* as, be you contented, *contentátevi;* show yourself, *mostrátevi;* hide yourself, *nascondétevi;* dress yourself, *vestitevi;* thee, or thyself, is expressed after imperatives by *ti;* as, *móstrati,* show thyself.

Third Person. For the masculine.

Sing.	Nom.	he,	*égli.*
	Gen.	of him,	*di lui,*
	Dat.	to him,	*a lui,* or *gli.*
	Acc.	him,	*lui.*
	Abl.	from him,	*da lui.*
Plur.	Nom.	they,	*églino.*
	Gen.	of them,	*di loro.*
	Dat.	to them,	*a loro,* or *loro.*
	Acc.	them,	*loro.*
	Abl.	from them,	*da loro.*

*** Re-

Digitized by Google

*** Remember that the pronoun *him*, or *to him*, when joined to a verb, is always rendered in Italian by *gli*, and *her*, by *le*, as you will see in the pronouns conjunctive.

	Third person.	Feminine.
Sing. Nom.	she,	*ella*, or *essa*.
Gen.	of her,	*di lei*.
Dat.	to her,	*a lei*, or *le*.
Acc.	her,	*lei*, or *la*.
Abl.	from *or* by her,	*da lei*.
Plur. Nom.	they,	*elleno*, or *esse*.
Gen.	of them,	*di loro*.
Dat.	to them,	*a loro*, or *loro*.
Acc.	them,	*loro*, or *le*.
Abl.	from *or* by them,	*da loro*.

Though there are instances of *lui*, *lei*, and *loro*, being used in the nominative, yet it is better to say *egli párla, ella cánta*, than *lui párla, lei cánta;* because *lui* is not commonly used in the nominative, but in other cases, in which it is better to make use of *lui*, *lei*, and *loro* than of *egli, ella, églino, élleno*. We therefore say, for him, *per lui;* for her, *per lei;* for them, *per loro;* with him, *con lui;* or *séco;* with her, *con lei*, or *séco;* with them, *con loro*.

Of the Pronoun se, *one's self, or himself.*

There is another pronoun personal, that serves indifferently for the masculine and feminine; this is *se*, one's self; it has no nominative.

Gen. of one's self, himself, *or* herself,	*di se*.
Dat. to one's self, *&c.*	*a se*, or *si*.
Acc. one's self, *&c.*	*se*, or *si*.
Abl. from *or* by one's self, *&c.*	*da se*.

It is often joined with the pronoun *stésso* or *stéssa*, and then it is more elegant: *per se stésso*, by, or for himself; *per se stéssa*, for herself.

Of

Digitized by Google

Of Pronouns Conjunctive.

THE pronouns conjunctive bear a great resemblance to the pronouns personal: the pronouns personal are,

I, thou, he, we, ye, they.

There are seven pronouns conjunctive, viz. *to me*, or *me; to thee*, or *thee; to himself*, or *himself; to herself*, or *herself; to him*, or *him; to us*, or *us; to you*, or *you; to them*, or *them.*

They are expressed in Italian by
mi, ti, si, gli or *le, ci, vi, loro.*

It is easy to remember, that the pronouns conjunctive, *me, thee, one's self*, or *himself; to him, them;* or *to them, &c.* are always rendered in Italian by *mi, ti, si, gli,* or *le, loro:* example, that pleases me, *questo mi piáce.*

God sees thee, *Dio ti véde.*

The sun rises, *il sole si léva.*

I will tell him, *io gli dirò.*

I will tell her, *io le dirò.*

I promise them, *prométto loro;* as well for the masculine as the feminine.

*** The pronoun conjunctive *loro* is always put after the verb in Italian: as, you will tell them, *diréte loro.*

The pronoun conjunctive, to him, is expressed in Italian by *gli,* and to her, by *le:* example, I speak, to him, *io gli párlo;* I speak to her, *io le párlo.* We likewise make use of *gli* in the plural, to signify *loro;* but then observe, that you are to put *gli* before the finite mood; as, *io gli ho intéso dire cose mirábili;* and *loro* after the infinite mood, as *ho vedúto fax loro cose mirábili. N. B.* But *gli* for *loro* is seldom used in prose.

*** The pronouns *we* and *ye* are expressed in Italian by *noi* and *voi,* when they precede the verbs whose action they make, and to which they are nominatives; as, we pray, *noi preghiámo;* you sing, *voi cantáte. We* is the nominative of to *pray,* of which it makes the action; and so *ye* is the nominative of to *sing:* then *we* and *ye* are pronouns personal.

*** When *we* and *ye,* in Italian *noi* and *voi,* precede verbs to which they are not the nominative, and there is

Digitized by Google

is some other word that goes before and makes the action of the verb, then they are pronouns conjunctive, and must be expressed by *ci* and *vi*, in English *us* and *you*: example, the master speaks to us, *il maéstro ci párla*, and not *noi párla*: because the master makes the action, and is the nominative to the verb. In like manner, to render in Italian, *we speak to you*, we must say, *noi vi parliámo*, and not *noi voi parliámo*; because *we* is the nominative, and makes the action of the verb, and not *you*, which instead of making it, receives it. Yet we may say, *il maéstro párla a noi, noi parliámo a voi.*

*** One of the chief difficulties to the learners of the Italian language, is to express the pronouns conjunctive *mi, ti, ci, gli, ci, vi*, when they are followed by the particles *lo, la, li, le*, or *ne*.

To clear up this matter, you must express them here as underneath, changing the letter *i* of the pronoun conjunctive into *e*; as to say *to me of it* instead of *mini*, you must say *mene*; in like manner, instead of *mi lo*, you are to say *melo*, pronouncing the two syllables short. And the same is to be observed in all the following pronouns conjunctive.

Me, *mi*; me of it, *mene*.	it,	to me,	*melo*, mas.
	it,	to me,	*mela*, fem.
	them,	to me,	*meli, mele*, m. & f.
Thee, *ti*; thee of it, *tene*.	it,	to thee,	*telo*, mas.
	it,	to thee,	*tela*, fem.
	them,	to thee,	*teli, tele*, m. and f.
Himself, *se*; himself of it, *sene*.	it,	to himself,	*selo*, mas.
	it,	to himself,	*sela*, fem.
	them,	to himself,	*seli, sele*, m. and f.
To him, *gli*, to him of it, *gliene*.	it,	to him,	*glielo*, mas.
	it,	to him,	*gliela*, fem.
	them,	to him,	*glieli, gliele*, m. & f.
Us, *ci*; us of it, *cene*.	it,	to us,	*celo*, mas.
	it,	to us,	*cela*, fem.
	them,	to us,	*céli, cele*, m. & f.
You, *vi*; you of it, *vene*.	it,	to you,	*velo*, mas.
	it,	to you,	*vela*, fem.
	them,	to you,	*veli, vele*, m. & f.

To

To them, *loro;* to them of it, *ne loro;* putting always *loro* after the verb.

If the verbs are in the infinitive, or the gerund, the pronouns conjunctive must be transposed; as to tell me, *per dirmi;* to tell me of it, *per dirmene;* to give it to me, *per dármelo;* in telling me it, *dicéndomelo;* to give it to us, *per dárcelo;* so as to make, as it were, but one word of it, remembering that we must always pronounce short *melo, mene, telo, tene, celo, celi, cele,* and the rest after the same manner.

Other examples concerning the pronoun conjunctive *loro,* them.

I promise them, *prométto loro.*

To promise them some, *per prométterne loro.*

In promising them some, *prometténdone loro.*

After imperatives, and before infinitives and gerunds, the pronouns are never personal, but conjunctive; example, give us, *dáteci;* to see you, *per védervi;* in speaking to you, *parlándovi.*

After verbs, when a question is asked, the pronouns are personal, and not conjunctive; example, have you? *avéte voi?* shall we sing? *canterémo noi?*

The poets always use *ne,* instead of *ci,* to express the pronoun conjunctive *us,* as we may see in Guarini's *Pástor Fido.*

Perchè, crúdo destín, ne disunisci tu, s'amor ne stringe?
E tu perchè ne stringi, se ne párte il destín, perfído amore?

Why, cruel fate, dost thou part us, if love unites us? And thou, perfidious love, why dost thou unite us, if fate parts us.

Of Pronouns Possessive.

THE English have no article in the nominative before the pronouns possessive, but the Italians have; as my, *il mío, la mía,* fem. Plur. *i miéi, le míe,* fem.

There are six pronouns possessive, viz. *il mío, il túo, il súo, il nóstro, il vóstro, il lóro:* my, thy, his, our, your, their: in the plural they make *i míei, i túoi, i súoi, i nóstri, i vóstri, i lóro.*

The

Digitized by Google

The feminine pronouns possessive are, *la mía, la túa, la súa, la nóstra, la vóstra, la lóro:* in the plural, *le mie, le túe, le súe, le nóstre, le vóstre, le lóro.*

Loro, as you see, never changes, but is always *loro;* it is put before the masculine as well as the feminine, before the singular as well as the plural number.

The pronouns possessive are declined by the definite article *il* for the masculine, and by *la* for the feminine.

To render them easy to decline, I shall give the following example.

Sing. Nom.	my book,	*il mio libro.*
Gen.	of my book,	*del mio libro.*
Dat.	to my book,	*al mio libro.*
Abl.	from *or* by my book,	*dal mio libro.*
Plur. Nom.	my books,	*i miei libri.*
Gen.	of my books,	*de' miei libri.*
Dat.	to my books,	*a' miei libri.*
Abl.	from *or* by my books,	*da' miei libri.*

Decline all the other masculines after the same manner, and the feminines by the article *la;* as, *la mia sérva, della mia sérva, alla mia sérva, dálla mia sérva: le mie sérve, delle mie sérve, alle mie sérve, dálle mie sérve.*

*** Note, you must not use the definite article when the pronouns possessive precede nouns of quality, but the indefinite articles *di, a, da:* example.

Your majesty, *vostra maestà.*

Of your majesty, *di vostra maestà.*

To your majesty, *a vostra maestà.*

From your majesty, *da vostra maestà.*

*** Remember also, that names of kindred conform to this rule; thus we say, *mio pádre, a mio pádre, da mio pádre; mia mádre, di mia mádre, a mia mádre, da mia mádre; mio fratéllo, di mio fratéllo, a mio fratéllo, da mio fratéllo; mia sorélla, di mia sorélla, a mia sorélla, da mia sorélla; mio marito,* &c.

*** From the above examples it appears, that nouns declined by the indefinite article have no article in the nominative.

If the nouns of quality or relation be in the plural, we must make use of the definite article *i* or *le, de'* or *delle:* example.

Your

Digitized by Google

Your brothers, *i vóstri frátelli*, or *i fratélli vóstri*.
Your sisters, *le vóstre sorélle*, or *le soréile vóstre*.
Of your brothers, *de' vóstri frátelli*, or *de' fratélli vóstri*.
Of your sisters, *delle vóstre sorélle*.
To your brothers, *a' vóstri fratélli*.
To your sisters, *alle vóstre soréile*.
Their highnesses, *le altézze loro*, or *le loro altézze*.
Of their highnesses, *delle altézze loro*.
To their highnesses, *alle altézze loro*.

Though the definite article sometimes occurs in ancient and modern authors before nouns of kindred in the singular number, yet we ought not to imitate them; according to the old proverb, *tu vivendo bonos, scribendo sequere peritos*.

Take notice, that when the pronoun possessive is accompanied by a pronoun demonstrative, they do not put the article in the nominative. We do not say, *il quésto mio libro*, but *quésto mio libro*. In all other cases they make use of the indefinite article: thus they say, *di quésto vóstro libro, a quélla nóstra cása*, &c.

Of Pronouns Demonstrative.

THE pronouns demonstrative are the following: *this, that, these, those*.

They are called pronouns demonstrative, because they serve to point out or demonstrate any thing or person; as, *this book, that man, that woman*, &c.

They are expressed in Italian after the following manner:

This man or thing,	*Quésto & quésti*, or *quélla, quel & quégli, colúi, costúi*.
This woman or thing,	*Quésta, quélla*, or *colei*.
He, or that thing,	*Quél*, or *quéllo*, or *colúi*.
She, or that thing, &c.	*Quélla*, or *colei*.
This, fem. *quésta*,	*quésta-quì, costéi*.
That, fem. *quélla*,	*quélla-là, colei*.
This thing, *quésto* or *cio*,	

These

Digitized by Google

These men or things,	*Quésti, quélli & costóro.*
These women or things,	*Quéste, quélle, & costóre.*
They, or those, &c.	*Quélli, quéi*, masc. or *colóro.*
They, or those, &c.	*Quélle, fem.* or *colóro.*
That,	*Quésto*, or *cio.*

These here, fem. *quéste* or *costóre.*
Those there, fem. *quélle* or *costóre.*

They make use of *quésto, quésti, quésta, quéste*, in shewing a thing near at hand: and *quél, quéllo, quélli, quéi, quélla, quélle*, in shewing or speaking of a thing at a distance.

Costúi, colúi, costéi, colèi, are also pronouns demonstrative, and never used but in speaking of a rational substance; as, of a boy, a man, a woman, &c. and not a horse, a dog, &c. example, it is for this man, do not give it to that, *è per costúi, non lo dáte a colúi;* pay this woman, and send away that, *pagáte costéi, e rimandáte colèi;* you may also say, *è per quésto, non lo dáte a quéllo; pagáte quésta, rimandáte quélla.*

They do not often make use of *colúi, costúi, colèi, costéi*, in the nominative.

Costúi and *costéi*, form in the plural, *costóro*, these men or women; *colúi* and *colèi* make in the plural *colóro*, they or those men and women.

They seldom make use of *colóro* or *costóro*, either in the feminine or nominative.

We make use of *costúi, colúi, costéi, colèi, costóro, colóro*, when they are the last words of a sentence, but never in the beginning or middle of it.

We frequently meet with *cotésto* and *cotésta*, and they signify *that man* or *thing, that woman* or *thing:* but you are to observe, that there is a difference between *quésto*, and *cotésto*. Foreigners, and sometimes the Italians themselves, are mistaken in the use of those two pronouns. We ought never to use *cotésto*, but in speaking of a thing which concerns the person who hears us. Therefore you must not say, *cotésto mio ábito*, but *quésto mio ábito.*

*** Observe, *quésti* and *quégli* are often used for the singular number; as this man was happy, that unfortunate, *quésti fù felice, quégli sfortunáto;* but it is used

Digitized by Google

only in speaking of a rational substance, as of a man, a woman, an angel, &c. and not in speaking of a beast, or any inanimate thing, for then we are to make use of *quésto* and *quel*.

*** Note, *what* is often expressed by *il che;* but in that case it must refer to some antecedent phrase; example, my father is dead, which obliges me to go, *mio pádre è mórto, il che m' óbliga a partíre.* In the beginning of a sentence, we must say, *cio che;* example, that which pleaseth me, I have not, *cio che me piáce, non l'ho.*

Of Pronouns Interrogative.

THE pronouns interrogative serve to ask questions, and are as follow; who? what? which? *chi? che? quále?* Example,

Who is it? *chi è?*
Who told you so? *chi v'ha détto cio?*
What will you have? *che volète?*
What are you doing? *che fáte!*
What book is this? *che líbro è?*
What house is it? *qual' è la cása?*
What? *che?* of what? *di che?* to what? *a che?*

*** *Che* is often used for *quále?* and then the phrase is more elegant: example, what man is that? *che úomo è?* what affairs have you? *che affári avéte?* instead of saying, *qual úomo è? quáli affári avéte?*

Of Pronouns Relative.

THERE are three pronouns relative in English, *that, who*, and *which*.

That, when it is a pronoun relative, is expressed in Italian, by *che*, or by *il quále* in the masculine, and by *la quále* in the feminine: example, *il líbro che io léggo*, or *il qual' io léggo*, the book that I read. *La móglie ch' ho'* or *la qual' ho*, the wife that I have. But it is better to make use of *che* than of *quále*.

I said, when it is a pronoun relative, because when it is a conjunction or adverb, it is rendered by *che;* you

Digitized by Google

you must therefore say, *crédo ch' andrò*, &c. I believe that I shall go, &c.

Who, except it be interrogative, is also expressed by *che:* example, the master who teaches, *il maéstro che inségna:* the fools who laugh, *gli sciocchi che rídono.* But if it be interrogative, it is rendered by *chi.*

Of whom or *whose* is expressed by *di chi* or *di cui.*

To whom is expressed by *a chi* or *a cui.*

From whom, in the ablative, by *da chi.*

Which, masc. is expressed by *il quále;* of which, *del quále;* to which, *al quále;* from which, *dal quále;* which, plural, *i quáli;* of which, *dei* or *de' quáli;* to which, *ai*, or *a' quáli:* from which, *dai* or *da' quáli.*

Which, feminine, *la quále, della quále, alla quále, dalla quále;* in the plural, *le quáli*, &c.

*** Observe, that the pronouns relative, *that, who, which*, are also expressed by *che;* so that instead of saying *quále, quáli, il quále, i quáli, la quále, le quáli;* we may say and write *che*, which is more received.

*** The purest authors place the pronoun *cui* between the definite article of the noun. See the following examples; but observe, that you will never find this pronoun there in the nominative.

Whose fair visage, *il cui bel viso*, or *il di cui bel viso*, for *il bel víso di cui.*

Whose beauties, *le cui bellézze*, or *le di cui bellézze*, for *le bellézze di cui.*

To whose father, *al cui pádre*, or *al di cui pádre*, for *al pádre di cui.*

From whose brother I have received, *dal cui*, or *dal di cui fratéllo ho ricevúto.* See *Boccácio, Lodovíco, Dulce, Manzíni, Davíla*, and cardinal *Bentivóglio*, who often make use of these examples.

The French relative, *dont, of which* or *of whom*, is rendered in Italian by *di cui.*

Dont le, il di cui, or *il cui.*

Dont la, la di cui or *la cui.*

Dont les, i di cui, or *i cui*, for the masculine.

Dont les, le di cui, for the feminine.

*** *Lo, la, li, le*, are the pronouns relative, when before verbs.

Digitized by Google

Him, as we have already observed in the chapter of articles, is rendered by *lo*: example, I see him, *io lo védo*; you know him, *voi lo conoscéte*.

If the verb begins with a vowel, there must be elision; as, I caress him, *io l' accarézzo*.

Her, is expressed by *la*; example, I know her, *io la conosco*; you want her, *voi la voléte*.

Them is expressed by *li* for the masculine, and by *le* for the feminine; as, I see them, *li védo* or *le védo*.

*** Remember that the pronouns relative, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, must be transposed after infinitives, gerunds, and the word *ecco*.

Esso, he himself, or it, is likewise a pronoun relative; it makes in the plural *essi*, themselves; *essa*, she herself, or it, makes *esse*, themselves, fem.

Of improper Pronouns.

THESE pronouns are called *improper*, because indeed they are not properly pronouns, but have a great resemblance to pronouns as well as to adjectives. They are the following,

Tútto, tútti, m. *tútta, tútte*, f. all or every; *ógni*, each or every; *áltro, áltra, áltri, áltre*, other, others, *quálche*, some, *chiúnque*, whosoever; *qualchedúno, qualchedúna*, some one; *alcúno*, some one man or thing; *alcúna*, some one woman or thing; *ciaschedúno, ciaschedúni*, masc. *ciaschedúna, ciaschedúne*, fem. every one; *nissúno*, nobody; *il medésimo, il medémo, lo stésso*, mas. *la medésima, la medéma, la stéssa, l'istéssa*, fem. the same; *ciascúno*, masc. *ciascúna*, fem. each or every one; *altrúi, áltri*, others, &c.

Verúno, verúna, not one man or woman, is used for the affirmative as well as for the negative.

Tútto, comprehends a totality, and agrees with the thing spoken of; example, all the world, *tútto il móndo*, or *tútto l' mondo*; all the men, *tútti gli úomini*.

The whole earth, *tútta la térra*.
All the women, *tútte le dónne*.

*** We

Digitized by Google

*** We must use *tútto* and *túttа*, when the word *all* is followed by an article or a numeral noun; as, all the world, *tútto 'l móndo;* all the earth, *túttа la térra;* all three, *tutt' i tre.*

But if after the word *all* there is no article, we must use *ógni;* example, all men that say so, speak amiss, *ogni uómo che dice quésto, párla mále;* all women that, *ogni dónna che.*

Observe, nevertheless, that this pronoun is used without the article; and is productive of great elegance, especially in verse,

Che tútte *altre bellézze indiétro vánno.*
Sciólti da tútte *qualitáde umáne.*

*** *Ogní* is put with the singular number, and never with the plural; and it is indeclinable. It is used before masculines as well as feminines, and especially when the pronoun *all* may be rendered by *each* or every; example, all or every scholar, *ogni scólare;* for all or every thing, *per ogni cosa.*

There are some examples of *ogni* in the plural. Cres. 236, says *apprésso la fésta d'ogni sánti,* after the feast of All Saints. Fiam. 29, *i miéi affánni* ogni *últri trapásсano.* But the examples are so uncommon, that they hardly deserve notice.

Altro makes in the plural *altri; altra,* feminine, makes *altre.* The oblique cases are always *altrúi;* nom. *áltro;* gen. *altrúi,* or *d' altrui;* dat. *altrúi* or *ad altrúi;* acc. The feminine, as well in the singular as plural, always makes, like the nominative, *áltra.*

Altro, when it is not followed by a noun, signifies *another thing.*

Altri is often put for the singular number; as, *áltri piánge, áltri ríde,* one weeps, another laughs.

*** *Quálche* is only placed before the singular, and never with the plural: it is not right to say, *quálche signóri, quálche dónne,* some gentlemen, some ladies; you must say, *alcúni signóri, alcúne dónne.*

Qualsivóglia, whatsoever, is likewise used as an improper noun; whatsoever book, *qualsivóglia libro;* whatsoever wax, *qualsivóglia céra.*

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

Of the VERBS.

WHATEVER relates to the verbs, will be rendered much easier to learn by attending to the following remarks.

Important Remarks on the Conjugation.

Before you begin to learn the conjugations, it will be proper to observe, that all the verbs may be conjugated without the pronouns personal, *io, tu, egli, noi, voi, églino,* so you are at liberty to form them with or without the pronouns; and it will be right in you to follow the Latin rule,

Supprimit orator, quæ rusticus edit ineptè.

** You must also mind, that the tenses marked with a star, in the conjugation of the verb *avére, to have,* are terminated, and conjugated, after the same manner in all the other verbs: example, we say in the preterimperfect of the verb *avére,*

* *Avévo,* or *avéva, avévi, avéva, avévamo,* &c.
All the verbs follow the same rule; example,
Amávo, or *amáva, amávi, amáva, amavámo,* &c.
Credévo, or *credéva, credévi, credéva, credevámo,* &c.
Sentívo, or *sentíva, sentívi, sentíva, sentivámo,* &c.
And in like manner all other tenses that are distinguished by a star, except the single verb *éssere,* to be.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb avere, *to have.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Singular.

I have,	*io ho,* or	*ho.*
Thou hast,	*tu hái,*	*hai.*
He has,	*égli ha,*	*ha.*

---

* The best writers in the Italian language terminate the first person of the preterperfect of all verbs in *a*; *aveva,* not *avévo*; *amáva,* not *amávo*; and the latter termination is used by the vulgar.

Plural

Digitized by Google

Plural.

We have,	*nói abbiámo,*	*abbiámo*
You have,	*vói avéte,*	*avéte*
They have,	*églino hánno,*	*hánno.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I had,	* *io avévo,* or *avéva*
Thou hadst,	*tu avévi*
He had,	*égli avéva.*
We had,	*noi avevámo*
You had,	*voi aveváte*
They had,	*églino avévano.*

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I had,	*io ébbi*
Thou hadst,	*tu avésti*
He had,	*égli ébbe.*
We had,	*noi avémmo*
You had,	*voi avéste*
They had,	*églino ébbero.*

PRETERPERFECT.

I have had,	*io ho avúto*
Thou hast had,	*tu hái avúto*
He has had,	*égli ha avúto.*
We have had,	*noi abbiámo avúto*
You have had,	*voi avéte avúto*
They have had,	*églino hánno avúto.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I had had,	*io avévo avúto*
Thou hadst had,	*tu avévi avúto*
He had had,	*égli avéva avúto.*
We had had,	*noi avevámo avúto*
You had had,	*voi aveváte avúto*
They had had,	*églino avévano avúto.*

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will have,	* *io avrò*
Thou shalt have,	*tu avrái*

Digitized by Google

He shall have,	*égli avrà.*
We shall have,	*noi avrémo*
You shall have,	*voi avréte*
They shall have,	*églino avránno.*

N. B. *Averò, averái, averá, averémo, averéte, averánno,* are become obsolete, according to the modern taste.

IMPERATIVE.

The imperative has no first person singular, because it is impossible to command one's self.

Have thou,	*ábbi tu*
Let him have,	*ábbia égli.*
Let us have,	*abbiámo noi*
Have you,	*abbiáte voi*
Let them have,	*ábbiano églino.*

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE,

I join them together, because their tenses are similar.

PRESENT.

That I may have,	*che* or *ch' io ábbia*
That thou mayst have.	*che tu ábbi* or *ábbia*
That he may have,	*ch' égli ábbia.*
That we may have,	*che noi abbiámo*
That you may have,	*che voi abbiáte*
That they may have,	*ch' églino ábbiano.*

FIRST PRETERIMPERFECT.

That I had,	* *che* or *ch' io avéssi*
That thou hadst,	*che tu avéssi*
That he had,	*ch' égli avésse.*
That we had,	*che noi avéssimo*
That you had,	*che voi avéste*
That they had,	*ch' églino avéssero.*

SECOND PRETERIMPERFECT.

I should have,	* *io avréi*
Thou shouldst have,	*tu avrésti*
He should have,	*égli avrébbe.*
We should have,	*noi avrémmo*

You

Digitized by Google

You should have,	*voi avréste*
They should have,	*églino avrébbero.*

N. B. *Averéi, averésti, averébbe* or *avería, averémmo, averéste, averébbero,* or *averíamo,* are grown out of use; especially as this tense is always like the future of the indicative, changing *rò* into *rei.*

PRETERPERFECT.

That I have had,	*ch' io ábbia avúto*
Thou hast had,	*che tu ábbia avúto*
He has had,	*ch' égli ábbia avúto.*
We have had,	*che noi abbiámo avúto*
You have had,	*che voi abbiáte avúto*
They have had,	*ch' églino ábbiano avúto.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

If I had had,	*se io avéssi avúto*
Thou hadst had,	*se tu avéssi avúto*
He had had,	*s' égli avésse avúto.*
We had had,	*se noi avéssimo avúto*
You had had,	*se voi avéste avúto*
They had had,	*s' églino avéssero avúto.*

SECOND PRETERIMPERFECT.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

I should have had,	*io avrêi avúto*
Thou shouldst have had,	*tu avrésti avúto*
He should have had,	*égli avrébbe avúto.*
We should have had,	*noi avrémmo avúto*
You should have had,	*voi avréste avúto*
They should have had,	*églino avrébbero avúto.*

FUTURE.

It is compounded of the future of the indicative and the participle.

When I shall have had,	*quand' io avrò avúto.*
Thou shalt have had,	*tu avrái avúto.*

Digitized by Google

When he shall have had, *quand' égli avrà avúto.*
We shall have had, *noi avrémo avúto*
You shall have had, *voi avréte avúto*
They shall have had, *églino avránno avúto.*

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

To have, *avére.*

PRETERPERFECT.

To have had, *avér avúto.*

PARTICIPLES.

Had, *avúto, avúta;* plural, *avúti, avúte.*

GERUNDS.

Having, *or* in having, *avéndo. coll' avére. nell' avére. in avére.*

Having had, *avéndo avúto.*

*** We often use the verb *avére,* with the particle *da* or *a,* instead of the verb *dovére;* example, I ought to do, *ho da fáre; avéndo a dire:* instead of *dévo fáre; dovéndo dire.*

By the generality of tenses of the verb *avére,* you plainly see how necessary it is to be perfect master of them in order to attain a speedy knowledge of all the rest, since there is such an entire conformity between them, except in the present, preter-imperfect definite, and the subjunctive.

*** Upon our first learning the Italian, the interrogation creates some difficulty; and we are at a loss how to express *shall I have? have we? hast thou? has he?* yet there is nothing more easy; for it is but putting the pronouns personal after the verbs, as in English, and we shall never mistake in saying *avrò io? abbiámo noi? hai tu? ha égli?* And if we would express ourselves

Digitized by Google

selves with greater elegance and ease, we ought not to mention the pronouns at all; example, shall I have this? *avrò quésto?* does he do well? *fa béne?* shall we sing? *cantrémo?*

When we speak by negation, we must use the word *non;* example, I have not, *non ho;* you must not know, *non dovéte conóscere;* thou hast not, *non hai;* he has not, *non ha.*

In the like manner, to express, I have some, thou hast some, he has some, say, *ne ho, ne hai, ne ha, ne abbiámo,* &c. We may also make an abbreviation, and say, *n'ho, n'hai, n'ha,* &c.

And to express, we have none, thou hast none, he has none, &c. you may say, *non ne ho, non ne hai, non ne ha,* or *non n'ho, non n'hai, non n'ha.*

But to express, have I none? hast thou none? we say, *non ne ho io? non ne hai tu?* or *non n'ho io? non n'hai tu?*

Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb éssere, *to be.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

I am,	*io sóno,* or	*sóno*
Thou art,	*tu séi,*	*séi*
He is,	*égli è,*	*è.*
We are,	*noi siámo,*	*siámo*
You are,	*voi siéte,* or *séte,*	*siéte*
They are,	*églino sóno;*	*sóno.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I was,	*io éro* or	*éro*
Thou wert,	*tu éri,*	*éri*
He was,	*égli éra,*	*éra.*
We were,	*noi éramo,* or *eravámo,*	*erámo,* or *eravámo*
You were,	*voi eráte,* or *eraváte,*	*eráte,* or *eraváte*
They were,	*églino érano,*	*érano.*

Digitized by Google

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I was,	*io fúi,*	*fúi*
Thou wert,	*tu fústi,* or *fósti,*	*fústi*
He was,	*égli fù,*	*fù.*
We were,	*noi fúmmo,*	*fúmmo*
You were,	*voi fuste,* or *fóste,*	*fóste*
They were,	*églino fúrono,*	*fúrono.*

PRETERPERFECT.

It is compounded of the present indicative, *io sono,* and its own participle *státo* or *státa.*

I have been,	*io sòno státo*
Thou hast been,	*tu séi státo*
He has been,	*égli è státo.*
We have been,	*noi siámo státi*
You have been,	*voi siéte státi*
They have been,	*églino sóno státi.*

If we speak in the feminine, we must say, *sono státa, sei státa, è státa ; siámo státe, siéte státe, sono státe;* and so in all the compound tenses.

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I had been,	*io éro státo*
Thou hadst been,	*tu éri státo*
He had been,	*égli éra státo.*
We had been,	*noi erámo stati,* or *eravámo státi*
You had been,	*voi eráte státi,* or *eravate stati*
They had been,	*églino érano státi.*

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will be,	*io sarò*
Thou shalt be,	*tu sarái*
He shall be,	*égli sarà.*
We shall *or* will be,	*noi sarémo*
You shall be,	*voi saréte*
They shall be,	*églino saránno.*

IMPERA-

Digitized by Google

IMPERATIVE.

Be thou,	*sii tu*, or *sia tu*
Let him be,	*sia égli.*
Let us be,	*siámo noi*
Be you,	*siáte voi*
Let them be,	*siáno, siino*, or *sieno égline.*

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

That I may be,	*che* or *ch'io sia*
Thou mayst be,	*che tu sia*
He may be,	*ch'égli sia,*
We may be,	*che noi siámo*
You may be,	*che voi siáte*
They may be,	*ch'églino siano, siino,* or *sieno.*

FIRST PRETERIMPERFECT.

That I were *or* might be,	*che* or *ch'io fóssi*, or *fússi*
Thou wert,	*che tu fóssi*, or *fússi*
He were,	*ch' égli fósse*, or *fusse.*
We were,	*che noi fóssimo* or *fússimo*
You were,	*che voi fóste*, or *fúste*
They were,	*ch' églino fóssero*, or *fússero.*

SECOND PRETERIMPERFECT.

I should *or* would be,	*io saréi*
Thou shouldst be,	*tu sarésti*
He should be,	*égli sarébbe.*
We should be,	*noi sarémmo*
You should be,	*voi saréste*
They should be,	*églino sarébbero*, or *sarébbono.*

PRETERPERFECT.

It is compounded of the present conjunctive, *io sia*, and the participle *státo* or *státa*, of the same verb.

That I have been,	*che* or *ch'io sia státo*, or *státa*
Thou hast been,	*che tu sia státo*
He has been,	*che égli sia státo.*

That

Digitized by Google

That we have been,	*che noi siámo státi*, or *státe*
You have been,	*che voi siáte státi*
They have been,	*ch'églino siano státi.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

It is compounded of the first preterimperfect subjunctive, and the participle.

If I had been,	*se io fóssi státo*
Thou hadst been,	*se tu fóssi státo*
He had been,	*s' égli fósse státo.*
We had been,	*se noi fóssimo státi*
You had been,	*se voi fóste státi*
They had been,	*s'églino fóssero státi.*

SECOND PRETERPLUPERFECT.

It is compounded of the second preterimperfect subjunctive and the participle.

I should *or* would have been,	*io saréi státo*
Thou shouldst have been,	*tu saresti státo*
He should have been,	*égli sarébbe státo.*
We should have been,	*noi saremmo státi*
You should have been,	*voi saréste státi*
They should have been,	*églino sarébbero stati.*

FUTURE.

When I shall have been,	*quand' io sarò státo*
Thou shalt have been,	*tu sarái státo*
He shall have been,	*égli sarà státo*
We shall have been,	*noi saréme státi*
You shall have been,	*voi saréte státi*
They shall have been,	*églino saránno státi.*

INFINITIVE.

To be, *éssere.*

PRETERPERFECT.

To have been, *éssere státo.*

PARTICIPLE.

Been, *státo*, for the masculine; *státa*, for the feminine.

GERUNDS.

Digitized by Google

GERUNDS.

Being, *or* in being,	*esséndo*, or *séndo*; or *coll' éssere*, *nell' essére*. *in éssere*.
Having been,	*esséndo státo*.

The verb *éssere* has no need of any other auxiliary verb; and we must never put any of the tenses of the verb *avére* before the participle *státo*; as, I have been, you must say *sóno státo*, and not *ho státo*; I had been, *éro státo*, and not *avévo státo*. And this rule must be particularly attended to, because here it is that foreigners are apt to make blunders.

Of Conjugations.

THE Italian verbs have three different terminations in the infinitive: to wit,

In *are*; *ere*; *ire*; as, *amáre*, *cantáre*, *saltáre*. *temére*, *crédere*, *godére*. *scutire*, *dormire*, *mentire*.

For which reason, I shall use but three conjugations.
Amáre shall serve as a rule for the verbs in *are*.
Crédere for the verbs in *ere*.
Sentire for the verbs in *ire*.

It is proper to observe here, that the infinitives of verbs, derived from the Latin, retain the same quantity as they have in Latin. I explain myself: the verb *cantáre*, in Latin, has the second syllable long: and so it has the same syllable long in Italian. On the contrary, *crédere*, *créscere*, having the second syllable short in Latin have it also short in Italian. If you observe this rule in pronouncing infinitives, you will avoid the mistakes which most learners of the Italian language are apt to commit. Yet this rule has some exceptions.

Easy

Digitized by Google

Easy method of learning to conjugate the Verbs.

I HAVE reduced all the tenses of the verbs to seven, four of which are general, and have the same terminations in all the verbs; and the other three, by changing the one letter in the third person, may be likewise made general, and all the conjugations reduced to one.

The general tenses are the preterimperfect, the future, the first and second preterimperfect subjunctive.

The preterimperfect is terminated, in all the verbs, in
vo, vi, va; vámo, váte, vano.

The future indicative is terminated in
rò, rái, rà; rémo, réte, ránno.

The imperfect subjunctive in
ssi, ssi, sse; ssimo, ste, ssero.

The second imperfect in
réi, résti, rébbe; rémmo, réste, rébbero.

Change *re* of the verbs *amáre, crédere, sentíre* (and generally of all the other verbs) into *vo*, and *rò* into *ssi* and *rei*, &c. and you will find the imperfect, the future indicative, the first and second imperfect subjunctive of all the other verbs, without any exception; which will be of great ease to the learner.

*** Note, the future, and the second imperfect, of the verbs in *áre* are terminated in *erò* and *eréi*, and not in *arò* and *aréi*. Therefore, in these tenses, after having made the change of *re* into *rò* for the future, and into *rei* for the second imperfect, you must also change the vowel that precedes *rò* and *rei*, and say *amerò, ameréi;* and so of the other verbs terminated in *are*.

The present indicative, the present definite, and the present subjunctive, are the only tenses you have to learn; for the other four, that I have given above, are general.

In

Digitized by Google

In order to form those three tenses, you must cut off the last syllables of the indefinite, and then change the last vowel which remains. For the present indicative, you change it into *o* through all the conjugations, so that of *amáre, crédere, sentíre*, you make *amó, crédo, sénto*. For the preterperfect definite of the indicative, you change it into *ai* in the first conjugation; thus of *amáre* you form *amái*; but when you come to words of the second conjugation, you change it into *ei*; thus of *crédere* you make *crédei*; verbs of the third conjugation have it changed into *j*; thus, *sentíre* makes *sentj*. As for the present subjunctive, the vowel that remains is changed into *i* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the others; thus, *ámi, créda, sénta*.

Present.

are,	*o,*	*i,*	*a,*	*iámo,*	*áte,*	*ano.*
ere,	*o,*	*i,*	*e,*	*iámo,*	*éte,*	*ono.*
ire,	*o,*	*i,*	*e,*	*iámo,*	*íte,*	*ono.*

*** Take notice, that in the singular you are to change the letter in the third person only.

Preterperfect definite indicative.

are,	*ai,*	*ásti,*	*ò,*	*ámmo,*	*áste,*	*árono.*
ere,	*ei,*	*ésti,*	*è,*	*émmo,*	*éste,*	*érono.*
ire,	*j.*	*ísti,*	*ì,*	*ímmo,*	*íste,*	*írono.*

Present subjunctive.

are,	*i,*	*i,*	*i,*	*iámo,*	*iáte,*	*ino.*
ere,	*a,*	*a,*	*a,*	*iámo,*	*iáte,*	*ano.*
ire,	*a,*	*a,*	*a,*	*iámo,*	*iáte,*	*ano.*

*** Observe, that, through all the conjugations, there is no change made in the singular.

The participles are,

are,	*áto,*	*áta,*	*áti,*	*áte.*
ere,	*úto,*	*úta,*	*úti,*	*úte.*
ire,	*íto,*	*íta,*	*íti,*	*íte.*

Change

Digitized by Google

Change the termination, *áre, ére, íre,* with the letters and syllables opposite to them, and you will find the present, the preterperfect definite, and the present subjunctive, of all the regular verbs.

First conjugation, of the Verbs in are.

INDICATIVE.

*** I shall put the pronouns personal *io, tu, egli,* &c. no more.

PRESENT.

I love,	*ám-o*
Thou lovest,	*ám-i*
He loves,	*ám-a.*
We love,	*am-iámo*
You love,	*am-áte*
They love,	*ám-ano.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I did love,	*am-ávo,* or *am-áva,*
Thou didst love,	*am-ávi*
He did love	*am-áva.*
We did love,	*am-ávamo*
You did love,	*am-aváte*
They did love,	*am-ávano.*

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I loved,	*am-ái*
Thou lovedst,	*am-ásti*
He loved,	*am-ò.*
We loved,	*am-ámmo*
You loved,	*am-áste*
They loved,	*am-árono.*

The poets often use *amár* and *amáro,* for *amárono;* and so in all the verbs in *áre.*

PRETER-

Digitized by Google

PRETERPERFECT.

This tense is composed of the participle *amáto*, and the present indicative of the auxiliary verb *avere*.

I have loved,	*ho am-áto*
Thou hast loved,	*hái am-áto*
He has loved,	*ha am-áto.*
We have loved,	*abbiámo am-áto*
You have loved,	*avéte am-áto*
They have loved,	*hánno am-áto.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

This tense is composed of the participle *amáto*, and the imperfect of the auxiliary verb *avere*.

I had loved,	*avévo am-áto*
Thou hadst loved,	*avévi am-áto*
He had loved,	*avéva am-áto.*
We had loved,	*avevámo am-áto*
You had loved,	*aveváte am-áto*
They had loved,	*avévano am-áto.*

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will love,	*am-erò*
Thou shalt love,	*am-erái*
He shall love,	*am-erà.*
We shall love,	*am-erémo*
You shall love,	*am-eréte*
They shall love,	*am-eránno.*

Formerly they used *amarò*, but now they write *amerò*, and so of all the verbs in *are*.

IMPERATIVE.

Love thou,	*ám-a tu*
Let him love,	*ám-i égli*
Let us love,	*am-iámo noi*
Love you,	*am-áte voi*
Let them love,	*ám-ino églino.*

OPTA-

Digitized by Google

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

That I may love,	*che* or *ch'io ám-i*
Thou mayest love,	*che tu ám-i*
He may love,	*che* or *ch'egli ám-i.*
We may love,	*che am-iámo*
You may love,	*che am-iáte*
They may love,	*che* or *ch'ám-ino.*

N. B. You may put the pronouns personal in the present of this tense, *io, tu, egli,* to distinguish the persons, which are all terminated in the same manner: but it is superfluous to put them in the plural, the persons being sufficiently distinguished by their terminations. The same rule is applicable to the following preterimperfect, and to the present optative and subjunctive of the second and third conjugation.

FIRST PRETERIMPERFECT.

That I might or could love,	*che* or *ch'io am-ássi*
Thou mightest love,	*che tu am-ássi*
He might love,	*che* or *ch'égli am-ásse.*
We might love,	*che am-ássimo*
You might love,	*che am-áste*
They might love,	*che* or *ch'am-ássero.*

*** When we find the conjunction *si* before the indicative imperfect, we must use the imperfect of the subjunctive or optative; as, if I did love, *se amássi,* and not *se amávo;* if I had, *se avéssi,* and not *se avévo:* and so in all the verbs, because, when we speak by way of wish or desire, we should make use of the subjunctive or optative. Young beginners are apt to transgress against this rule.

SECOND PRETERIMPERFECT.

I should love,	*am-erêi*
Thou shouldst love,	*am-erésti*
He should love,	*am-erébbe.*

We

Digitized by Google

We should love,	*am-erémmo*
You should love,	*am-eréste*
They should love,	*am-erébbero.*

PRETERPERFECT.

It is composed of the participle *amáto*, and the present subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *avére*.

That I have loved,	*che* or *ch'io ábbia am-áto*
Thou hast loved,	*che tu ábbia am-áto*
He has loved,	*che* or *ch'égli ábbia am-áto.*
We have loved,	*che noi abbiámo am-áto*
You have loved,	*che voi abbiáte am-áto*
They have loved,	*che* or *ch'églino ábbianoam-áto.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

It is composed of the participle *amáto*, and the first preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *avére*.

If I had loved,	*se io avéssi am-áto*
Thou hadst loved,	*se tu avéssi am-áto*
He had loved,	*se* or *s'egli avése am-áto.*
We had loved,	*se avéssimo am-áto*
You had loved,	*se avéste am-áto*
They had loved,	*se avéssero am-áto.*

SECOND PRETERPLUPERFECT.

It is composed of the participle *amáto*, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive of the auxiliary verb *avére*.

I should have loved,	*avréi am-áto*
Thou shouldst have loved,	*avrésti am-áto*
He should have loved,	*avrébbe am-áto.*
We should have loved,	*avrémmo am-áto*
You should have loved,	*avréste am-áto*
They should have loved,	*avrébbero am-áto.*

FUTURE.

It is composed of the participle *amáto*, and the future indicative of the auxiliary verb *avére*.

When I shall have loved,	*quand' avrò am-áto*
Thou shalt have loved,	*avrái am-áto*

When

Digitized by Google

When he shall have loved, *quand' avrà am-áto*
We shall have loved, *avrémo am-áto*
You shall have loved, *avréte am-áto*
They shall have loved, *avránno am-áto.*

INFINITIVE.

To love, *am-áre.*
To have loved, *avére am-áto.*

PARTICIPLES.

Loved, *am-áto,* masculine, Loved, *am-áta,* feminine.

GERUNDS.

Loving, *or* in loving, *am-ándo, coll' am-áre, con am-áre, nell' am-áre, in am-áre.*
Having loved. *avéndo am-áto.*

Remarks on the Verbs in are.

ALL the verbs ending in *áre,* are conjugated in the same manner as *amáre;* except four, which only deviate from this rule in some of their tenses; they are *andáre, dáre, fáre, stáre.*

You will find their conjugations after the regular verbs.

*** Note, the verbs terminating, in the infinitives in *cáre,* and *gáre,* take an *h* in those tenses where the *c* and *g* would otherwise meet with the vowels *e* or *i;* that is to say, in the present indicative, imperative, optative, future indicative, and the second preterimperfect subjunctive; which are the tenses I shall give you by way of example in the verbs *peccáre,* and *pagáre.*

Peccáre, to sin; present, *pécc-o, pécc-hi,* (and not *pecci*), *pécc-a, pecc-hiámo, pecc-áte, pécc-ano,* I sin, &c.

Future, *pecc herò,* I shall sin; *pecc-heráì, pecc-herà, pecc-herémo, pecc-heréte, pecc-heránno,* and not *pecc-erò, pecc-erái,* &c.

Imperative, *pécc-a, pécc-hi; pecc-hiámo, pecc-áte, pécc-hino,* sin thou, let him sin, &c.

Optative, *che pécc-hi, pécc-hi, pécc-hi; pecc-hiámo, pecc-hiáte, pécc-hino,* that I may sin, &c.

Pecc-

Digitized by Google

Pecc-heréi, I should sin; *pecc-herésti, pecc-herébbe, peccherémmo, pecc-heréste, pecc-herébberó.*

Pagáre, to pay, present, *pág-o, pág-hi, pág-a; pag-hiámo, pag-áte, pág-ano*, I pay, &c.

Future, *pag-herò, pag-heráì, pag-herà; pag-herémo, pagheréte, pag-heránno*, I shall or will pay, &c.

Imperative, *pág-a, pág-hi; pag-hiámo, pag-áte, pághino*, pay thou, let him pay, &c.

Optative, *che pág-hi, pág-hi, pághi; pag-hiámo, paghiáte, pághino*, that I may pay, &c.

The second preterimperfect, *pag-heréi, pag-herésti, pagherébbe; pag-herémmo, pag-heréste, pag-herébbero*, &c. that I should pay, &c.

The other tenses are conjugated like *amáre.*

Conjugation of the verbs passive.

Before we proceed to the second conjugation, it is necessary to know, that the verbs passive are nothing more than the participles of verbs active, conjugated with the verb *éssere:* example,

Conjugàtion of the verb passive, éssere amáto, *to be loved.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

I am loved,	*sóno am-áto*
Thou art loved,	*séi am-áto*
He is loved,	*è am-áto.*
We are loved,	*siámo am-áti*
You are loved,	*siéte am-áti*
They are loved,	*sóno am-áti.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I was loved,	*éro am-áto*
Thou wert loved,	*éri am-áto*
He was loved,	*éra am-áto.*
We were loved,	*eravámo am-áti*
You were loved,	*eraváte am-áti*
They were loved,	*érano am-áti.*

PRE-

Digitized by Google

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I was loved,	*fúi am-áto*
Thou wert loved,	*fósti am-áto*
He was loved,	*fù am-áto.*
We were loved,	*fúmmo am-áti*
You were loved,	*fóste am-áti*
They were loved,	*fúrono am-áti.*

PRETERPERFECT.

I have been loved,	*sóno státo am-áto*
Thou hast been loved,	*séi státo am-áto*
He has been loved,	*è státo am-áto.*
We have been loved,	*siámo státi am-áti*
You have been loved,	*siete státi am-áti*
They have been loved,	*sóno státi am-áti.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I had been loved,	*éro státo am-áto*
Thou hadst been loved,	*éri státo am-áto*
He had been loved,	*éra státo am-áto.*
We had been loved,	*eravámo státi am-áti*
You had been loved,	*eraváte státi am-áti*
They had been loved,	*érano státi am-áti.*

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will be loved,	*sarò am-áto*
Thou shalt be loved,	*sarái am-áto*
He shall be loved,	*sarà am-áto.*
We shall be loved,	*sarémo am-áti*
You shall be loved,	*saréte am-áti*
They shall be loved,	*saránno am-áti.*

I shall go no farther with the conjugation, because it is only a repetition of the verb *sóno*, joined to the participle *am-áto*.

*** Observe, that the participles and adjectives change their gender and number after the tenses of the verb *éssere;* example,

I am loved, { *sono am-áto*, for the masculine / *sono am-áta*, for the feminine } singular.

We

Digitized by Google

We are loved, { *siámo am-áti*, for the masc. / *siámo am-áte*, for the fem. } plural.

You are learned, { *siéte dótto*, / *siéte dótta*, } for the singular. { *siéte dótti*, / *siéte dótte*, } for the plural.

Observe that in the construction of the passive, the Italians make use of *da* or *dal*, and *per, by*, which answer to the French *du* and *par*; with this difference, that the latter more frequently use *par* than *du*, whereas the former generally put *da* or *dal*: thus they say, *Piétro è amáto dal príncipe*, and not *per il príncipe*; which learners are apt to confound.

Second conjugation, of the Verbs in cre.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

I believe,	*créd-o.*
Thou believest,	*créd-i.*
He believes,	*créd-e.*
We believe,	*cred-iámo.*
You believe,	*cred-éte.*
They believe,	*créd-ono.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I did believe,	*cred-évo.*
Thou didst believe,	*cred-évi.*
He did believe,	*cred-éva.*
We did believe,	*cred-evámo.*
You did believe,	*cred-évate.*
They did believe,	*cred-évano.*

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I believed,	*cred-éi* or *cred-étti.*
Thou believedst,	*cred-ésti.*
He believed,	*credè*, or *cred-étte.*
We believed,	*cred-émmo.*
You believed,	*cred-éste.*
They believed,	*cred-érono*, or *cred-éttero.*

Digitized by Google

PRETERPERFECT.

I have believed,	*ho cred-úto.*
Thou hast believed,	*hái cred-úto.*
He has believed,	*ha cred-úto.*
We have believed,	*abbiámo cred-úto.*
You have believed,	*avéte cred-úto.*
They have believed,	*hánno cred-úto.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I had believed,	*avévo cred-úto.*
Thou hadst believed,	*avévi cred-úto.*
He had believed,	*avéva cred-úto.*
We had believed,	*avevámo cred-úto.*
You had believed,	*aveváte cred-úto.*
They had believed,	*avévano cred-úto.*

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will believe,	*cred-eró.*
Thou shalt believe,	*cred-erái.*
He shall believe,	*cred-erá.*
We shall believe,	*cred-erémo.*
You shall believe,	*cred-eréte.*
They shall believe,	*cred-erámno.*

IMPERATIVE.

Believe thou,	*créd-i.*
Let him believe,	*créd-a.*
Let us believe,	*cred-iámo.*
Believe you,	*cred-éte.*
Let him believe,	*créd-ano.*

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

That I may believe,	*che* or *ch'io créd-a.*
Thou mayst believe,	*che tu créd-a.*
He may believe,	*che* or *ch'égli créd-a.*
We may believe,	*che cred-iámo.*
You may believe,	*che cred-iáte.*
They may believe,	*che créd-ano.*

PRETER-

Digitized by Google

PRETERIMPERFECT.

That I might *or* could believe,	*che cred-éssi.*
Thou mightest believe,	*che cred-éssi.*
He might believe,	*che cred-ésse.*
We might believe,	*che cred-éssimo.*
You might believe,	*che cred-éste.*
They might believe,	*che cred-éssero.*

SECOND PRETERIMPERFECT.

I should believe,	*cred-eréi.*
Thou shouldst believe,	*cred-erésti.*
He should believe,	*cred-erébbe.*
We should believe,	*cred-erémmo.*
You should believe,	*cred-eréste.*
They should believe,	*cred-erébbero*, or *cred-erébbono.*

PRETERPERFECT.

That I have believed,	*che* or *ch'io ábbia cred-úto.*
Thou hast believed,	*che tu ábbia cred-úto.*
He has believed,	*che* or *ch'égli ábbia cred-úto.*
We have believed,	*ch'abbiámo cred-úto.*
You have believed,	*ch'abbiáte cred-úto.*
They have believed,	*ch'abbiano cred-úto.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

If I had believed,	*se io avéssi cred-úto.*
Thou hadst believed,	*se tu avéssi cred-úto.*
He had believed,	*se avésse cred-úto.*
We had believed,	*se avéssimo cred-úto.*
You had believed,	*se avéste cred-úto.*
They had believed,	*se avéssero cred-úto.*

SECOND PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I should have believed,	*avréi cred-úto.*
Thou shouldst have believed,	*avrésti cred-úto.*
He should have believed,	*avrébbe cred-úto.*
We should have believed,	*avrémmo cred-úto.*
You should have believed,	*avréste cred-úto.*
They should have believed,	*avrébbero cred-úto.*

Digitized by Google

FUTURE.

When I shall have believed,	*quand' avrò cred-úto.*
Thou shalt have believed,	*avrái cred-úto.*
He shall have believed,	*avrà cred-úto.*
We shall have believed,	*avrémo cred-úto.*
You shall have believed,	*avréte cred-úto.*
They shall have believed,	*avránno cred-úto.*

INFINITIVE.

To believe, *crédere.*

GERUND.

Believing, *or* in believing, *cred-éndo, col créd-ere,* &c.

PARTICIPLE.

Believed, *cred-úto,* masc. Believed, *cred-úta,* fem.

Conjugate in like manner the following verbs, which are the only verbs in *ere* that follow the rule of *créd-ere.*

*** Note, that all the regular verbs in *ere* have two terminations in the preterperfect definite, as they make

éi, ésti, è; émmo, éste, érono.

or,

étti, ésti, étte; émmo, éste, éttero.

	Infinitive.	Preterp. Def.	Participle.
To	beat, *báttere,*	*éi,* or *étti*	*úto.*
	drink, *bévere* or *bére*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	yield, *cédere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	cleave, *féndere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	fret, *frémere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	groan, *gémere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	enjoy, *godére*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	reap, *miétere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	feed, *páscere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*
	hang, *péndere*	*éi* *étti*	*úto.*

To

Digitized by Google

	Infinitive.	Preterp. def.	Participle.
To	vomit,	*récere*	*ei* or *étti* *úto.*
	receive,	*ricévere*	*ei* , *étti* *úto.*
	shine again,	*relúcere*	*ei* without a participle.
	sit down,	*sedére,*	*éi* *étti* *úto.*
	shine,	*spléndere*	*ei* *étti* *úto.*
	slide,	*sérpere*	*ei* *étti* *úto.*
	murmur,	*stridere*	*ei* *étti* *úto.*
	fear,	*temére*	*ei* *étti* *úto.*
	sell,	*véndere*	*ei* *étti* *úto.*

All the other verbs in *ere* are irregular.

The regular verbs ends with two vowels in the preterperfect definitive; as, *am-ái, cred-éi, sent-íi* or *sent-j.*

All the regular verbs, in the same tense, end with the vowel *i*: and this vowel *i* is preceded by a consonant; as, *ébbi, credétti, scrissi.* Thus *crédere,* which makes *credéi* and *credètti,* is both regular and irregular.

You will find, in the chapter of the irregular verbs in *ere* short, a very easy manner of learning the irregularity of the verbs, which I have reduced to one general rule.

Third Conjugation of the verbs in ire.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

I hear,	*sént-o.*
Thou hearest,	*sént-i.*
He hears,	*sént-e.*
We hear,	*sent-iámo.*
You hear,	*sent íte.*
They hear,	*sént-ono.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I did hear,	*sent-íva.*
Thou didst hear,	*sent-ívi.*
He did hear,	*sent-íva.*
We did hear,	*sent-ivámo.*
You did hear,	*sent-iváte.*
They did hear,	*sent-ívano.*

Digitized by Google

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I heard,	*sent-j.*
Thou heardst,	*sent-isti.*
He heard,	*sent-i.*
We heard,	*sent-immo.*
You heard,	*sent-iste.*
They heard,	*sent-irono.*

PRETERPERFECT.

I have heard,	*ho sent-ito.*
Thou hast heard,	*hái sent-ito.*
He has heard,	*ha sent-ito.*
We have heard,	*abbiámo sent-ito.*
You have heard,	*avéte sent-ito.*
They have heard,	*hánno sent-ito.*

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I had heard,	*avévo sent-ito.*
Thou hadst heard,	*avévi sent-ito.*
He had heard,	*avéva sent-ito.*
We had heard,	*avevámo sent-ito.*
You had heard,	*aveváte sent-ito.*
They had heard,	*avévano sent-ito.*

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will hear,	*sent-iró.*
Thou shalt hear,	*sent-irái.*
He shall hear,	*sent-irá.*
We shall hear,	*sent-irémo.*
You shall hear,	*sent-iréte.*
They shall hear,	*sent-iránno.*

IMPERATIVE.

Hear thou,	*sént-i.*
Let him hear,	*sént-a.*
Let us hear,	*sent-iámo.*
Hear you,	*sent-ite.*
Let them hear,	*sént-ano.*

OPTA-

Digitized by Google

OPTATIVE and SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.

That I may hear,	*che*, or *ch'io sént-a.*
Thou may'st hear,	*che tu sént-a.*
He may hear,	*ch'égli sént-a.*
We may hear,	*che sent-iámo.*
You may hear,	*che sent-iáte.*
They may hear,	*che sént-ano.*

Preterimperfect.

That I could *or* might hear,	*che sent-issi.*
Thou mightest hear,	*che sent-issi.*
He might hear,	*che sent-isse.*
We might hear,	*che sent-issimo.*
You might hear,	*che sent-iste.*
They might hear,	*che sent-issero.*

Second Preterimperfect.

I should hear,	*sent-iréi.*
Thou shouldst hear,	*sent-irésti.*
He should hear,	*sent-irébbe.*
We should hear,	*sent-irémmo.*
You should hear,	*sent-iréste.*
They should hear,	*sent-irébbero.*

Preterimperfect.

That I have heard,	*che*, or *ch' io ábbia sent-íto.*
Thou hast heard,	*che tu ábbia sent-íto.*
He has heard,	*ch'égli ábbia sent-íto.*
We have heard,	*ch' abbiámo sent-íto.*
You have heard,	*ch' abbiáte sent-íto.*
They have heard,	*ch' ábbiano sent-íto.*

Preterpluperfect.

If I had heard,	*se io avéssi sent-íto.*
Thou hadst heard,	*se tu avéssi sent-íto.*
He had heard,	*se égli avésse sent-íto.*

Digitized by Google

If we had heard,	*se avéssimo sent-íto,*
You had heard,	*se avéste sent-íto.*
They had heard,	*se avéssero sent-íto.*

SECOND PRETERPLUPERFECT.

If I should have heard,	*avréi sent-íto.*
Thou shouldst have heard,	*avrésti sent-íto.*
He should have heard,	*avrébbe sent-íto.*
We should have heard,	*avrémmo sent-íto.*
You should have heard,	*avréste sent-íto.*
They should have heard,	*avrébbero sent-íto.*

FUTURE.

When I shall have heard,	*quand' avrò sent-íto.*
Thou shalt have heard,	*averái sent-íto.*
He shall have heard,	*avrà sent-íto.*
We shall have heard,	*avrémo sent-íto.*
You shall have heard,	*avréte sent-íto.*
They shall have heard,	*avránno sent-íto.*

INFINITIVE.

To hear, *sent-íre.* Participle, heard, *sent-íto.* Gerund, in hearing, *sent-éndo.*

Conjugate after the same manner the following verbs, which are the only verbs in *íre*, that conform to the rule of *sent-íre.*

	Infinitive.	Pres.	Pret. def.	Particip.
To open,	*aprire*	*apro*	*aprj*	*apérto.*
boil,	*bollire*	*bollo*	*bollj*	*bollíto.*
consent,	*consentire*	*consénto*	*consentj*	*consentíto.*
convert,	*convertire*	*convérto*	*convertj*	*convertíto.*
cover,	*coprire*	*copro*	*coprj*	*copérto.*
sow,	*cucire*	*cúcio*	*cucj*	*cucito.*
sleep,	*dormire*	*dórmo*	*dormj*	*dormíto.*
fly,	*fuggire*	*fúggo*	*fuggj*	*fuggíto.*
lie,	*mentire*	*ménto*	*mentj*	*mentíto.*
die,	*morire*	*móro*	*morj*	*mórto.*
depart,	*partire*	*párto*	*partj*	*partíto.*
repent,	*pentirsi*	*mi pénto*	*mi péntj*	*pentitosi.*
ascend,	*salire*	*sálgo*	*salj*	*salíto.*

To

	Infin.		Pres.	Pr. def.	Part.
To	follow,	*seguire*	*séguo*	*seguj*	*seguito.*
	serve,	*servire*	*sérvo*	*servj*	*servito.*
	suffer,	*soffrire*	*sóffro*	*soffrj*	*sofferto.*
	go out,	*sortire*	*sórto*	*sortj*	*sortito.*
	dress,	*vestire*	*vésto*	*vestj*	*vestito.*
	go out,	*uscire*	*ésco*	*uscj*	*uscito.*
	hear,	*udire*	*ódo*	*udj*	*udito.*

All the other verbs in *ire* are irregular in the present tense, which they make in *isco;* as you will see in the chapter of irregulars in *ire:* example.

diger-ire diger-isco diger-j diger-ito, &c.
langu-ire langu-isco langu-j langu-ito, &c.

N. B. When once you know how to conjugate these five verbs, *avére, éssere, amáre, crédere, sentire,* you may be said to be master of almost all the rest, the termination of the tenses and persons being the same, especially in the regular verbs: but in order to be perfect in your conjugations, it is not sufficient to know those verbs in the order of the tenses; that is, beginning with the present indicative, and proceeding to the preterimperfect, in the manner as children do; but it is necessary to know each tense of the indicative, and optative, &c. by heart. Your teachers will instruct you upon this head; but if they should neglect to do it, or if you learn Italian without a master, your way must be to conjugate two or three of those verbs, or all five, at the same time. This will enable you to learn them with greater ease, to retain them better in your memory and to express yourself more readily. In order to conjugate the two auxiliary verbs together, you may say, for instance,

Ho un cavallo, e ne sono contento.

I have a horse, and am satisfied with it.

And thus you may exercise yourself through every tense and person of the whole conjugation.

With regard to the other three, you will receive a great benefit, if you conjugate them by other similar verbs. For instance, I buy my goods, sell them cheap, and serve my friends faithfully; *cómpro le mie mercánzie, le véndo a buón mércato,* or *prézzo, e sérvo con*

Digitized by Google

fidelità i miei amici. The verb *compráre* is conjugated like *amáre, véndere,* like *crédere, servire* like *sentire.* If you enter upon this practice, you will find that in a very little time you will be able to speak and write with great ease; for in the Italian language, they write as they speak, and speak as they write.

Of the IRREGULAR VERBS in are.

THERE are in each conjugation some verbs which do not conform to the common rule, and on that account are called irregulars.

There are but four verbs of the first conjugation, which in some of the tenses depart from the rule of the verb *amáre,* viz.

Andáre, dáre, fáre, stáre.

The verb *fáre* is, properly speaking, an irregular of the second conjugation, since it is only the Latin verb *facere* syncopated or abridged. Yet I place it here in compliance with the method of other grammarians.

Observe that these verbs are irregular; some in the present, some in the preterdefinite, and others in the future tense.

*** Remember also that when a verb is irregular in the present of the indicative, it retains its irregularity in the imperative and present of the subjunctive.

†‡† Observe farther that, the first and second person plural of the present tense are always regular.

Of the Verb andáre.

THE Verb *andáre* is irregular no where but in the present tense.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

I go,	*vádo* or *vo.*
Thou goest,	*vái.*
He goes,	*va.*

* *In the subsequent pages, the tenses that have a star are the only irregular ones; the others are regular.*

We

Digitized by Google

We go,	*andiámo.*
You go,	*andáte.*
They go,	*vánno.*

PRETERIMPERFECT.

I did go, thou didst go, he did go; we did go, you did go, they did go.

Andávo, andávi, andáva; andavámo, andaváte, andávano.

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

I went, thou wentest, he went: we went, you went, they went.

Andái, andásti, andò; andámmo, andáste, andárono.

PRETERPERFECT.

I have gone,	*sóno andáto.*
Thou hast gone,	*séi andáto.*
He has gone,	*è andáto.*
We have gone,	*siámo andáti.*
You have gone,	*siéte andáti.*
They have gone,	*sóno andáti.*

If we are to speak in the feminine, we should say, *sóno andáta, séi andáta, è andáta, siámo andáte, siéte andáte, sóno andáte.*

I was gone, thou wast gone, he was gone; we were gone, you were gone, they were gone,

PRETERPLUPERFECT.

I had gone, thou hadst gone, he had gone; we had gone, you had gone, they had gone.

Ero andáto, éri andáto, éra andáto; erámo andáti, eráte andáti, érano andáti.

FUTURE.

I shall *or* will go, thou shalt go, he shall go; we shall go, you shall go, they shall go.

* *Andrò, andrái, andrà; andrémo, andréte, andránno.*

IMPERATIVE.

Go thou, let him go; let us go, go ye, let them go.

* *Và, váda, andiámo, andáte, vádano* or *vádino*

Digitized by Google

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

* That I may go,	*ch' io váda*, or *vádi.*
Thou may'st go,	*che tu váda* or *vádi.*
He may go,	*ch' égli váda*, or *vádi.*
We may go,	*che andiámo.*
You may go,	*che andiáte.*
They may go,	*che vádino*, or *vádano.*

PRETERPERFECT.

That I might *or* could go, thou mightest go, he might go; we might go, you might go, they might go.

Che andássi, andássi, andásse; andássimo, andáste, andássero.

SECOND PRETERIMPERFECT.

I shall go, thou shouldest go, he should go; we should go, you should go, they should go.

* *Andréi, andrésti, andrébbe, andrémmo, andréste, andrébbero.*

Preterp. That I have gone, *che sía andáto.*

Preterpl. If I had gone, *se fóssi andáto.*

Future. When I shall be gone, *quándo sarò andáto.*

INFINITIVE.

To go, *andáre.* Participle, gone, *andáto.* Gerund, in going, *andándo.*

*** Note, that the preposition, *a*, or *ad*, must be put after the verb *andáre*, and all the other verbs of motion, when they precede an infinitive; example,

Let us go see, *andiámo a vedére.*

Go to supper, *andáte a cenáre.*

You shall go, and expect me, *andréte ad aspettármi.*

Let us send to tell, *mandiámo a dire.*

The French are frequently mistaken in this respect, because they are accustomed to put the infinitive, without a preposition after verbs of motion.

Of

Digitized by Google

Of the Verb, dáre.

DARE is irregular only in the present and preterperfect definite.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

* I give, thou givest, he gives; we give, you give, they give: *do, dái, da; diámo, dáte, dánno.*

Preterimper. I did give, thou didst give, he did give; we did give, you did give, they did give: *dávo, dávi, dáva; davámo, davàte, dávano.*

PRETERPERFECT DEFINITE.

* I gave,	*diédi,*	or *dètti.*
Thou gavest,	*désti,*	
He gave,	*diède,*	or *dètte, diè.*
We gave,	*démmo,*	
You gave,	*déste,*	
They gave,	*diédero,*	or *dèttero.*

The poets use *dier, diéron* and *diérono,* instead of *diédero,*

Perfect comp.	I have given,	*ho dáto.*
Preterplup.	I had given,	*avévo dáto.*
* Future.	I shall give,	*darò.*

IMPERATIVE.

* Give thou, let him give; let us give, give you, let them give: *da, dia: diámo, dáte, diano.*

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

* Present. That I may give, &c. *che dia, che dia, che dia; che diámo, che diáte, che diano,* or *dieno.*

* Preterimp. That I might give, that thou mightest give, that he might give, &c. *che déssi, déssi, désse; déssimo, déste, déssero.*

* Second Imperf. I should give, &c. *darèi, darésti, darèbbe, darémmo, darèste, darèbbero.*

INFI-

Digitized by Google

INFINITIVE.

	To give,	*dáre.*
Gerund,	in giving,	*dándo.*
Participle,	given,	*dáto.*

Of the Verb fáre.

FA'RE, formerly *facere*, has its irregularity in the present, and the preterperfect definite; and requires the *t* to be doubled in the participle.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

* I do, thou dost, he does; we do, you do, they do; *fò, fài, fà; facciámo, fáte, fánno.*

Preterimp. I did, &c. *facévo, facévi, facéva,* &c.

Preter-def. I did, thou didst, he did; we did, * you did, they did: *féci, facésti, fèce; facémmo, facéste, fécero.*

Preterp. I have done, *ho fátto.*

Peterplup. I had done, *avévo fátto.*

* Future. I shall do, &c. *farò, farài, farà; farémo, faréte, faránno.*

IMPERATIVE.

* Do thou, let him do; let us do, do you, let them do: *fa, fáccia; facciámo, fáte, fácciano.*

OPTATIVE.

PRESENT.

* That I may do, thou may'st do, he may do; we may do, you may do, they may do: *che fáccia, che fáccia, che fáccia; che facciámo, che facciáte, che fácciano.*

Preterimp. That I might do, thou mightest do, he might do; we might do, you might do, they might * do; *che facéssi, facéssi, facésse; facéssimo, facéste, facéssero.*

* Second

Digitized by Google

* Second imp. I should do, thou shouldst do, he should do; we should do, you should do, they should do: *farèi, farésti, farébbe; farémmo, faréste, farébbero.*

INFINITIVE.

* To do, *fáre.* Gerund, in doing, *facéndo.* Participle, done, *fátto.*

Of the Verb stáre.

STA'RE signifies *to be, to dwell:* it is irregular in the present and preterperfect definite.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

* I stand, *or* I am, *sto;* thou standest, *stái:* he stands, *sta; stiámo, státe, stánno.*

Imperf. I did stand, &c. *stávo.*

* Preter-def. I stood, thou stoodest, he stood, &c. *stétti, stésti, stétte; stémmo, stéste, stéttero.*

Preterpr. I have stood, &c. *sóno státo.*

Preterpl. I have stood, &c. *éro státo.*

* Future. I shall *or* will stand, &c. *staró, starái, stará, staréno, staréte, staránno.*

IMPERATIVE.

* Stand thou, *sta;* let him stand, *stia;* let us stand, *stiámo;* stand you, *státe;* let them stand, *stiáno,* or *stáno.*

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

* That I may stand, thou may'st stand, he may stand, &c. *ch'io stia, che tu stia, ch'égli stia; che nói stiámo, che vói stiáte, ch'églino stiano,* or *stiino.*

* Imperfect. That I might *or* could stand, *che stéssi;* thou mightest stand, *che stéssi;* he might stand, *che stéste;* we might stand, *che stéssimo;* you might stand, *che stésse;* they might stand, *che stéssero.*

* Second

Digitized by Google

* Second preterimp. I should stand, thou shouldest stand, he should stand, &c. *staréi, starésti; staríbbe; staríbbero.*

INFINITIVE.

To stand, *stáre.* Gerund, standing, *stándo.* Participle, stood *or* been, *státo.*

Observations on the four IRREGULAR VERBS.

ANDA'RE, DA'RE, FA'RE, STA'RE.

THESE four verbs form the second person of the present tense in *ai*; as, *vái, dái, fái, stái;* and the third person plural in *anno,* and not in *ano,* like the regulars: example, *vánno, dánno, fánno, stánno;* the regular verbs make it in *áno;* as *ámano, cántano, párlano,* &c.

The future indicative does not terminate in *erò,* but in *aro;* therefore we must say, *farò, darò, staró;* except the verb *andáre,* which makes *andrò.* Observe, nevertheless, that the verbs *stáre,* and *dáre,* become regular, when they are compounded; as, *accostáre, sovrastáre, secondáre, commandáre.* We say, in the second person of the present tense, *accósti, sovrásti, secóndi, comándi,* and not *accostái, sovrastái, secondái, commandái,* this being the first person singular of the preterperfect definite of those verbs. In a word, they follow the rule of the regular verbs through all the tenses. The same cannot be said of the verb *fáre,* which continues its irregularity, though compounded: therefore we must say, *disfo, disfacciámo, disféci, disfacésti,* &c.

The regular verbs in *are* make their subjunctive in *i;* as, *ámi, párli, cánti, sálti.* The four irregulars form theirs in *a;* as, *váda, dia, fáccia, stía.*

Dáre and *stáre* make the preterimperfect subjunctive *déssi* and *téssi,* and not *dássi,* and *stássi.*

In the second preterimperfect they make *andréi, daréi, faréi, staréi,*

Here you see, that none but the verb *andáre,* conforms to the regular verbs with regard to the *c;* thus we say, *andcréi,*

Digitized by Google

anderéi, and not *andaréi*, in the same manner as we say *amerái*, and not *amaréi*.

Note, the verb *dáre* is conjugated like the verb *stáre*, only by changing the *st* into *d*; *do*, *sto*, *dáva*, *stáva*, &c.

Of the IRREGULAR VERBS *in* ere.

THERE are two sorts of verbs in *ere*, one of which has the penultima, or the last syllable but one, long; as,

Cadére, *dovére*, *sapére*, *volére*.

The other the penultima short; as,

Crédere, *léggere*, *scrívere*, *pérdere*.

There are no more than two-and-twenty verbs that have the infinitive in *ere* long, viz.

	Infinitive.	Pres.	Pret. def.	Part.
114	*Cadére*, To fall,	*cádo*	*cáddi*	*cadúto.*
110	*calére* - concern,	a verb impersonal:		
	capére - contain,	a verb little used.		
114	*dovére* - owe,	*dépo*	*dovéi*	*dovúto.*
115	*dolére* - grieve,	*dóglio*	*dólsi*	*dolúto.*
116	*giacére* - lie down,	*giáccio*	*giácqui*	*giacciúto.*
*	*godére* - enjoy,	*gódo*	*godéi*	*godúto.*
	avére - have,	*ho*	*ébbi*	*avúto.*
118	*parére* - appear,	*pájo*	*párvi*	*párso.*
116	*piacére* - please,	*piáccio*	*piácqui*	*piacciúto.*
119	*persuadére* persuade,	*persuádo*	*persuási*	*persuáso.*
112	*potére* - be able,	*pósso*	*potéi*	*potúto.*
119	*rimanére* remain,	*rimángo*	*rimási*	*rimáso.*
110	*sapére* - know,	*so*	*séppi*	*sapúto.*
*	*sedére* - sit,	*sédo*	*sedéi*	*sedúto.*
120	*solére* - be accustomed,	*sóglio*	*soléi*	*solíto.*
				very little used.
119	*tacére* - be silent,	*táccio*	*tácqui*	*tacciúto.*
120	*ténere* - hold,	*téngo*	*ténni*	*tenúto.*
*	*temére*, - fear,	*témo*	*temái*	*temúto.*
121	*valére* be worth,	*váglio*	*válsi*	*váluto.*
	vedére see,	*védo*	*vídi*	*vedúto.*
112	*volére* - be willing,	*vóglio*	*volli*	*valúto.*

* The three verbs marked with a star are regular; the figures in the margin refer to the pages where the other verbs are found conjugated at full length.

The

The compounds of these verbs make *ere* also long; as *ricadére, riavére,* &c.

Of those two-and-twenty verbs there are but three regular, viz. *temére, godére,* and *sedére;* and they are conjugated like *credére.*

Of the other verbs that make their infinitive in *ere* long, some are irregular in the present, others in the preter-definite and future, and some in the participle.

The conjugation of the verb *avére* has been given already; *calére* and *capére* are not in use.

Conjugation of the IRREGULAR VERBS *in* ere, *long.*

I Begin with *sapére, potére,* and *valére,* because they often occur in discourse.

SAPERE, *to know.*

* Present. *So, sái, sá; sappiámo, sapéte, sánno:* I know, thou knowest, he knows; we know, you know, they know.

Imper. *Sapévo, sapévi, sapéva; sapevámo, sapevàte, sapévano:* I did know, thou didst know, he did know; we did know, you did know, they did know,

* Preter-def. *Séppi, sapésti, séppe; sapémmo, sapéste, séppero:* I knew, he knew; we knew, they knew.

Preterperfect. *Ho sapúto, hai, sapúto, ha sapúto,* &c.

* Future. *Saprò, saprái, saprà; saprémo, sapréte, sapránno:* I shall know, thou shalt know, he shall know; we shall know, you shall know, they shall know.

IMPERATIVE.

* *Sáppi, sáppia; sappiámo, sappiáte, sáppiano:* know thou, let him know; let us know, know you, let them know.

OPTA-

Digitized by Google

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

* *Che sáppia, sáppia, sáppia; sappiámo, sáppiáte, sáppiano:* that I may know, thou may'st know, he may know, we may know, you may know, they may know.

* Imperfect. *Che sapéssi, sapéssi, sapésse; sapéssimo, sapéste, sapéssero:* that I might know, thou mighest know, they might know.

* Second Imp. *Saprèi, saprésti, saprébbe; sapprémmo, sapréste, sapprébbero:* I should know, thou shouldst know, he should know; we should know, you should know, they should know.

INFINITIVE.

Sapére, to know. Gerund, *sapéndo,* knowing. Participle, *sapúto,* known.

POTE'RE, *to be able.*

INDICATIVE.

* Present. *Pósso, puói, può; possiámo, potéte, péssono:* I can *or* am able, thou canst, he can; we can, you can, they can.

Imperf. *Potévo, potévi,* &c. I could, &c.

Pret. def. *Potéi, potésti, potè; potémmo, potéste, potérono;* or *potétti, potésti, potétte; potémmo, potéste, potéttero:* I could, thou couldst, he could; we could, you could, they could.

Preterp. *Ho potúto,* I have been able.

* Future. *Potrò,* I shall be able.

There is no imperative.

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

* *Che péssa, péssa, péssa; possiámo, possiáte, péssano:* that I may be able, thou mayest be able, he may be able; we may be able, you may be able, they may be able.

Imp. *Che potéssi, potéssi, potésse; potéssimo, potéste, potéssero:* that I might be able, thou mightest be able, he

Digitized by Google

he might be able; we might be able, you might be able, they might be able.

* Second Imp. *Potréi, potrésti, potrébbe,* &c.

N. B. In conjugating the verb *potére,* to be able, we do not say in the future *potero* and in the second preterimperfect *potérei;* because *poterò* and *potérei* are the future and second preterimperfect of the verb *potáre,* to prune.

INFINITIVE.

Potére. Gerund, *poténdo.* Participle, *potúto.*

VOLE'RE, *to be willing.*

* Present. *Vóglio, vuói, vuóle; vogliámo, voléte, vógliono:* I will *or* am willing, thou art willing, he is willing; we are willing, you are willing, they are willing.

Imperf. *Volévo, volévi, voléva; volevámo, voleváte, volévano:* I was willing, thou wast willing, &c.

*†‡† Preter-def. *Vólli, volésti, vólle; volémno, voléste, vóllero:* I was willing, thou wast willing, &c.

Preterperf. *Ho volúto,* I have been willing, &c.

* Future. *Vorró, vorrái, vorrà; vorrémo, vorréte, vorránno:* I shall be willing, thou shalt be willing, he shall be willing, we shall be willing, &c.

It has no imperative.

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

* *Che vóglia, vóglia, vóglia; vogliámo, vogliáte, vógliano;* that I may be willing, thou may'st be willing, he may be willing; we may be willing, you may be willing, they may be willing.

Imperf. *Voléssi, voléssi, volésse; voléssimo, voléste, volléssero:* that I were willing, thou were willing, he were willing; we were willing, you were willing, they were willing.

* Second Imp. *Vorréi, vorresti, vorrébbi; vorrémmo, vorréste, vorrébbero:* I should *or* would be willing, thou shouldest *or* wouldest be willing, &c.

INFI-

Digitized by Google

INFINITIVE.

Volére. Gerund. *Voléndo.* Participle, *volúto.*

Remarks on the Verbs terminated in ere *long.*

VOLE'RE.

*** 1. Remember that *volére* makes in the preterdefinite *vólli, volésti, vólle; volémmo, voléste, vóllero;* and not *vólsi, voléste, vólse; volémmo, voléste, vólsero;* because *vólsi, vólse, vólsero,* comes from the verb *vólgere,* to turn. Yet we find *vólsi, vólse,* and *vólsero,* in a great many authors, which is only to be attributed to a poetical licence.

*** Take notice, that it is sometimes an elegance to put the verb *volére,* instead of *dovére.* For instance, *ma ciò non si vuól con áltri ragionáre,* for *non si dóve,* ought not.

2. The verbs terminated in the infinitive *lere;* as *volére, dolére, solére, valére,* and their compounds, have a *g* before the letter *l* in the first person singular, in the first and third plural, and in all the persons of the present subjunctive: in the present: as,

Vóglio, vuói, vuóle; vogliámo, voléte, vógliono.
Dóglio, duóli, duóle; dogliámo, doléte, dógliono.
Sóglio, suóli, suóle; sogliámo, soléte, sógliono.
Váglio, váli, vále; vagliámo, valéte, vágliono.

3. The verbs terminated in the infinitive in *nére,* and *nire;* as, *rimanére, tenére, venire,* have also a *g* in the first person singular, and in the third plural; but not in the first person plural: as,

Téngo, tiéni, tiéne; teniámo, tenéte, téngono.
Rimángo, riméni, riméne; rimaniámo, rimanéte, rimángono.
Véngo, viéni, viéne; veniámo, venite, véngono.

They have also a *g* in the first, second, and third person of the present subjunctive in the singular, and in the third of the plural.

4. All the verbs ending in *lére, nére, nire,* require two *r*'s in the future, and in the second imperfect tense.

Example,

Digitized by Google

Example,	*Volére,*	*vóglio,*	*vorrò,*	*vorréi.*
	Tenére,	*téngo,*	*terrò,*	*terréi.*
	Venire,	*véngo,*	*verrò,*	*verréi.*
And not	*Volére,*	*teneró,*	*veniró,*	&c.

*** Except *finire, punire, svéllere,* to root up, that follow the common rule, and make *finirò, puniró, svellerò ;* and in the present, *finisco, punisco, svéllo.*

CADE'RE, to fall.

Câdo, cádi, cáde; cadiámo, cadéte, cádono: I fall, thou fallest, he falls; we fall, you fall, they fall.

Imperf. *Cadévo, cadévi, cadéva; cadevámo, cadeváte, cadévano;* I did fall, &c.

* Preter-def. *Cáddi, cadésti, cáddę, cadémmo, cadéste, cáddero:* I fell, thou didst fall, he fell; we fell, you fell, they fell.

Preterf. *Sóno cadúto, séi caduto, è cadúto; siámo cadúti; siéte caduti, sóno, cadúti;* I have *or* am fallen, thou hast *or* art fallen, &c.

Preterpl. *Ero cadúto, éri cadúto, éra cadúto: eravámo, cadúti; eravéte caduti, érano cadúti:* I had *or* I was fallen, thou hadst *or* was fallen, &c.

Future. *Caderò, caderái, caderà; caderémo, caderete, caderánno:* I shall fall, thou shalt fall, he shall fall, &c.

Imperative. *Cádi,* fall thou; *cáda,* let him fall, *cadiámo,* let us fall: *cadéte,* fall you; *cádano,* let them fall.

Optative. *Che cáda, cáda, cáda; cadiámo, cadiáte, cádano:* that I may fall, thou mayest fall, &c.

Imperf. *Cadéssi, cadéssi, cadésse; cadéssimo, cadéste, cadéssero:* that I might fall, thou mightest fall, &c.

Second Imperf. *Caderéi, caderésti,* I should fall.

Infinitive, *cadére.* Gerund, *cadéndo.* Participle, *cadúto.*

DOVE'RE, to *owe:*

Dovére is conjugated through all its tenses like *crédere.* It is irregular only in the present, by putting an *e* for an *o:* * *dévo, dévi, déve; dobbiámo, dovéte, dévono,* and *débbono:* I owe, thou owest, he owes; we owe, you owe, they owe.

Imperf.

Digitized by Google

Imperf. *Dovévo, dovévi,* &c. I did owe, &c.

Preter-def. *Dovéi* or *dovétti, dovésti, dovè,* or *dovétte; dovémmo, dovéste, dovérono* or *dovéttero;* I owe, &c.

Preterpluperf. *Ho dovúto, hái dovúto, ha dovúto;* I have owed, &c.

* Future. *Dovrò, dovrái, dovrà;* I shall *or* will owe, &c.

* Imperative. *Dévi, débba, dobbiámo, dobbiáte, débbano;* owe thou, let him owe; let us owe, owe you, let them owe.

* Optative and Subjunctive. *Che débba, débba, débba; dobbiámo, dobbiáte, débbano;* that I may owe, thou mayest owe, he may owe, &c.

Imperf. *Dovéssi,* that I may owe, &c.

* Second Imp. *Dovréi, dovrésti, dovrébbe; dovrémmo, dovréste. dovrébbero:* I should owe, &c.

Infinitive, *dovére.* Gerund, *dovéndo.* Part, *dovúto.*

DOLE'RE *or* DOLE'RSI, *to grieve,* or *complain.*

Dólere is a reciprocal verb, conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, *mi, ti, si,* in the singular number, and with *ci, vi, si,* in the plural.

All verbs that have the particle *si* after the infinitive, must be conjugated like *dolére;* as, *pentírsi,* to repent; *ricordársi,* to remember, &c.

INDICATIVE.

* I grieve,	*io mi dólgo,* or *dóglio.*
Thou grievest,	*tu ti duóli.*
He grieves,	*egli si duóle.*
We grieve,	*noi ci dogliámo.*
You grieve,	*voi vi doléte.*
They grieve,	*églino si dólgono,* or *dógliono.*

Imper. *Mi dolévo, ti dolévi, si doléva; ci dolevámo, vi dolévate, si dolévano;* I did grieve.

PRETER DEFINITE.

* I grieved,	*mi dólsi.*
Thou grievedst,	*ti dolésti.*
He grieved,	*ci dólse.*
We grieved,	*ci dolémmo.*

You

Digitized by Google

You grieved, *vi doléste.*
They grieved, *si dólsero.*

Preterperf. *Mi sóno dolúto,* I have grieved, &c.
Preterpluperf. *Mi éro dolúto,* I have grieved, &c.
* Future. *Mi dorrò, ti dorrái, si dorrà; ci dorrémo, vi dorréte, si dorránnd:* I shall grieve, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

* *Duóliti,* grieve thou, *dólgasi,* let him grieve, or *dogliámoci, dolétevi, dólgansi,* let us grieve, &c.

OPTATIVE AND SUBJUNCTIVE.

* Present. *Che mi dólga, ti dólga, si dólga,* or *dóglia, ci dogliámo, vi dogliáte, si dólgano:* that I may grieve, thou may'st grieve, &c.
Imperf. *Che mi doléssi,* that I might grieve, &c.
* Second Imperf. *Mi dorréi,* I should grieve, &c.

INFINITIVE.

Dolérsi, to grieve. Gerund, *doléndosi,* grieving. Participle, *dolútosi,* grieved.

*** Remember that *dolére* signifies also to be sick; and then it is a verb impersonal, that has but the third person singular: as,

I have the headach, *mi duóle la tésta.*
Thou hast the headach, *ti duóle la tésta.*
He has the headach, *gli duóle la tésta.*
We have the headach, *ci duóle la tésta.*
You have the headach, *vi duóle la tésta.*
They have the headach, *duóle loro la tésta.*

GIACE'RE, PIACE'RE, TACE'RE, *to lie down, to please, to hold one's tongue.*

These three verbs are conjugated alike.

*** In the tenses of these three verbs, where there are two vowels after the *c*, the *c* must be doubled; but if there is only one, then there must be but a single *c*.

* Indicative.—Present tense. *Giáccio, giáci, giáce; giacciámo, giacéte, giácciono;* I lie down, &c.

Imper.

Digitized by Google

Imperf. *Giácevo*, I did lie down, &c.

* Preter def. *Giácqui, giacésti, giácque; giacémmo, giacéste, giácquero*: I lay down, &c.

Preterperf. We do not say, *sóno státo giaciúto*, I have laid down; but *sóno státo a giacére*, &c.

Future. *Giacerò*, I shall lie down, &c.

* Imperative. *Giáci, giáccia; giacciámo, giacéte, giácciano*: lie thou down, let him lie down, &c.

* Optative and subjunctive. *Che giáccia, giáccia, giáccia; giacciámo, giacciáte, giácciano*: that I may lie down, &c.

Imperf. *Che giacéssi*, that I might lie down.

Second Imperf. *Giaceréi*, I should lie down.

Infinitive, *giacére*. Gerund. *giacéndo*. Participle, * *giaciúto*, or rather, *státo a giacére*.

---

* PIACE'RE, *Piáccio, piáci, piáce; piacciámo, piacéte, piácciono*: I please, thou pleaseth, he pleases; we please, you please, they please.

Imp. *Piacévo, vi, va; vámo, váte, vano*: I did please, &c.

* Preter-def. *Piácqui, piacésti, piácque; piacémmo, piacéste, piácquero*: I pleased, thou pleasedst, he pleased; we pleased, you pleased, they pleased.

Preterperf. *Ho piacciúto*, &c. I have pleased.

Future. *Piacerò*, &c. I shall please.

Imp. *Piáci, piáccia, piacciámo, piacéte, piácciano*; please thou, &c.

* Subjunctive. *Che piáccia, a, a; iámo, iáte, iano*; that I might please.

Imp. *Che piacéssi*, that I may please, &c.

Second Imperf. *Piacérei*, I should please.

Infinitive, *piacére*. Gerund, *piacéndo*. Participle, *piacciúto*.

---

* TACE'RE. *Táccio, táci, táce; tacciámo, tacéte, tácciono*. I hold my tongue, thou holdest thy tongue, he holds his tongue; we hold our tongues, &c.

Imp. *Tacévo, vi, va; vámo, váte, vano*: I did hold my tongue, thou didst, &c.

* Preter-def. *Tácqui, tacésti, tácque; tacémmo*, &c. I held my tongue, &c.

Preterperf. *Ho tacciúto*, I have held my tongue.

Digitized by Google

Future. *Tacerò, tacerái, tacerà; tacerémo, taceréte, taceránno:* I shall hold my tongue, &c.

Imperative. *Táci, táccia; tacciámo, tacéte, tácciano;* hold thy tongue, let him hold his tongue, &c.

* Subjunctive. *Che táccia, a, a; tacciámo, tacciáte, tácciano.*

Imperf. *Che tácessi, tacéssi, tacésse;* that I might hold my tongue, &c.

Second imp. *Taceréi, tacerésti, tacerébbe:* I should hold my tongue, &c.

Infinitive, *tacére,* to hold one's tongue. Gerund. *tacéndo,* holding one's tongue, &c. Participle, * *tacciúto.*

PARE'RE, *to seem.*

* Indicative, present. *Páio, pári, páre; paiámo, paréte, páiono:* I seem, *or* appear, thou seemest, he seems; we seem, &c.

Imp. *Parévo,* I did seem, &c.

* Preter-def. *Párvi, parésti, párve; parémmo, paréste, párvero;* I seemed, &c.

* Future. *Parrò, parrài, parrà;* I shall seem, &c.

* Imperfect. *Pári, páia; paiámo, paréte, páiano:* seem thou, let him seem; let us seem, seem you, let them seem.

**Remember what has been already remarked, that when a verb has any irregularity in the present of the indicative, it has the same in the present of the imperative and subjunctive.

* Optative and subjunctive. *Che páia, páia, páia; paiámo,* or *pariámo, paiáte, páiano:* that I may seem, thou may'st seem, he may seem.

Imp. *Che paréssi, paréssi, sse; ssimo, ste, ssero:* that I might seem, &c.

Second Imp. *Parréi,* I should seem, &c.

Infinitive, *parére,* to seem. Gerund, *paréndo,* seeming. * Participle, *párso,* seemed.

Parére, is also an impersonal reciprocal verb, that has only the third person singular, when it signifies *it seems;* as, it seems to me, *mi páre,* or *mi par.*

It seems { to thee, *ti par.* / to him, *or* her, *gli par,* or *le par.* / to us, *ci par.* / to you, *vi par.* / to them, *páre loro.*

In

Digitized by Google

In like manner through all the tenses, it did seem to me, *mi paréva*; it seemed to me, *mi párve*.

†† Remember that no more than four verbs in *ere* long are irregular in the participle; namely, *parére, párso; persuadére, persuáso: rimanére, riméso; solére, solito:* all the other verbs make it in *uto*.

PERSUADE'RE, *to persuade.*

Indicative, present. *Persuádo, persuádi, persuáde, persuadiámo, persuadéte, persuádono:* I persuade, &c.

Imperf. *Persuadévo, vi, va; vámo,* &c. I did persuade, &c.

* Preter-def. *Persuási, persuadésti, persuáse; persuadémmo, persuadéste, persuásero:* I persuaded, &c.

Future. *Persuaderò, rái, rà; rémo, réte, ránno.*

Imperative. *Persuádi, a; iámo, éte, ano:* persuade thou, &c.

Optative, *Che persuáda, a, a; iámo, iáte, àno:* that I may persuade, &c.

Imperf. *Che persuadéssi,* that I might persuade.

Second imp. *Persuaderéi,* I should persuade.

Infinitive. *Persuadére,* to persuade. Gerund, *persuadéndo,* persuading. *Participle, *persuáso,* persuaded.

RIMANE'RE, *to remain.*

** Remember the rules of the verbs in *lére, nére, nire.*

* Indicative, present. *Rimángo, riméni, riméne: rimaniámo, rimanéte, rimángono:* I remain, thou remainest, &c.

Imperf. *Rimanévo,* I did remain.

* Preter-def. *Riméi, rimanésti, rimése; rimanémmo, rimanéste, riméro:* I remained, &c.

Preterperf. *Ho riméso,* or *sóno riméso,* I have remained.

* Future. *Rimarrò, rimarrái, rimarrà,* I shall remain, &c.

* Imperative. *Riméni, rimánga; rimaniámo, rimanéte, rimángano:* remain thou, let him remain.

* Optative. *Che rimánga, rimánga, rimánga; rimaniámo, rimaniáte, rimángano:* that I may remain.

Imperf. *Che rimanéssi,* that I might remain.

* Second imp. *Rimarréi, rimarrésti,* I should remain.

Infinitive. *rimanére,* to remain. Gerund, *rimanéndo,* remaining. Participle, * *riméso,* remained.

Digitized by Google

SOLE'RE, *to be wont.*

* Indicative, present. *Sóglio, suóli, suóle; sogliámo, soléte, sógliono,* I am wont, &c.

Or *sóno solito,* I am wont; *séi sólito,* thou art wont; *è solito,* he is wont; *siámo sóliti,* we are wont; *siéte soliti,* you are wont; *sóno soliti,* they are wont.

And in like manner through all the tenses; as, *éro, solito,* I was wont; *non éro solito,* I was not wont, &c.

Imp. *Solévo,* &c. I was accustomed, &c.

Preterperf. def. *Fúi solito,* &c.

* Imperative. *Suóli, sóglia; sogliámo, soléte, sógliano,* be thou wont, let him be wont, &c.

*. Optative and subjunctive. *Che sóglia, sóglia, sóglia; sogliámo, sogliáte, sógliano:* that I may be wont, &c.

Che soléssi, that I might be wont, &c.

Second preterimperf. *Suréi solito,* &c.

Infinitive, *solére,* to be wont. Gerund, *soléndo,* wonted. Participle, *solito,* wont. Another Gerund, *esséndo solito,* being wont.

TENE'RE, *to hold.*

* Indicative, present. *Téngo, tiéni, tiéne; teniámo, tenéte, téngono:* I hold, thou holdest, he holds; we hold, you hold, they hold.

Imp. *Tenévo.* I did hold.

* Preter-def. *Ténni, tenésti, ténne; tenémmo, teneste, tennero:* I held, thou heldst, he held: we held, you held, they held.

Preterperf. *Ho tenúto,* &c.

* Future. *Terrò, terrái, terrà; terrémo, terréte, terránno:* I shall hold, thou shalt hold, he shall hold, &c.

* Imperative. *Tiéni, ténga; teniámo, tenéte, téngano:* hold thou, &c.

* Optative and subjunctive. *Che ténga, ténga, ténga; teniámo, teniáte, téngano:* that I may hold, &c.

Imper. *Che tenéssi, tenéssi, tenésse; ssimo, ste, ssero:* I might hold, thou might'st hold, &c.

* Second imp. *Terréi, terrésti, terrébbe;* I should hold.

Infinitive, *tenére,* to hold. Gerund, *teléndo,* holding. Participle, *tenúto,* held.

VA-

Digitized by Google

VALE'RE, *to be worth.*

* Indicative, present. *Vàglio, váli, vále ; valiámo, valéte, vágliono :* I am worth, thou art worth, he is worth; we are worth, you are worth, they are worth.

Imperf. *Valévo, valévi, valéva,* &c. I was worth, thou wast worth, he was worth, &c.

*Preter-def. *Válsi, valésti, válse ; valémmo, valéste, válsero:* I was worth, thou wast worth, he was worth, &c.

Preterpluperf. *Ho valúto.*

* Future. *Varrò, varrái,* &c. I shall be worth, &c.

Imperative. *Váli, vàglia, vagliámo:* be thou worth, let him be worth; let us be worth, &c.

* Optative. *Che vàglia, vàglia, vàglia ; vagliámo, vagliáte, vàgliano:* that I may be worth, &c.

Imperf. *Che valéssi,* &c.

Second Imp. *Varréi,* &c.

Infinitive, *valére.* Gerund, *valéndo.* Participle, *valúto.*

VEDE'RE, *to see.*

Indicative, present, *védo, védi, véde ; vediámo, vedéte, védono:* I see, thou seest, he sees ; we see, you see, they see.

Imper. *Vedévo, vi, va ; vámo, váte, vánno :* I did see, &c.

* Preter-def. *Védi, vedésti, vide : vedémmo, vedéste, vídero :* I saw, thou sawest, he saw ; we saw, you saw, they saw.

Preterperf. *Ho veduto,* or *visto,* &c. I have seen, &c.

* Future. *Vedrò, rái, rà ; rémo, réte, ránno :* I shall see, thou shalt see, he shall see, &c.

Imperative. *Védi, véda, vediámo, vedéte, védano :* see you, let him see ; let us see, see you, let them see.

Optative. *Che véda, véda, véda ; vediámo, vediáte, védano ;* that I may see, that thou mayest see, that he may see, &c.

Imperfect. *Che vedéssi,* that I might see, &c.

* Second imperf. *Vedréi,* I should see, &c.

Digitized by Google

Infinitive, *vedére.* Gerund, *vedéndo.* Participle, *vedúto,* or * *vésto,* seen.

Of the Verbs in ere *short.*

OF all the verbs in *ere* short, there are none regular, except those that I have put just after the verb *crédere.*

All the rest, of which there is a great number, are irregular; some in the present tense, most of them in the preterperfect-definite, some in the future, and almost all in the participle.

A new and general rule to learn, in a short time, all the Irregular Verbs in ere *short.*

We are taught by an axiom in philosophy, that *frustrà fit per plurà, quod potest fieri per pauciora.* And it is in pursuance of this maxim, that I have reduced all the irregular verbs in *ere* short to one single rule; in order both to avoid the intricacy, and embarrassment of other grammars, and to smooth the way to the Italian language, which has hitherto been rendered difficult of access by unqualified teachers.

These five verbs, *conóscere, créscere, náscere, nuócere, rómpere;* to know, to grow, to be born, to hurt, to break, form the preterperfect definite, and the participle, as follows.

Preter-def.	Participle.
conóbbi	*conosciúto.*
crébbi	*cresciúto.*
nácqui	*náto.*
nócqui	*nocciúto.*
rúppi	*rótto.*

Generally speaking, all the other verbs ending in the infinitve in *ere* short, form the preterperfect-definite in *si,* and the participle in *so, to,* or *sto.*

†‡† Though this rule might suffice for all the preterperfect definite of verbs terminated in *ere* short; yet we may also observe, that the same verbs may be terminated after thirteen different manners, which will make however but one and the same rule.

*** You will see in the terminations, which are placed

Digitized by Google

placed in direct lines, that there is a star at the end of some of them, and there are others without that mark. The star at the end is to show that those verbs make the participle in *to;* the verbs that have no star make the participle in *sb*, or in *esso*.

Terminations of the Verbs in ere *short.*

THE verbs in *ere*, short, are terminated in the infinitive.

‡ 125 1. In *cere:* as, *vincere, tórcere, cuócere.* *
128 2. In *dere:* as, *árdere, chiúdere, rídere.* *
129 3. In *gere:* as, *piángere, spíngere, léggere.* *
130 4. In *gliere:* as, *cógliere, sciógliere, tógliere.* *
131 5. In *here:* as, *tráhere,* or *trárre,* &c. *
132 6. In *lere:* as, *svéllere.* *
7. In *mere:* as, *imprímere, opprímere.* Preterdef. *imprèssi, opprèssi.* Participle, *imprésso; opprésso.*
8. In *nere:* as, *pónere, ripónere.*
129 9. In *ndere:* as, *prèndere, réndere, rispóndere, nascóndere.* Participle, *préso, réso,* or *renditto, rispósto, nascóso,* or *nascósto.*
134 10. In *pere:* as, *rómpere,* makes in the perfect-definite *rúppi, rótto* in the participle.
11. *rere:* as, *córrere, concórrere.*
135 12. In *tere:* as, *méttere, mísi, mésso.*
136 13. In *vere:* as, *scrívere, vívere,*

*** Change all these terminations into *si*, and you will find the preterfect-definite of them all, in which consists the greatest irregularity; example, to find the preter-definite of *vincere, tórcere, árdere, prèndere, piángere, rispóndere,* do but change their terminations, *cere, dere, gere, ndere,* into *si*, and you will find, *vínsi, tórsi, ársi, prési, piánsi, rispósi.*

*** Observe, that the verbs written with two *gg*'s before the penultima, drop them, and double the *s* in the preterdefinite, and the *t* in the participle; example, *léggere, réggere,* &c. To form the preterper-

‡ The ciphers in the margin refer to the pages where the verbs of a similar termination are conjugated.

Digitized by Google

fect definite, we must change the termination *ggere* into *ssi*, and for the participle into *tto*, and we shall find *léssi*, *réssi*, *létto*, *rétto*, &c.

Take notice likewise, that the verbs terminating in *gliere*, always retain the *l*, and only lose *giere* in the preter-definite: the same rule serves for the participle: example, *cógliere*, *sciógliere*, *sciégliere*, *tógliere*, &c. take from those words *giere*, there remains *col*, *sciol*, *sciel*, *tól*; and by adding *si* to them in the preter-definite, and in the participle *to*, we shall find, *cólsi*, *sciólsi*, *sciélsi*, *tólsi*, *cólto*, *sciólto*, *sciélto*, *tólto*, &c.

*** To conjugate these words with ease, remember that there are always three irregular persons, and three regular ones in the preter-definite.

The three irregular persons are the first and third singular and the third plural, which are very easy to be formed, if we do but observe, that the first person is always terminated in *i*; *vínsi*, *ársi*, *piánsi*; change *i* into *e*, and it is the third singular, *vinse*, *árse*, *piánse*; and by adding *ro* to the latter, it becomes the third plural, *vínsero*, *árserо*, *piánsero*; and so of the rest. Example.

prési, *scrissi*,	*prése*, *scrisse*,	*présero*, *scrissero*,
résі, *léssi*.	*rése*, *lésse*,	*résero*, *léssero*.

The three regular persons are, the second singular, and the first and second plural. There is frequently more difficulty in finding out these than the irregular persons, because we confound one with the other. Now the true way to avoid being mistaken in this point, is to remember that the second person singular of the preter-definite in all verbs, as well regular as irregular, is formed from the infinitive, by changing *re* into *sti*; as *vincere*, *vincésti*, *árdere*, *ardésti*; *piángere*, *piangésti*; except the verb *éssere*.

The first person plural is also formed from the infinitive, by changing *re* into *mmo*; as, *amáre*, *amámmo*; *vedére*, *vedémmo*; *léggere*, *leggémmo*.

The second person plural of the preterperfect definite, is formed in all the verbs from the second of the singular, by changing its final *i* into *e*; as, *vincésti*, *vincéste*; *ardésti*, *ardéste*; *piangésti*, *piangéste*. Thus we shall

Digitized by Google

shall find, *vínsi, vincésti, vínse; vincémmo, vincéste, vínsero; árdsi, ardésti, árse; ardémmo, ardéste, ársero.*

Remember to peruse these observations carefully, as being very necessary for conjugating the irregular verbs.

*** We must also remember, that the verbs terminated in *kere* and *vere*, as, *trákere, scrívere*, double the letter *s* in the preterperfect definite, and the letter *t* in the participle: example, *trássi, scríssi, trátto, scrítto.*

The above rule would be sufficient for learning the irregularity of the verbs in *ere*, short: yet, for the greater conveniency of scholars, I have thought proper to explain these thirteen terminations more at large, in order to obviate all the difficulties that may occur.

Of the Verbs terminated in cere.

THE verbs in *cere* form the preter-definite, by changing *cere* into *si* and the participle into *to*: as,

CUÓCERE, to bake. Present, *cuóco, cuóci, cuóce; cuociámo, cuocéte, cuócono:* I bake, thou bakest, he bakes; we bake, you bake, they bake.

Imp. *Cuocévo, vi, va; vámo, váte, vano:* I did bake, thou didst bake, he did bake, &c.

*Preter def. *Cóssi, cuocésti, cósse; cuocémmo, cuocéste, cóssero:* I baked, thou didst bake, he baked, &c.

Preterp. *Ho cótto*, I have baked.

Preterp. *Avévo cótto*, I had baked.

Future. *Cuocerò, rái, rà; rémo, réte, ránno:* I shall bake, thou shalt bake, he shall bake, &c.

Imper. *Cuóci, cuóca: cuociámo, cuocéte, cuócano:* bake thou, let him bake, &c.

Opt. *che cuóca.* Imperf. *che cuocéssi.* Second Imp. *cuocerèi.* Infinitive, *cuócere.* Participle, **cótto.* Gerund, *cuocéndo.*

CONDU'CERE, or *condúrre*, to conduct. Present *condúco, conduci; conduce, conduciámo, conducéte, condúcono:* I conduct, thou conductest, he conducts; we conduct, &c.

Imperf. *Conducévo, vi, va*, &c. I did conduct.

* Preter-definite, *Condússi, conducésti, condússe; conducémmo,*

Digitized by Google

fect definite, we must change the [illegible] *didst*
ssi, and for the participle into *tto*, [illegible]
récsi, *létto*, *rétto*, &c. [illegible] *will*

Take notice likewise, that the [illegible]
gliere, always retain the *l*, and [illegible] &c.
preter-definite: the same rule [illegible] Se-
example, *cogliere*, *sciógliere*, *sci[illegible]* [illegible] *mitto*. Ge-
from these words *gicre*, there re[illegible]
and by adding *si* to them in t[illegible]
the participle *to*, we shall find, [illegible] *rilúce*;
colto, *sciolto*, *sciélto*, *tólto*, &c. [illegible] *shinest*, he
*** To conjugate these wor[illegible] *shine*, &c.
there are always three irregul[illegible] *shined*,
ones in the preter-definite.

The three irregular pers[illegible] *incero*:
singular and the third plu[illegible]
formed, if we do but obser[illegible] *imperfect*,
terminated in *i*; *vinsi*, [illegible] imperfect,
and it is the third singul[illegible] participle.
adding *ro* to the latter, [illegible]
scro, *árscro*, *piánsero*; [illegible]

prési, scrissi,	*prés*
résí, léssi.	*rése*

The three regular [illegible] *vin-*
and the first and s[illegible] he gains;
more difficulty in f[illegible] preter-definite,
persons, because we[illegible] *rasero*: I
the true way to av[illegible] ave gained.
remember that the [illegible] *nci, vinca,*
definite in all v[illegible]
formed from the [illegible] Imperfect, *che*
vincere, *vincésti*, [illegible] ticiple, * *vinto*.
except the verb [illegible]
The first p[illegible]
by changing [illegible] *erci, tórce; tor-*
vedémmo [illegible] *cstest*, he twists;
The [illegible] *wist*. * Preter-
[illegible] *orcéste, tórsero*.

[illegible] *let him twist,*

Optative.

Digitized by Google

Imperfect, *che torcéssi.* Second Participle, * *tórto.*

créscere, change *scere* into *bbi,* to form and make the participle in *sciúto ;* as, *conósce ; conosciámo, conoscéte, conós-* Imperfect, *conoscévo.* Preter-defi- *scésti, conóbbe ; conoscémmo, conoscéste,* &c. Imperative, *conósci, conósca,* &c. im know, &c.

conósca. Imperfect, *che conoscéssi.* Se- *conosceréi.* Participle, * *conosciúto.*

---

résci, crésce ; cresciámo, crescéte, créscono : I owest, he grows, we grow, you grow, they erfect, *crescévo,* I did grow. Preter-definite, *scésti, crébbe.* Future, *crescerò,* I shall grow. ive, *Crésci, crésca,* &c. grow thou, let him

ive, *che crésca.* Imperf. *che crescéssi.* Second im- *resceréi,* I should grow, &c. Participle, **cresciúto.*

NA'SCERE and *núocere* make the preterperfect definite *qui.*

NA'SCERE, to be born. Present, *násco, násci, násce ; nasciámo, nascéte, náscono :* I am born, thou art born, he is born ; we are born, you are born, they are born. Imperfect, *nascévo,* I was born. Preter-definite, *nácqui, nascésti, nácque ; nascémmo, nascéste, nácquero :* I was born. Future, *nascerò,* I shall be born.

Optative, *che násca.* Imperfect, *che nascéssi.* Second imperfect, *nàsceréi.* Participle, * *náto.*

NUÓCERE, to hurt. Present, *nuóco, nuóci, nuóce ; nuociámo, nuocéte, nuócono :* I hurt, &c. Imperfect, *nuocévo,* I did hurt. Preter-definite, * *nócqui, nuocésti, nuóce o, nuocéste, nócquero :* I did hurt, *or* I

ci, nuóça, &c. hurt thou, let him

ça. Imperfect, *che nuocéssi.* Second rticiple, **nuociúto.* Gerund, *nuocéndo.*

Digitized by Google

cémmo, conducéste, condússero: I conducted, thou didst conduct, he conducted, &c.

* Future. *Condurrò, rái, 'rà; rémo,* I shall *or* will conduct, &c.

Imperative, *Condúci, condúca,* &c. conduct thou, &c.

Optative, *che condúca.* Imperf. *che conducéssi.* Second imperfect, * *condurréi.* Participle, * *condótto.* Gerund, *conducéndo.*

RILU'CERE, to shine. Present, *rilúco, rilúci, rilúce; riluciámo, rilucéte, rilúcono:* I shine, thou shinest, he shines, &c. Imperfect, *rilucévo,* &c. I did shine, &c.

Preter-definite, *Rilússi, rilucésti, rilússe; rilucémmo, rilucéste, rilússero:* I shined, thou didst shine, he shined, &c. Future, *rilucerò,* I shall shine, &c.

Imperative, *Rilúci, rilúca; riluciámo, rilucéte, rilúcano:* shine thou, let him shine, &c.

It has no optative. *Che rilúca, rilúca, rilúca; riluciámo, riluciáte, rilúcano:* that I may shine, &c. Imperfect, *rilucéssi,* &c. that I might shine, &c. Second imperfect, *riluceréi,* &c. I should shine, &c. It has no participle. Gerund, *rilucéndo,* shining.

VI'NCERE, to gain. Present, *vínco, vínci, vínce; vinciámo, vincéte, víncono:* I gain, thou gainest, he gains; &c. Imperfect, *vincévo,* I did gain. * Preter-definite, *vínsi, vincésti, vínse; vincémmo, vinceste, vínsero:* I gained, &c. Preter-imperfect, *ho vínto,* I have gained. Future, *vincerò.* I shall gain. Imperative, *vínci, vínca,* &c. gain thou, let him gain, &c.

Optative and subjunctive. *Che vínca.* Imperfect, *che vincéssi,* Second imperfect, *vinceréi.* Participle, * *vínto.*

TORCERE, to twist. Present, *tórco, tórci, tórce; torciámo, torcéte, tórcono;* I twist, thou twistest, he twists; we twist, &c. Imperfect, *torcévo,* I did twist. * Preter-definite, *tórsi, torcésti, tórse; torcémmo, torcéste, tórsero.* Future, *torcerò.*

Imperative, *Torci, tórca,* &c. twist thou, let him twist, &c.

Optative.

Digitized by Google

Optative, *Chè tórca.* Imperfect, *che torcéssi.* Second imperfect, *torceréi.* Participle, * *tórto.*

CONÓSCERE and *créscere,* change *scere* into *bbi,* to form the preter-definite, and make the participle in *sciúto;* as,

Conósco, conósci, conósce; conosciámo, conoscéte, conóscono. I know, &c. Imperfect, *conoscévo.* Preter-definite, *conóbbi, conoscésti, conóbbe; conoscémmo, conocéste, conóbbero:* I knew, &c. Imperative, *conósci, conósca,* &c. know thou, let him know, &c.

Optative, *che conósca.* Imperfect, *che conoscéssi.* Second imperfect, *conosceréi.* Participle, * *conosciúto.*

CRE'SCO, *crésci, crésce; cresciámo, crescéte, créscono:* I grow, thou growest, he grows, we grow, you grow, they grow. Imperfect, *crescévo,* I did grow. Preter-definite, *crébbi, crescésti, crébbe.* Future, *crescerò,* I shall grow.

Imperative, *Crésci, crésca,* &c. grow thou, let him grow, &c.

Optative, *che crésca.* Imperf. *che crescéssi.* Second imperf. *cresceréi,* I should grow, &c. Participle, **cresciúto.*

NA'SCERE and *núocere* make the preterperfect definite in *qui.*

NA'SCERE, to be born. Present, *násco, násci, násce; nasciámo, nascéte, náscono:* I am born, thou art born, he is born; we are born, you are born, they are born. Imperfect, *nascévo,* I was born. Preter-definite, *nácqui, nascésti, nácque; nascémmo, nascéste, nácquero:* I was born. Future, *nascerò,* I shall be born.

Optative, *che núsca.* Imperfect, *che nascéssi.* Second imperfect, *nàsceréi.* Participle, * *náto.*

NUÓCERE, to hurt. Present, *nuóco, nuóci, nuóce; nuociámo, nuocéte, nuócono:* I hurt, &c. Imperfect, *nuocévo,* I did hurt. Preter-definite, * *nócqui, nuocésti, nuócque; nuocémmo, nuocéste, nócquero:* I did hurt, *or* I hurt, &c.

Imperative, *Nuóci, nuóça,* &c. hurt thou, let him hurt, &c.

Optative, *che nuóca.* Imperfect, *che nuocéssi.* Second imperf. *nuoceréi.* Participle, **nuociúto.* Gerund, *nuocéndo.*

Digitized by Google

Of the Verbs in dere.

THE verbs in *dere* form the preterperfect definite in *si*, and the participle in *so:* as,

A'RDERE, to burn. Present, *árdo, árdi, árde; ardiámo, ardéte, árdono:* I burn, thou burnest, &c.

Imperfect, *ardévo*, I did burn. * Preter-definite, *ársi, ardésti, árse; ardémmo, ardéste, ársero:* I burnt, he burnt, &c. Future, *arderò*, I shall burn, &c.

Imperative, *árdi, árda; ardiámo, ardéte, árdano:* burn thou, let him burn, &c.

Optative, *che árda, árda, árda; ardiámo, ardiáte, árdano:* that I may burn, &c. Imperfect, *che ardéssi.* Second imperfect, *arderéi.* Participle, **árso*, burnt. Gerund *ardéndo:* burning, *or* in burning.

I shall put no more tenses of the verbs than the present, the preterperfect definite, and the participles, none but these being irregular.

CHIU'DERE, to shut; *chiúdo, *chiúso, chiúsi.*

And so of the rest; except,

CHIE'DERE; to ask; which makes in the preter-def. **chiési*, and the participle, * *chiésto*, and not *chiéso.*

PE'RDERE, makes in the preter-definite, *perdéi*, or *perdétti* and **pérsi;* in the participle, *perdúto*, and * *pérso.*

RI'DERE, to laugh; *rído, *risi, *ríso.*

RÓDERE, to gnaw; *ródo, *rósi, *róso.*

Observe, that all these verbs have the preter-definite in *ei*, and in *etti.* Nay, it is more elegant to say, *chiudéi, perdéi*, &c. than *chiúsi, pérsi*, &c. This is to avoid the ambiguity that might arise between *chiúsi, pérsi*, &c. the first person of the preter-definite, and *chiúsi, pérsi*, &c. nouns adjective.

The participle of the verbs in *dere*, short, is always terminated in *so.* Except the verbs *chiédere* and *pérdere*, which make *chiési*, and *pérsi, chiedúto*, or *chiésto*, and *perdúto.*

*** You perceived, after the conjugation of the verb *crédere*, that *cédere* is a regular verb; its compounds are not; for they form the preter-definite in *essi*, and the participle in *esso.* Example:

SUCCÈ-

Digitized by Google

SUCCE'DERE, to succeed, *succédo,* * *succéssi,* * *succéso.*
CONCE'DERE, to agree, or yield to; *concédo,* * *concéssi,* * *concésso.*

I apprehend that those two verbs, as well as *pérdere,* to lose, are regular and irregular, since we may likewise say, *succedéi, succedétti, succedúto; concedéi, concedétti, concedúto; perdéi, perdétti, perdúto:* and in like manner all the compounds of the verbs *cédere* and *pérdere.*

Of the Verbs in endere.

THE verbs in *endere* form the preter-definite in *ei* and *si,* and the participle in *eso:* example,

ATTE'NDERE, to attend; *attendéi,* **attési,* **attéso.*
PRE'NDERE, to take; *prendéi,* * *prési,* * *préso.*
RE'NDERE, to render; *rendéi, résí,* * *réso.*

This verb also forms the participle in *uto,* as *rendúto.* The latter is better than *réso.*

Féndere, to cleave, and *péndere,* to hang, are regular. In the preter-definite they make *fendéi,* or *fendétti, pendéi,* or *pendétti;* in the participle *fénduto* and *pendúto.*

Take notice nevertheless, that the compounds of those two verbs are irregular, and they make the preter-definite in *esi,* the participle in *eso,* like *diféndere,* to defend, * *difési,* * *difése: appéndere,* to hand; or fix up, * *appési,* * *appeso,* &c.

Of the Verbs in gere.

THE verbs in *gere* make the preter-definite in *si,* and the participle in *to*; as,

CI'NGERE, to gird; *cíngo,* preter-definite, * *cínsi, cingésti, cínse.* Participle, * *cínto.*
SPI'NGERE, to shove; * *spíngo, spínsi,* * *spínto.*
PO'RGERE, to offer; *pórgo,* * *pórsi,* * *pórto.*
U'NGERE, to anoint; *úngo,* * *únsi,* * *únto.*
SPAR'GERE, to sprinkle. Present, *spárgo.* Preter-definite, *spársi.* Participle, * *spárso.*

To which we may also add *estínguere, estínguo,* * *estínsi,* * *estínto.*

E'RGERE, to erect; *érgo,* * *érsi,* * *érto.*

All

Digitized by Google

All these verbs have the preter-definite in *ei* and *etti*; but regularly their participle is in *to*. *Immérgere*, *dispérgere*, *térgere*, an obsolete verb, and some others of the like sort, have it in *so*. Both those participles are formed of the first syllable of the present indicative joined to the syllable *to* or *so*. For instance, of *cíngere* we make *cínto*, of *spárgere*, *spárso*. If the infinitive of those verbs are accented on the second syllable, the participle is then formed of the two first syllables, added to *to* or *so*.

Thus of *immérgere* you form *immérso*, of *disgiúngere*, *disgiúnto*, &c.

*** Remember that the participle of the verb *spárgere*, is *spárto*, and *spárso*, not *spargiúto*, except in poetry for the sake of rhyme, or to serve the measure of the verse. And even there we ought to use it as little as possible.

Observe, that the verbs that have a vowel before *gere* must be written with two *gg*'s, and that they double the letter *s* in the preter definite; as,

Fríggere, to fry; *fríggo*, *frissi*, *friggésti*, &c. *frítto*.

Léggere, to read; *léggo*, *lessi*, *leggésti*, &c. Participle, *létto*.

Take care you do not say *frigiúto*, or *leggiúto*.

*** *Of the Verbs in* gliere.

YOU are to observe that besides the irregularity in the preter-definite, and the participles of verbs ending in *gliere*, they are also contracted or abridged in the infinitive, and in the future and second imperfect tenses; as,

CÓGLIERE, or *córre*, and *cór*, to gather. Future *corrò*. Second imperfect, *corréi*.

The verbs in *gliere*, change their terminations into *lsi*, to form the preter-definite; and in *lto*, to make the participle. The conjugating of *cógliere*, *cólsi*, *cólto*, will serve as a rule for those verbs that are of the same termination.

*** Indicative, present, *cólgo*, and *cóglio*, I gather; *cógli*, *cóglie*; *cogliámo*, *cogliéte*, *cólgono*, and *cógliono*. Imperfect, *cogliévo*, I did gather. * Preter-perfect-definite, *cólsi*, *cogliésti*,

Digitized by Google

cogliésti. cólse, cogliémmo, &c. I gathered. Future, *corrò,* &c. I will *or* shall gather.

* Imperative, *Cógli, cólga,* or *cógĥa; cogliámo, cogliéte, cógliano,* or *cólgano:* let him gather.

* Optative, *che cóglia,* or *cólga,* &c. Imperfect, * *che cogliéssi,* Second imperfect, * *corréi.* Participle * *colto.*

To'GLIERE, or *tórre.* Present, **tólgo* or *tóglio.* Preter-definite, * *tólsi, togliésti,* &c. Future, * *torrò.*

Optative, * *tólga.* Imperfect, *togliéssi.* * Second imperfect, *torréi.* Participle, *tólto.*

SCIO'GLIERE, or *sciórre,* to loosen. Present, * *sciólgo,* or *scióglio.* Preterperfect definite, * *sciólsi, sciogliésti.* Participle, *sciólto.*

SCE'GLIERE, to chuse, is not abridged in the infinitive, like the above verbs: it forms in the present, **scélgo, scégli, scéglie; scegliámo, scegliéte, scélgono.* * Preterperfect-definite, *scélsi.* * Participle, *scélto.*

*** *Of the Verbs in* here.

IF there were any such thing in the Italian tongue as a verb terminated in *here* it would be *tráhere,* to draw, with its several compounds. But the present orthography it to write them without an *h.*

This verb is also contracted in the infinitive.

Of *tráere,* we form *trárre* or *trár. Trássi* is the preter-definite, and *trátto,* the participle.

* Indicative, present, *trággo,* or *tráo, trái, tráe; tragliámo* or *trajámo, traéte, trággono,* and *tráono,* I draw, &c. Imperfect, *traévo.* * Preterperfect-definite, *trássi, traésti,* &c. * Future, *trarrò.*

* Imperative, *trái, trágga,* and *tráa; tragghiámo,* or *trajámo, traéte, trággeno.*

* Optative, *che trágga,* or *tráa.* Imperfect, *che traéssi.* * Sec. imp. *trarréi.* Participle, *trátto.* Gerund, *traéndo.*

Observe the same rule in its compounds. *Contráere, attráere, distráere,* &c. make *contrárre, attrárre, distrárre,* &c. They form the preter-definite in *ssi,* as *contrássi, attrássi,*

Digitized by Google

attrássi, distrússi, and the participle in *to*, as, *contrátto, attrátto, distrátto,* &c.

Of the Verbs in lere.

OF all the verbs in *lere*, there is only the verb *svéllere*, to pluck, that change *e* into *si*, to form the preterperfect-definite, and into *to*, for the participle. Present, * *svélsi, svellésti.* Future, *svellerò.* Participle, *svélto.*

Of the Verbs in mere.

PRE'MERE, *súmere*, and their compounds, are the only regular verbs for this rule.

Prémere, to press. Present, *prémo.* Preterperfect-definite, * *préssi* and *premèi*, or *premétti.* Participle, *premúto.*

Its compounds in *imere* make the preterperfect-definite in *ssi*, and the participle in *sso ;* as,

Opprimere, * *oppréssi, oppresso.*

Imprimere, * *impréssi, impresso.*

Súmere is obsolete: its compounds make * *súnsi, súnto*, as *Assúmere*, * *assúnsi, assúnto ; consúmere, consúnsi, consúnto.*

Of the Verbs in nere.

PO'NERE, is also irregular, with its compounds. It changes the infinitive into *órre*, so that we say, *pórre*, to put; *dispórre*, to dispose, &c. instead of, *pónere* and *disponére.* Though we make use of both those infinitives, that in *orre* is preferable, or, at least, the most received. We may change *nere*, or *erre*, into *si* for the preterdefinite, and into *sto* for the participle; saying, * *pósi, dispósi, pósto, dispósto*, &c.

The preter-definite may also terminate in *ei*, as *ponèi, disponèi*, &c. But the participle always makes *sto.* Nay it would be very wrong to say *esposíta, disposíto*, And this should be carefully minded: because foreigners are apt to commit this error. The French are led into

Digitized by Google

into it by the turn of their language; and other nations by frequently meeting with the word *posáto* in printed books. But you are to take notice, that this word is derived from the verb *posáre*, and not from *ponére* or *pórre*. For the same reason we do not say, *posái*; for *pósi*, or *ponéi*, this word being used only for the first person of the preter-definite of the same verb *pósare*. Consequently, we must never say *disposái*; *esposái*, &c. for the verbs are the compounds of *ponére* and not *posáre*.

*** Remember the two remarks I made on the verbs ending in *lere*, *nere*, *nire*, which take the latter *g* in the present, and change *le*, *ne*, *ni*, into *r* in the future, &c.

* Present, *póngo*, *póni*, *póne*; *poniámo*, *ponéte*, *póngono*, I put, &c. Imperfect, *ponévo*.

* Preterperfect-definite, *pósi*, or *ponéi*, *ponésti*, *póse*; *ponémmo*, *ponéste*, *pósero*. Future *porrò*.

* Imperative, *póni*, *ponga*; *poniámo*, *ponéte*, *póngano*.

* Optative, *che ponga*, *a*, *a*; *poniámo*, *poniáte*, *póngano*. Imperfect, *che ponéssi*. Second imperfect, *porréi*. *Participle, *pósto*. Gerund, *ponéndo*.

Conjugate its compounds after the same manner.

Of the Verbs in ondere.

BY changing *ondere* into *si*, or *re* into *i*, as in the case of regular verbs, you form the preterperfect definite. The participle is in *osto*, *uso*, or *oso*.

RISPO'NDERE, to answer. Present, *rispóndo*, *rispóndi*, *rispónde*; *rispondiámo*, *rispondéte*, *rispóndono*. Imperfect, *rispondévo*. * Preterperfect-definite, *rispósi*, *rispondésti*, *rispóse*; *rispondémmo*, *rispondéste*, *rispósero*. Future, *risponderò*.

Imperative. *Rispóndi*, *rispónda*; *rispondiámo*, *rispondéte*, *rispóndano*.

Optative, *che rispónda*, *da*, *da*; *rispondiámo*, *rispondiáte*, *rispóndano*. Imperfect, *che rispondéssi*. Second imperfect, *risponderéi*. * Participle, *rispósto*.

NASCO'NDERE, to hide. Present, *nascóndo*. * Preterperfect definite, *nascósi*. Participle, *nascósto*, or *nascóso*.

The

Digitized by Google

The verb FO'NDERE, to melt, does not make the preter-definite in *osi*, but in *usi* or *ei*. You must therefore say *fondéi*, or *fúsi*, *fondésti*, *fondè*, or *fúse*; *fondémmo*, *fondéste*, *fondérono*, or *fúsero*.

*** Note, that *fúsi*, *fúse*, &c. is not used at present, except in compounds; as in the verb *confóndere*, *diffóndere*, &c. which in the preter-definite makes *confúsi*, and *confondéi*; *diffúsi*, *diffondéi*, &c. and in the participle, *confúso*, *diffúso*, &c.

Though in the preter-definite we meet with *confúsi*, and *diffúsi*, yet it is more adviseable to make use of *confondéi*, and *diffondéi*. This is because of the ambiguity in those words, when they form the first person of the preter-definite, and when they are nouns adjective, as we have observed of *chiési* and *pérsi*.

The participle of the verb *fóndere* make *fúso* and *fondúto*. The last is the best; the other is used only for compound verbs.

TO'NDERE, to shear, does not make *tósi*, but *tondéi*, *tondésti*, *tondè*. Participle, *tondúto*, and not *tóso*, the latter being abridged from *tosáto*, which comes from the verb *tosáre*.

Of the Verbs in pere.

RO'MPERE, to break, is, with its compounds, the only irregular verb of this termination; in the present it forms *rómpo*, *rómpi*, *rómpe*; *rompiámo*, *rompéte*, *rómpono*. Imperfect, *rompévo*. * Preterperfect-definite, *rúppi*, or *rompéi*, *rompésti*, *rúppe*, or *rompè*; *rompémmo*, *rompéste*, *rúppero*, or *rompérono*. Future, *romperò*. * Participle, *rótto*.

Of the Verbs in rere.

CO'RRERE, with its compounds, to run, is also the only verb that ends in *rere* short; it makes the preter-definite in *si*, and the participle in *so*; as,

CÓRRERE, to run. Present, *córro*, *córri*, *córre*; *corriámo*, *corréte*, *córrono*. Imperfect, *corrévo*. Preterperf. definite, Pret. *córsi*, *corrésti*, *córse*; *corrémmo*, *corréste*, *córsero*. Future, *correrò*. Imperative, *córri*, *córra*, &c. Optative,

Digitized by Google

Optative, *che córra, córra, córra; corriámo, corriáte, córrano.* Imperfect, *corréssi.* Second imperfect, *corréi, corrésti,* &c. * Participle, *córso.* Gerund, *corréndo.*

ACCÓRRERE, to run to. Preter-defin. *accórsi.* Participle, *accórso:* and all the other compounds in the same manner.

Of the Verbs in tere.

METTERE, to put, does not make in the preter-definite *méssi,* but *misi, mettésti, míse; mettémmo, mettéste, mísero.* I put, thou puttest, &c. Participle, *mésso;* we sometimes meet with *méssero, proméssero;* but it is more in verse than in prose.

PROMETTERE, to promise, makes *proméssi,* and *promísi.* Participle, *promésso.*

RIPLETTERE, to reflect, is irregular only in the participle. We do not say in the preter-definite *refléssi,* but *reflettéi.* The participle makes *reflettúto;* but this word is grown obsolete. It is customary now to use the participle of the verb *fáre,* joined to the word *riflessióne.* As, having reflected, *avèndo fátto riflessióne,* I have reflected upon that, *io ho fátto reflessióne sópra cio,* &c.

RISCUÓTERE, *riscóssi, riscósso,* to receive.

SCUÓTERE, to shake, makes **scóssi, scósso.*

PERCUÓTERE, to strike, makes, *percóssi, percotéi, percósso.*

Of the Verbs in ucere.

THE verbs *prodúcere, addúcere, ridúcere, indúcere, sedúcere, condúcere, dedúcere, tradúcere,* which in English signify, to produce, to allege, to reduce, to persuade, to seduce, to conduct, to deduct, to translate, are also contracted in the infinitive. We say *prodúrre, addúrre,* &c. Their preter-definite is *prodússi, addússi;* and their participle is terminated in *otto,* as, *prodótto, addótto,* &c.

** Note, That we likewise say, *addúr, prodúr,* &c. which makes a third infinitive. But in prose, we must make use of that in *urre.* The other two are proper only for verse, though there are some authors of reputation that have only used them in prose.

The

Digitized by Google

The other verbs, terminating in *úcere*, do not change the infinitive. Therefore we must take care to say *rilúcere*, but never *rilúrre*, and so of the rest.

Of the Verbs in vere.

TO form the preterperfect definite of verbs in *vere*, you must change *vere* into *ssi*, or *si*. The participles are different.

MÓVERE, to move. Preter-definite, *móssi*. Participle, *mósso*. It is more usual to write *muóvere* than *móvere*. But we do not put the *u* in the preter-definite, nor in the participle: therefore we must say *móssi* and *mósso*. And the same holds good in regard to its compounds; for instance, * *promóssi, promósso; commóssi, commósso*, &c. All those verbs likewise form the preter-definite in *ei*, as, *promovéi, commovéi*. In that case, you make use of the *u* and write, *promuovéi, commuovéi*, &c.

SCRÍVERE, to write: *scrissi, scrivéi, scritto*.

VÍVERE, to live: * *vissi, vivésti, visse*. Participle, *vissúto*, or *vivúto*. It makes also *vivétti* in the preterperfect-definite.

ASSÓLVERE, to absolve, having a consonant before *vere*, makes in the preterperfect-definite *assolsi, assolvésti, assólse*, &c. or *assolvétti*.

RISÓLVERE, to resolve. Present, *risólvo*, Preterperfect definite, * *risólsi, risolvésti*; or *risolvéi*, or *risolvétti*. Participle, *risolúto*.

* * Remember that the optative of verbs, ending in *ere* and in *ire*, is formed of the first person indicative, by changing *o* into *a*; as, *vedére, védo, véda*; *scrívere, scrívo, scríva*; *cógliere, cólgo, cólga*; *credére, crédo, créda*; *dormíre, dórmo, dórma*; *sentíre, sénto, sénta*; *finíre, finísco, finísca*; *díre, díco, díca*. And so of all the other verbs, except *éssere, sapére, avére*, and *dóvere*.

Irregulars of the Third Conjugation.

IN the third conjugation there are six verbs more irregular than the rest, viz. *díre*, to say; *morire*, to die; *salíre*, to ascend; *udíre*, to hear; *venire*, to come: *uscíre*, to go out.

DIRE,

Digitized by Google

DI'RE, *to say.*

I apprehend the verb *dire* is only an abridgement of *dicire*, which was used by the ancients. I give it however a place among the irregulars of the third conjugation, in order to comply with the custom of other grammarians.

* Present. *Dico, dici, dice; diciámo, dite, dicono,* I say, thou sayest, he says; we say, you say, they say.

Imperfect, *Dicévo, vi, va; vámo, váte, váno.*

* Preterperfect-definite. *Dissi, dicésti, disse; dicémmo, dicéste, dissero:* I said, thou didst say, he said; we said, you said, they said.

Preterperfect. *Ho détto,* I have said.

Future. *Dirò,* I shall say.

* Imperative. *Dì, dica; diciámo, dite, dicano;* say thou, let him say; let us say, say you, let them say.

* Optative. *Che dica, dica; diciámo, diciáte, dicano:* that I may say, thou may'st say, he may say, &c.

Imperfect. *Che dicéssi.* Second imperfect, *diréi.*

* Participle, *détto.* Gerund, *dicéndo.*

MORI'RE, *to die.*

Morire has no irregularity, but by making the present tense in two different manners.

* Indicative; present. *Móro, móri, móre; moriámo, morite, mórono:* or *muójo, móri, móre; muojámo, morite, muójono:* I die, thou diest, he dies: we die, you die, they die.

Imperfect. *Morívo, vi, va; vámo, váte, váno.*

Preterperfect-definite. *Morj, moristi, morì; morimmo, moriste, morirono,* and not *mórsi,* which comes from *mórdere.*

Preterperfect. *Sono mórto,* I am dead.

Future. *Morirò,* I shall *or* will die.

* Imperative. *Móri, móra,* or *muója; moriámo,* or *muojáme, morite, mórano,* or *muójano:* die thou, let him die, &c.

* Optative and subjunctive. *Che móra,* or *muója, móra; moriámo, moriáte, mórano,* or *muójano.*

Im-

Digitized by Google

Imperfect, *che morissi.* Second imperfect, *moriréi.*
* Participle, *mórto.* Gerund, *moréndo.*

SALI'RE, *to go up.*

Salire, is irregular, like *morire;* because its present tense is formed two ways.

* Indicative present. *Sálgo,* or *ságlio, sáli, sále; sagliámo,* or *salghiámo, salite, sálgono,* or *ságliono:* I go up, &c. Imperfect, *salívo,* &c.

Preter-definite. *Salj, salisti, salì;* or *salimmo, saliste, salirono:* I went up. Future, *salirò,* I shall go up.

* Imperative. *Sálghi, sálga,* or *ságlia; sagliámo, salite, sálgano:* go up thou, let him go up; &c.

* Optative, *Che sálga,* or *ságlia, sálga, sálga,* &c.

Imperative. *Che salissi, salissi, salisse.*

Second Imperfect. *Saliréi, salirésti.*

Participle, *salito.* Gerund, *saléndo.*

Take care you do not say *sáli* and *saliámo,* instead of *sálghi* and *sagliámo,* or *salghiámo;* because the former words come from the verb *salàre,* and not from *salire,* to mount.

UDI'RE, *to hear.*

The irregularity of *udire* is only in the present tense, by changing *u* into *o,* in the first, second, and third person singular, and in the third person plural.

* Indicative, present. *O'do, ódi, óde.; udiámo, udite, ódono;* I hear, thou hearest, he hears; we hear, you hear, they hear.

Imperfect. *Udívo, vi, va; vámo, váte, vano.*

Preterperfect-def. *Udj, udisti, udì; udimmo, udiste, udirono;* I heard, &c.

Future, *Udirò, rái, rà; rémo, réte, ránno:* I shall *or* will hear, thou shalt hear, he shall hear.

* Imperative. *Odi, óda; udiámo, udite, ódano.*

* Optative. *Che óda,* that I may hear.

*Imperfect. *Che udissi,* that I might hear.

Second imperfect, *udiréi.* Participle, *udito.* Gerund, *udéndo.*

*** Take

Digitized by Google

*** Take notice that you are never to say *odiámo* for *udiámo; odiámo* being the first person plural of the present indicative of the verb *odiáre*, to hate.

VENI'RE, *to come.*

* Indicative, present. *Véngo, viéni, viéne; veniámo*, or *venghiámo, venite, véngono:* I come, thou comest, he comes; we come, you come, they come.

Imperfect. *Venivo*, I did come.

* Preterperfect-def. *Vénni, venisti, vénne; venimmo, veniste, vénnerò:* I came, thou camest, he came; we came, you came, they came.

Preterperfect, *sóno venúto.* Future, *verrò*, I shall come.

* Imperative. *Viéni, vénga; veniámo, venite, véngano:* come thou, let him come: let us come, &c.

* Optative, present, *che vénga.* Imperfect, *che venissi.*

Second imperfect, *verréi.* Participle, *venúto.* Gerund, *venéndo.*

All the compounds of *venire*, as *pervenire, rivenire*, are conjugated in the same manner; and so are all the other compounded verbs.

USCI'RE, *to go out.*

Uscire is irregular, only by changing *u* into *e* in the present, viz. in the first, second, and third person singular, and the third plural.

* Indicative present. *Esco, esci, esce; usciámo, uscite, escono:* I go out, thou goest out, he goes out; we go out, you go out, they go out.

Imperfect. *Uscivo.*

Preterperfect-def. *Uscj, uscisti, uscì; uscimmo, usciste, uscirono*: I went out, thou wentest out, he went out: we went out, &c.

Preterperfect. *Sonò uscito*, I am gone out.

Future. *Uscirò, uscirái, uscirà*, &c.

* Imperative. *Esci, esca; usciámo, uscite, escano.*

* Optative. *Che esca, esca, esca; usciámo, usciáte, escano.* Imperfect, *che uscissi.*

Second imperfect, *usciréi.* Participle, *uscito.* Gerund, *uscéndo.*

Aprire,

Digitized by Google

Aprire, to open, makes in the preterperfect-definite *aprj*, or *apérsi*. Participle, *apérto*.

Coprire, to cover, makes in the preterperfect-definite *cóprj*, or *copérsi*. Participle, *capérto*.

The third conjugation of the verbs terminated in the infinitive in *ire* has another sort of verbs irregular only in the present, which are formed from the infinitive, by changing *ire*, into *isco*; as, *ardire*, to dare, of which I have given the following conjugation, to serve as a rule for the rest.

Of the Verbs in isco.

IN order to lay down a general rule for the verbs that have the termination in *isco* in the present tense, observe, that some of them do not follow *ardisco*; and they differ only from the verb *sentire*, in the preterperfect-definite, and in the participle. They are as follow:

Present,		Preterperf.	Particip.
Aprire,	*ápro*	*aprj, & apérsi*,	*apérto.*
Apparire,	*apparisco*,	*apparj, & appársi*,	*appárso.*
Coprire,	*cópro*,	*cóprj & copérsi*,	*copérto.*
Comparire,	*comparisco*,	*compárj & compársi*,	*compárso.*
Offerire,	*offerisco*,	*offérj, & offérsi*,	*offérto.*
Proferire,	*proferisco*,	*proférj, & profersi*,	*proférto.*
Soffrire,	*sóffro, & soffrisco*,	*sóffrj, sofférsi*,	*sofférto.*
Seppellire,	*seppellisco*,	*seppelj*,	*sepólto, & seppellito.*

I have made a collection of the regular verbs in *ire*, which are conjugated like *sentire*, as you have already seen in this chapter, page 100, where we treated of the third conjugation of verbs. All the other verbs, not contained in that and the preceding collection, form the present in *isco*, and ought to be conjugated like *ardisco*. In this collection there are even some verbs,

Digitized by Google

that are also irregular; as, *consentire, mentire, partire,* when the latter signifies, to divide. We meet with *consentisco, mentisco,* and *partisco.* When the latter signifies to share, I should prefer *partisco* to *párto.* On the contrary, when it denotes to go away, you must say *párto,* and not *partisco. Bollire, convertire, soffrire,* also make the first person of the present indicative in *isco.*

*** Before you read over *radisco,* remember the two remarks concerning the irregularity of the present tense.

The first teaches you, that the irregularity of the present indicative is continued in the present imperative and subjunctive.

By the second you find, that the first and second persons plural of the present tense are never irregular.

ARDI'RE, *to dare.*

Indicative, present. *Ardisco, ardisci, ardisce; ardiámo, ardíte, ardiscono:* I dare. N. B. I am of opinion that we ought to say, *abbiámo ardire,* and not *ardiámo.* The latter seems proper only for the verb *ardére,* to burn, for *ardiámo* implies we burn. Neither can we say, *ardischiámo,* as this is not an Italian word: the same is applicable to any of the persons, which may be confounded with those of the verb *árdere,* to burn.

Imperfect. *Ardívo,* I did dare; *ardívi, va;* &c.

Preterperfect-def. *Ardj, ardísti, ardì; ardímmo, ardíste, ardírono;* I durst, &c.

Preterperf. *Ho ardíto.* Future, *Ardirò.*

Imperative. *Ardisci, ardísca; abbiámo ardire, ardíscano;* dare thou, let him dare, let us dare, &c.

Optative. *Che ardiscà, ardísca; ardísca; che abbiámo ardire, che abbiate ardire, ardíscano:* that I may dare, thou may'st dare, he may dare, &c.

Imperfect, *ardissi.* Second imperf. *ardiréi.*

Participle, *ardito.* Gerund, *avéndo ardire.*

Conjugate the following verbs after the same manner.

Abbolire,

Digitized by Google

Abbolíre,	*isco j íto*		abolish.
Abborríre,	*isco j íto*		abhor.
Arrichíre,	*isco j íto*		enrich.
Arrossíre,	*isco j íto*		blush.
Bandíre,	*isco j íto*		banish.
Bianchíre,	*isco j íto*		whiten.
Capíre,	*isco j íto*		comprehend.
Colpíre,	*isco j íto*		strike.
Compatíre,	*isco j íto*		agree, *or* bear with.
Concepíre,	*isco j íto*		conceive.
Digerire,	*isco j íto*		digest.
Eseguíre,	*isco j íto*	to	execute.
Finíre,	*isco j íto*		finish.
Fiorire,	*isco j íto*		blossom, *or* bloom.
Gradíre,	*isco j íto*		approve of.
Impazzire,	*isco j íto*		grow mad.
Incredulire,	*isco j íto*		grow cruel.
Languire,	*isco j íto*		languish.
Patíre,	*isco j íto*		suffer.
Spedíre,	*isco j íto*		make haste.
Tradíre,	*isco j íto*		obey.
Ubbidíre,	*isco j íto*		betray.
Unire,	*isco j íto*		unite.

*** Note, that the poets do not always observe this irregularity, for they indifferently say *óffro* and *offerísco*, *múgge*, and *mugísce*; *lángue*, and *languísce*; *fére* and *ferísce*; as may be seen in *Pastór Fído*, and in Tasso's *Aminta*.

Múgge in mándro l' arménto. Pastór Fido.
Qual árme féra, qual dia vita, quále,
Sáni in ritórni in víta.

There are also some verbs that end in *are*, and in *ire*: as,

Coloráre, colorire, to colour.
Inanimáre, inanimíre, to animate.
Inacerbare, inacérbire, to sharpen.
Indurâre, indurire, to harden.

The poets also frequently use the verbs *ire*, and *gíre*, instead of *andáre*; which is all I had to say in regard to irregular verbs.

Of

Digitized by Google

Of the Verb ire.

THE following tenses are all that occur in good writers.

Indicative, imperfect. *I'va*, he did go; *ívano*, or *ívan*, they did go. Future, *irò, irái, irà; iréme, iréte, iránno*, or *irém*.

Imperative, *Ite*, go you.

Infinitive, *I're*, or *ir*, to go.

Participle, *I'to*, gone.

The other tenses are not used.

Of the Verb gire.

There are no more than the following tenses in use:

Present, *Gite*, you go.

Imperfect, *Givo, givi, giva*, or *gia; givámo, giváte, givano*: I did go, &c.

Preter-def. *Gistí, gì*, or *giò; gimmo, giste, girono.*

Imperative, *Gíte*, go you.

Optative, imperfect. *Che gissi, gissi, gisse; gissimo, giste, gissero*: that I might go.

Infinitive. *Gire*, or *gír*. Participle, *gito*.

We have still something to say in regard to verbs, neuter, reciprocal, and impersonal.

Of the Verbs Neuter.

THE Verbs Neuter are those which in their compound tenses are seldom or never conjugated with the verb *éssere*, to be; as *I speak, I sleep, I tremble*, &c. we may indeed say, *I have spoken, I have slept, I have trembled*; but not, *I am spoken*, &c. But to express myself more properly, verbs neuter are those that make a complete sense of themselves, and do not govern any case after them like the verbs active; for instance, I enter, I tremble; *io éntro, io trémo.* Take notice, however, that we meet with some verbs neuter, which may govern an accusative; as, *io vivo úna lúnga vita, io dórmo un lúngo sónno, io córro un lúngo córso*, &c.

Digitized by Google

It is necessary to be acquainted with the nature of a verb neuter, in order to prevent mistakes or errors in the participles, as may be seen in the Second Part, where we treat of the Syntax of Participles.

Of Reciprocal Verbs.

THE name of Reciprocal Verbs is given to such as are conjugated through all their tenses with the pronouns conjunctive, *mi, ti, si, ci, vi,* after the same manner as *dolére* is conjugated in the irregulars of the second conjugation: example,

Indicative present. *Mi pénto, ti pénti, si pénte; ci pentiámo, vi pentite, si péntono:* I repent, &c.

Imperf. *Mi pentivo, ti pentívi, si pentiva; ci pentiváno, vi pentiváte, si pentivano:* I did repent, &c.

Preterperfect-def. *Mi pentj, ti pentísti, si pentì; ci pentímmo, vi pentiste, si pentírono:* I repented, &c.

Preterperfect-def. *Mi sóno pentito,* I have repented.

Future. *Mi pentirò,* I shall repent.

Imperative. *Pénititi tu, péntasi egli; pentiámoci noi, pentítevi voi, péntansi églino.*

Subjunctive. *Che mi pénta,* that I may repent.

Indicative, present. *Mi ricórdo, ti ricórdi, si ricórda;* and so of the rest.

*** Note, all the verbs active may become reciprocals: example,

I love myself,	*io m'ámo.*
Thou lovest thyself,	*tu t'ámi.*
He loves himself,	*egli s'áma.*
We love ourselves,	*noi ci amiámo.*
You love yourselves,	*voi v'amáte.*
They love themselves,	*églino s'ámano.*

And so of all the other tenses, and all the other verbs.

Yet we are to take notice, that the pronouns *mi, ti, si, vi,* which gave the reciprocality to the verbs, may be placed either before or after it; but in the impe-

Digitized by Google

imperative, infinitive, gerund, and participle, they ought to be placed after the verb: example, *ámami*, love me: *amándomi*, loving me; *amársi*, to love oneself: *amátosi*, loved by oneself; and so in all the other verbs.

Of Impersonal Verbs.

THERE are three sorts of verbs impersonal, which have only the third person singular.

The first are properly impersonals of themselves; as, *Accáde*, it happens.
Básta, it is enough, *or* it suffices.
Bisógna, it must, *or* it behoves.
Piove, it rains.
Tuóna, it thunders.

The second are derived from verbs active, preceded by the participle *si*, which renders them impersonals; as *s' ama*, they love; *si dice*, they say.

The third, which have a great affinity with reciprocal verbs, are conjugated with the pronouns conjunctive, *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, or *le*, *ci*, *vi*; as *mi duóle*, *ti duóle*, *gli duóle*, &c.

The impersonal verbs of themselves are,
Accáde, it happens.
Avviéne, it falls out.
Básta, it is enough.
Bisógna, it must.
Grándina, it hails.
Nevica, it snows.
Non occórre, it is not necessary.
Páre, it seems.
Piove, it rains.
Lampéggia, it lightens.
Tuona, it thunders; and the like, which are conjugated with the third person singular of each tense; as,

Indicative, present. *Bisógna*, it must, *or* it behoves.
Imperfect, *Bisognáva*, it did behove.
Preterperfect-def. *Bisognò*, it behoved.
Future, *Bisognerà*, it shall *or* will behove.

Optative,

Digitized by Google

Optative. *Che bisógni*, that it may behove.
Imperfect. *Che bisognásse*, that it might behove.
Second imperfect. *Bisognerébbe*, it should behove.
Infinitive. *Bisognáre*, to behove.

The participle *si*, which composes the second sort of impersonal verbs, is placed indifferently before or after the verbs; as *si dice*, or *dicesi*; they say; *s'áma*, or *amási*, they love. In the like manner all the verbs active may become impersonal. They are conjugated with the third person singular and plural; as,

Present. *A'masi*, or *s' áma: s'ámano*, or *ámansi*, they love.

Imperfect. *S'amáva*, or *amávasi: s'amávano*, or *amávansi*, they did love.

†† In regard to these verbs, take notice, that when the noun that follows them is in the singular number, you must put the verb in the singular; if the noun be in the plural, you put the verb in the plural; example,

They praise the captain,	*si lóda il capitáno.*
They praise the captains,	*si lódano i capitáni.*
They see a man,	*si véde un'uómo.*
They see men,	*si védono úomini.*

*** We must also take notice, when the participle *si* is put after a verb that is accented, the letter *s* is doubled, and the accent dropped: example,

Fássi, for *si fà*, they do.
Dirássi, for *si dirà*, they will say.

The third sort of impersonal verbs are such as are conjugated with the pronouns personal, *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, or *le*, *ci*, *vi*, *loro*, with the third person singular: example,

Indicative present. *Mi dispiáce*, I am displeased, *or* it displeases me.
Ti dispiáce, thou art displeased.
Gli or *le dispiáce*, he is displeased, *or* she is displeased.
Ci dispiáce, we are displeased.
Vi dispiáce, you are displeased.
Dispiáce lóro, they are displeased.
Imperfect. *Mi dispiacéva*, I was displeased.
Preter-def. *Mi dispiácque*, I was displeased.
Future. *Mi dispiacerà*, I shall be displeased.

Optative.

Digitized by Google

Optative. *Che mi dispiáccia*, that I may be displeased.
Imperfect. *Che mi dispiacésse*, That I were displeased.
Second Imperfect. *Mi dispiacerébbe*, I should be displeased.

Conjugate after the same manner,
M'accáde, it happens to me.
M'aggráda, it agrees with me.
M'aviéne, it happens to me.
Mi bisógna, it behoves me.
Mi duóle, I am ill *or* it grieves me.
M'occórre, it happens to me.
Mi páre, it seems to me.
Mi piáce, it pleases me.
Mi rincrésce, it displeases me.
Mi sovviéne, I remember.

Many of those impersonal verbs have the third person singular and plural; as,

My leg pains me, *la gámba mi duóle.*
I have sore eyes, *mi dógliono gli ócchi.*
Your coat appears new to me, *il vóstro vestito mi páre nuóvo.*
Your shoes seem to me too long, *le vóstre scárpe mi pájono tróppo lúnghe.*

How to express there is, there was.

THERE *is, there was*, are expressed by the help of the Italian particle *ci*, which answers to the French particle *y*, and is sometimes an adverb that denotes the place where we are: as,

Since I am in this place, I will dine in it, *or* at it; *giacchè sóno quì, ci pranzerò.*

But mentioning a place where we are not, we must use *vi*; as, I have been in England, but I will never go thither again, *sóno státo in Inghiltérra, ma non vi tornerò più.*

But there is this difference between the Italian *ci*, and the French *y*: that whereas the latter is used in speaking of time, as, *il y a un an*, it is a year since; the former is not; as *è un ánno*, or *un ánno fà: sóno dúe mési*, or *dúe mési fà.* And so of all the tenses, putting the verb,

Digitized by Google

éssere, to be, in the third person singular or plural, according to the number in which we express ourselves.

Yet for the conveniency of beginners, I will conjugate this impersonal verb *c'è, c'éra*, &c. there is, there was, there has been, &c. through all its tenses, and point out its use in mentioning a place.

Conjugation of the Impersonal Verb éssere.

Ci is changed into *vi* when you speak of different places; but mentioning time, you must drop the *ci* and *vi*.

Singular.	Plural.
Ind. pres. There is, *c'è*, or *v'è*.	There are, *ci sóno*, or *vi sóno*.
Imperfect. There was, *c'éra*.	There were, *c'érano*.
Preter-def. There was, *ci fù*.	There were, *vi fúrono*.
Preterp. There has been, *c'è státo*.	There have been, *ci sóno státi*.
Preterplup. There had been, *c'éra státo*.	The same, *c'érano státi*.
Future. There shall be, *ci sarà*.	The same, *ci saránno*.
Imper. Let there be, *siaci*.	The same, *siancì*.
Opt. That there may be, *che ci sia*.	The same, *che ci siano*.
Imperf. That there were, *che ci fósse*.	The same, *che ci fóssero*.
Sec. Imp. There would be, *ci sarébbe*.	The same, *ci sárebbero*.

Preter-perf. That there had been, *che ci* or *vi sia státo*, or *che ci siáno státi*, or *vi siáno státi*.

Preterpluperf. If there had been, *se ci*, or *vi fósse státo*, or *ci* or *vi fóssero státi*. That there had been, *che vi*

Digitized by Google

vi fósse státo, or *che vi fóssero státi*. There would have been, *ci sarébbe státo*, or *vi sarébbero státi*.

Future. When there has or shall have been, *quándo vi sarà státo*, or *quándo vi saránno státi*.

Infin. There to have been, *ésservi státo*. Gerund, in there having been, *essèndovi státo*.

*** Note, in speaking of the feminine gender, we are to use *státa*, *státe*, instead of *státo*, *státi*.

*** Remember, that if after the adverb *ci* or *vi*, you find the verb *to have*, and the tenses of the verb *to have* are followed by a participle, as *he has dined there*; then the tenses of the verb *to have* must be expressed by those of *avére*, and not by those of *éssere*: example,

I have dined there, *ci* or *v'ho pranzáto*.
Thou hast dined there, *ci* or *v'hai pranzáto*.
He has lain there, *ci* or *v'ha dormíto*.
We have read in it, *ci* or *v'abbiámo létto*.
You have said to it, *ci* or *v'avéte détto*.
They have drunk there, *ci* or *v'hanno bevúto*.

Observe the same rule through all the tenses, except the participle *státo*, which is never joined with the tenses of the verb *avére*: example,

I have been there, *ci* or *vi sóno státo* or *státa*.
Thou hast been there, *ci* or *vi sei státo* or *státa*.
And in like manner through all the tenses and persons.

*** Observe, the particles *ci* and *vi* are often omitted in the present tense; thus we say, *è un' uómo*, instead of *ci è un' uómo*; *sóno uómini*, instead of *ci sóno uómini*.

*** Those who learn Italian are greatly at a loss how to render the following expressions; *there is of it*, or *them*; *there is not of it*; *is there of it?* *is there not of it?* *there was of it*; *there was not of it*, &c. As the ladies, especially, find those ways of speaking extremely difficult, I have explained them at large for their greater ease, in the following conjugation.

Digitized by Google

Conjugation of the verb impersonal there is of it, *when it marks the place, through all its tenses.*

There is of it *or* them, { *cen'è* / *ven'è* } or { *cene sóno.* / *vene sóno.* }

There is not of it, *non cen'è; non cene sóno.*
Is there of it? *cen'è? cene sóno!*
Is there not of it? *non cen'è? non cene sóno?*

There was of it, *ven'éra; ven'érano.*
There was not of it, *non ven'éra; non ven'érano.*
Was there of it? *ven'éra? ven'érano?*
Was there not of it? *non ven'éra? non ven'érano?*

There was of it, *vene fù; vene fúrono.*
There was not of it, *non vene fù; non vene fúrono.*
Was there of it? *vene fù? vene fúrono?*
Was there not of it? *non vene fù? non vene fúrono?*

There shall be of it, *vene sarà; vene saránno.*
There shall not be of it, *non vene sarà; non vene saránno.*
Shall there be of it? *vene sarà? vene saránno?*
Shall there not be of it? *non vene sarà? non vene saránno?*

That there may be of it, *che vene sia; che vene síano.*
That there may not be of it, *che non vene sia: che non vene síano.*
That there were of it, *che vene fósse; che vene fóssero.*
That there were not of it, *che non vene fósse; che non vene fóssero.*

There would be of it, *vene sarébbe; vene sarébbero.*
There would not be of it, *non vene sarébbe? non vene sarébbero.*
Would there not be of it? *non vene sarébbè? non vene sarébbero?*

If there had been of it, *se vene fósse státo; se vene fóssero státi* or *state.*

If

Digitized by Google

If there had not been of it, *se non vene fósse státo; se non vene fóssero státi* or *state.*

Had there been of it? *vene sarébbe státo? vene sarébbero státi?*
Had there not been of it? *non vene sarébbe státo?* or *non vene sarébbero státi.*

If there had been of it, *se vene fósse státo;* or *se vene fóssero státi.*
If there had not been of it, *se non vene fósse státo; se non vene fóssero státi.*

There would have been of it, *vene sarébbe státo; vene sarébbero státi.*
There would not have been of it, *non vene sarébbe státo; non vene sarébbero státi.*

Would there have been of it? *vene sarébbe státo; vene sarébbero státi?*
Would there not have been of it? *non vene sarébbe státo? non vene sarébbero státi?*

There will have been of it, *vene sarà státo; vene saránno státi.*
There will not have been of it, *non vene sarà státo; non vene saránno státi.*

Shall there have been of it? *vene sarà státo; vene saránno státi?*
Shall there not have been of it? *non vene sarà státo? non vene saránno státi?*

For there having been too much of it, *per ésservene státo tróppo.*
In there having been too little of it, *essèndo vene státo tróppo póco.*

*** But if you express yourself in the feminine gender, you must use *státa, státe,* instead of *státo, státi.*

We must also render, there is of it *or* them, by *cene,* in speaking of a place where we are; and by *vene,* in mentioning a place where we are not: but it often

Digitized by Google

happens, and especially in speaking of the time, that they leave out the *ce* entirely: example,

How many months is it? it is ten at least: *quánti mési sóno? sóno diéci almáno.*

Sometimes they express, there is of it *or* them, by *ne* only; as, how many months is it; ten of them are past; *quánti mési sóno? ne sóno passáti diéci.*

Sometimes the whole is expressed; as, how many months is it from this to new-year's day? there are ten of them: *quánti mési sóno di quì all' ánno nuóvo? cene sóno diéci.*

*** When, after the pronouns conjunctive, *mi, ti, ci, vi,* me, thee, us, you; you find the particle *ci* followed by a verb, there is no occasion to express it; example,

He will see me there, *mi vedrà:* he will give thee there, *ti darà.*

We shall see you there, *vi vedrémo;* you will write to us there, *ci scriveréte.*

CHAP. V.

Of PARTICIPLES.

THE Participle (which ought to be called a supine) is a tense of the infinitive, which serves to form the preterperfects and preterpluperfects of all the verbs; as *ho amáto, avévo amáto.*

Amáto, is a participle, and all the verbs in *are* form the participle in *ato;* as *amáto, cantáto, parláto, andáto, dáto, confessáto, adoráto, studiáto,* &c.

Of all the verbs in *are,* the verb *fáre* alone has two *tt's* in the participle, where it makes *fátto,* to distinguish it from *fáto,* signifying *destiny.*

Amáto, is likewise a noun adjective: example, *ùomo amáto, dónna amáta, libri amáti, léttere amáte.*

Some participles of the first conjugation are frequently abridged; as,

Acconcio

Digitized by Google

Acconcio		*acconciáto,*	fitted.
Adórno		*adornáto,*	adorned.
Asciútto		*asciugáto,* or *asciuttáto,*	dried.
Avvézzo		*avvezzáto,*	accustomed.
Cárico		*caricáto,*	laden.
Désto		*destáto,*	awaked.
Férmo		*fermáto,*	stopt.
Gónfio		*gonfiáto,*	swelled.
Guásto		*guastáto,*	spoiled.
Lacéro		*laceráto,*	torn.
Mácero		*maceráto,*	bruised.
Manifésto		*manifestáto,*	manifested.
Mózzo	for	*mozzáto,*	cut.
Nétto		*nettáto,*	cleansed.
Págo		*pagáto,*	paid.
Pésto		*pestáto,*	pounded.
Privo		*privato,*	deprived.
Scémo		*scemáto,*	lessened.
Scóncio		*sconciáto,*	disordered.
Sécco		*seccáto,*	dried.
Stánco		*stancáto,*	wearied.
Tócco		*toccáto,*	touched
Trónco		*troncáto,*	cut off.
Tróvo		*trováto,*	found.
Vólto		*voltáto,*	turned.
Vóto		*votáto,*	emptied.

And several others which the use of authors will point out to you.

The regular verbs ending in *ere*, form the participle in *uto:* as *credúto, ricevúto, temúto, godúto.*

The irregulars in *ere* have the participle in *so*, or *to:* as *prendere, préso; réndere, réso; piángere, piánto; púngere, púnto; léggere, létto; scrivere, scritto.*

The verbs terminated in *ire*, in the infinitive, make their participles in *ito;* as *sentíre, sentito; finire, finito.*

Except *apparire*, which makes *appárso; applaudire, applauso; aprire, apérto; comparire, compárso; dire, détto, morire, mórto: offrire, offerto; venire, venúto.*

*** There are three sorts of participles, namely, active, passive, and absolute.

The

Digitized by Google

The active participles are composed of the verb *avére*: as, *ho amáto, avévo amáto; ho détto, hái détto; ho credúto, ho sentito.*

The passive participles are preceded by the verb *éssere*; as *sóno amáto, essénao credúto,* &c.

The absolute participles are of the same nature as those called *absolute* in Latin, and are composed of the gerunds of the two auxiliary verbs, *having* and *being*; as, having loved, *avéndo amáto*; being loved, *essendo amáto; essendo credúto.*

Having and *being* are often left out in Italian; example,

Having done that, *fatto quésto.*

Having said so, *detto quésto.*

That being done, *fátto quésto.*

The sermon being done, *finíta la prédica.*

*** Observe that the Italians have a particular manner of rendering the adverb *after*, by turning the expression: example,

After he had done, *fátto ch'ébbe.*

After he had spoken, *parláto ch'ébbe.*

After he shall have written his letter, *scritto ch'avrà la súa lettéra.*

After they had supped, *cenáto ch'ebbero.*

See, in the Second Part, the Concord of Participles, where you will find a full solution of the several difficulties relating to that part of speech.

CHAP. VI.

Of ADVERBS.

THE Adverb is that which gives more or less force to the verb. The adverb has the same effect with the verb, as the adjective with the substantive, it explains the accidents and circumstances of the action of the verb.

There are a great many sorts; as adverbs of time, place, and quantity, &c.

Adverbs of time; as, *at present, now, yesterday, to-, always, in the mean time.*

Adverbs

Digitized by Google

Adverbs of place; as, *where, here, from whence, there, from hence, above, below, far, near.*

Adverbs of quantity; as, *how much, how many, so much, much, little, too much.*

*** A great many adverbs are formed from adjectives, changing *o* into *aménte;* as, *sánto, santaménte,* holily: *ricco, riccaménte,* richly; *dótto, dottaménte,* learnedly; *álto, altaménte,* highly.

From adjectives in *e,* we likewise form adverbs, by adding *mente* to them; as,

Costánte, costanteménte, constantly.
Diligénte, diligenteménte, diligently.
Prudénte, prudenteménte, prudently.

*** But if the adjectives happened to end in *le,* we must remove the *e,* and put *mente* in its stead.

Fedéle, fedelménte, faithfully.
Umile, umilménte, humbly.
Tále, talménte, so.

In order to assist the memory of those who are learning the Italian language, I have here collected a great number of adverbs, which, by frequent repetition, may be easily retained, especially those terminated in *mente.*

A Collection of Adverbs.

1.

Abbondanteménte,	abundantly.
Con ragióne, meritaménte,	justly.
A cápo,	at the end, *or* at the head.
A bríglia sciólta,	full speed.
Assolutaménte,	absolutely.
A cavalcióni,	a-straddle.
A dirótte lágrime,	with downright crying.
Adésso, óra, or,	at this time.
Adésso adésso, or óra,	now immediately.
A pie zóppo,	lamely.
A pátti,	upon condition.
Con pátto che,	upon condition that.
Mal volentiéri,	against one's will.

Da

Digitized by Google

Da párte, da bánda,	aside.
Attualménte,	actually.
Appósta,	purposely.
Con pensier di,	in order to.
Addio,	farewell.
Mirabilménte, a maraviglia,	admirably.
Accortaménte, sagaceménte,	cunningly.
In ginocchióni,	kneeling.
Alla smascellàta,	with open mouth.
Leggiadraménte,	agreeably.
Altróve,	elsewhere.
Così,	so.
Così sia,	so be it.
Agevolménte,	easily.
Al experto, al ripáro,	under shelter.
All' oscúro,	in the dark.
In somma, álla fine,	in the end.
In frétta,	in haste.
A lúngo andáre,	at long run.
Amichevolménte,	amicably.
A discrezióne,	at discretion.
Supino,	backwards.
Tacitaménte,	silently.
In dispárte,	apart.
Per il drìtto,	the right way.
Per il rovéscio,	the wrong side outward.
A gára,	in emulation.
A próva,	proof against.
All' improviso,	at unawares.
Sénza la sapúta,	unknowingly.
Sù, sù, or *via, via,*	come, away, away.
Con tempo, con ágio,	at leisure.
Allóra,	then.
Anticaménte,	anciently.
Quási,	pretty near.
Appúnto, giústo,	just so.
Posdimáni, dimán l'áltro,	after to-morrow.
Adésso, óra,	now.
Alla rovéscia,	against the hair *or* grain.
In diétro,	backward.
Malvolentiéri, con rincresciménto,	with regret.

Cioè,

Digitized by Google

Cioè,	to wit.
Abbastánza,	enough.
Brancolóne, tentóne,	groping along.
L'áltro jéri, jéri l'altro,	the day before yesterday.
Prima di,	before that.
Al bélzo,	at the rebound.
In cápo,	at the beginning.
In maniéra alcúna,	by no means.
Alla sprovista,	at unawares.
Di sópra,	above.
Oggì,	to day.
In véce,	instead of.
Prima,	before.
Quánto prima,	as soon as possible.
Anche,	also.
Sì, così,	as, so.
Tánto, così,	as, as much as.
Grúnde quánto,	as great as.
Súbito,	as soon as.
Nel résto,	moreover.
Tánto,	as much as.
Quánto,	as much as.
Altre vólte,	formerly.
Altraménte, se non,	otherwise.
Altróve,	somewhere else.

2.

Laggiù,	below there.
Mólto,	much.
Via più, mólto più,	much more.
Béne,	well.
Présto, mólto présto,	quickly.
Via più présto,	very soon, much sooner, or quicker.
Rigidaménte, aspraménte,	rudely.
Bestialménte,	brutishly.

3.

Or sù, via,	come away.
Via dúnque,	come along.

Sta

Digitized by Google

Sta mattína,	this morning.
Sta nótte,	this night.
Sta séra, quésta séra,	this evening.
Fin a tánto, in tánto,	in the mean time.
Cérto, sicúro,	certainly.
Básta,	it is enough.
Cioè,	that is to say.
Per ciò,	it is therefore.
Caldaménte,	warmly:
Cáro, mólto cáro,	dear, very dear.
Chiaraménte,	clearly.
Quánto,	how much.
Quánto, quánta, quánti, quánte,	how many.
Cóme, siccóme,	as.
Cóme,	how?
Di contínuo, continuaménte,	continually.
Correttaménte,	correctly.
Quésta vólta, adésso,	now.
Di primo láncio,	all of a sudden.
Animosaménte, coraggiosaménte,	continually.
Sordidaménte,	sordidly.
Crudelménte,	cruelly.
Di pói, di quà innánzi,	hereafter.
Per l'addiétro, quì avánti,	heretofore.
Di sótto, quì sótto,	hereunder.
Dì sópra, quì sópra,	hereupon.

4.

Súbito, di bélla prima,	at first.
D'áltra párte,	from another place.
Pericolósaménte,	dangerously.
Davvantúggio, di più,	over and above.
A cáso,	by chance.
Tánto ménо,	so much the less.
Tánto piú che,	so much the more.
Imperochè,	whereas.
Sinceraménte,	sincerely.
Per témpo, a buón'ora,	early.
Di quà a diéci ánni,	in ten years.
Di gran lúnga,	by far.
Sù, in piédi,	up, up.

Per

Digitized by Google

Per téma che,	for fear that.
Sin dái fondaménti, affátto,	from top to bottom.
Fuóri,	abroad.
Già, digià,	already.
Quindi,	from hence.
Dománi, dimáni,	to-morrow.
Domattina,	to-morrow morning.
Della medesima maniéra,	just so.
Dall' úna, e dall'áltra párte,	on both sides.
Di sálto,	at one jump.
In óltre, di piú, oltració,	moreover.
Dópo, dóppo,	since.
Da jéri in quà,	since yesterday.
Da che témpo? dópo quándo?	since when?
Da quel témpo in quà,	since that time.
Dacchè, dépo chè,	since.
Di che sórte? in che maniéra?	after what manner?
Ultimaménte,	lastly *or* lately.
Diétro,	behind.
In diétro,	backward.
Fin' adésso,	till now.
Súbito che,	as soon as.
Ormái,	hereafter.
Sótto, di sótto,	under.
Sópra, di sópra,	upon.
Di seguíto,	in continuance.
Di quándo in quándo,	from time to time.
Avánti, innánzi,	before.
Per l'avenire,	henceforwards.
Aschiéna d'ásino,	sharply pointed.
Dónde,	from whence.
Doppiaménte, falsaménte,	doubly.
Da párte a párte,	through and through.
Alméno,	at least.

5.

Sfacciataménte,	impudently.
Ugualménte,	equally.
Ancóra, ánche,	again, yet, already.
Rotolóne,	smoothly.
	Insiéme,

Digitized by Google

Insiême,	together.
Dipói, dópo,	afterwards.
All' improviso,	unawares.
In sospéso, in dúbbio,	in suspence.
Intieraménte, affátto,	entirely.
Intórno,	about.
Indárno,	in vain.
Intórno, circa,	about.
Capricciosaménte, perdutaménte, all'eccésso,	desperately.
Spaventevolménte,	dreadfully.
Giustaménte,	justly.
Stranaménte,	strangely.
A pósta, a bélla posta, a béllo stúdio,	on purpose.

6.

Facilméntе, agevolméntе,	easily.
Per mancánza di,	for want of.
Fissaménte,	stedfastly.
Pazzaménte,	madly.
Mólto.	very.
Liberaménte,	freely.

7.

Via, via, a vói, a vói,	make way, out of the way.
Grátis,	gratis.
Póco,	little.
Di cáso pensáto,	wilfully.

8.

Arditaménte,	boldly.
Altaménte,	highly.
Oimè! nimè! ahi lásso!	alas!
Feliceménte,	happily.
Iéri,	yesterday.
Iér séra,	last night.
Vergognosaménte,	shamefully.
Fuóri,	out.

9.

Mái,	never.
Quì, quá,	here, there.
	Súbito,

Digitized by Google

Súbito,	immediately.
Appúnto,	exactly.
Sin, fin, insin, infín,	until.
Per fin dóve?	how far?

10.

Lì, là; Non lúngi di là,	there; not far from hence.
Vilménte,	basely.
Lontáno, lúngi,	far.
E un pézzo,	it is a great while.

11.

Adésso, óra,	now.
Mále,	ill.
Malgrádo mio,	in spite of me.
Guái a,	woe be to.
Anche, áncora, eziandío,	also.
Nel medésimo témpo,	at the same time.
Méglio,	better.
Mediánte,	provided that.
Minóre,	least.

12.

Non,	not.
Nondiméno, nulladiméno,	nevertheless.
Liberaménte,	freely.
Nè, neither; *nè ánche,*	nor also.
Nò, signóre, nò,	no, sir.
Nonostánte,	notwithstanding.

13.

Sì,	yes.
Sì,	it is.
Non si,	it is not.
Dóve, óve,	where.
Oltre,	besides.
Scopertaménte, apertaménte,	openly.

14.

Zitto! zitto,	hush! not a word.
A cáso,	by chance.
	A ménte,

Digitized by Google

A ménte,	by heart.
Di quà,	on this side.
Di là,	on that side.
Vérbi grázia, per esémpio,	for example.
Péro,	therefore.
Póco, a little; *ógni póco, un tantino,*	never so little.
Fórse,	perhaps.
Più,	more.
In quánt'a,	as for.
Però,	however.
Quási,	almost.

15.

Quándo,	when.
In quánt'a me,	as for me.
Alle vólte,	sometimes.
Alquánto,	somewhat.
Páce, péri,	quits.
Comúnque sía,	however.

16.

Dirádo,	seldom.
Scambievolménte,	reciprocally.
In sómma,	in short.
Niénte,	nothing.

17.

Saviaménte,	wisely.
Senza dúbbio,	without doubt.
Secóndo,	according.
Sossópra, alla rinfúsa, confusaménte,	topsy-turvy.
Vérso la séra,	towards the evening.
Sta séra, questa séra,	this evening.
Abbastánza,	sufficiently.

18.

Tánto,	so much.
Ogni póco, un tantino,	never so little.
Adésso, póco fà, or'óra,	presently.
Or quéllo, or quéllo,	sometimes one and sometimes the other.
Tárdo,	late.

Tróppo,

Digitized by Google

Tróppo,	too much.
Présto, quick: *così présto,*	so soon.
Sémpre,	always.
Affátto,	altogether.
Ad un trátto,	all of a sudden.
Adágio!	softly! softly!

19.

Présto,	quick.
Ecco,	behold.
Volentiéri,	willingly.
Veraménte,	truly.

20

Ci, or *vi,*	there, to it, &c.

CHAP. VII.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

THE Preposition is a part of speech prefixed to the articles, nouns, pronouns and verbs, as has been mentioned in the Introduction.

Every preposition requires some case after it, as you will see in the following collection.

Gen. *Per rispétto di,* because of.
Per rispétto vóstro, or *di voi,* on your account.
Per rispétto mio, or *di me,* on my account,
Dat. *Ir qúant'a all',* or *állo,* with respect to.
D' intórno a. Gen. *all'intórno di,* round the.
Gen. Acc. *dópo* and *dóppo,* after.
Gen. *Diétro,* behind.
Gen. and Dat. *in diétro,* behind.
Gen. *Aláto, vicíno di,* by the side of; or *a* Dative.
Gen. and Abl. *Di là del* or *dal,* on that side of.
Gen. and Abl. *Di quà del* or *dal,* on that side of.
Acc. *Avánti.* Gen. *prima,* before,
Gen. *Prima di me,* before me.
Avánti vói, prima di vói, before me.

Acc.

Digitized by Google

Acc. *Con*, with.
Gen. Dat. *In mézzo del, in mézzo al*, in the middle of.
Gen. *Appiè délla*, at the feet of the.
Apprésso di, near to.
Gen. and Dat. *All' intórno del, intórno al*, round the.

Da, in cása, at.
Gen. and Abl. *Dal, dállo, in cása del*, at the.
Dálla, in cása délla, at the.
Gen. and Acc. *Cóntra del, cóntra'l*, against the.
Cóntra me, cóntra di me, against me.

Acc. *In*, in.
Nel, néllo, nélla, in the.
Frà dúe giórni, in two days.
Abl. *Di quà dal*, on this side of the.
Di là dal, on that side of the.
Dat. and Acc. *Déntro al or nel*, within the.
Gen. *Fuóri del*, within the.
Dat. and Acc. *Diétro al, diétro'l*, behind the.
Gen. and Dat. *Sótto del, sótto al*, under the.
Gen. and Acc. *Sópra del, sópra'l*, upon the.

In, before a noun, is expressed in Italian by *in*.

Dat. *Di nascósto al suo pádre*, unknown to his father.
Acc. *Frà, trà*, between.
Gen. and Acc. *Vérso di me*, or *me*, towards me.
Acc. *Incirca*, round about, thereabout.

Acc. *Eccétto'l*, except the.
Gen. *Fuóri del*, without the.
Gen. *A láto délla mía cása*, close to my house; or *a láto a cása mia*, Dat.
Gen. Dat. Acc. *Raśente del, al, il múro*, close to the wall.
Dat. *Sin, fin, insín, infín*, until.
Gen. Acc. Abl. *Lúngi* or *lontáno délla cósa*, or *la cása*, or *dálla cása*, far from the house.
Lontáno, lúngi, far.
Gen. Dat. Acc. *Lúngo del, al, il fiúme*, along the river.

Acc.

Digitized by Google

Acc. *Per*, by *or* for.
Gen. dat. acc. *Présso, vicino*, near.
Gen. dat. acc. *Sénza, sénza di, del*, or *délla*, without.
Secóndo'l, according to.
Gen. dat. acc. *Sótto la távola*, or *délla*, under the table.
Sópra, upon.
Dat. acc. *Circa all'affáre, l'affáre*, concerning the business.
Ablative. *In quánt'al*, concerning.
Gen. and acc. *Vérso'l, vérso del, al, il*, towards the.
Gen. dat. acc. *Dirimpétto del, al, il*, over against the.

CHAP. VII.

Of CONJUNCTIONS.

THE Conjunctions serve to connect the phrases together; most of the words terminated in *che* and *que* are conjunctions; as, *benchè, ánche, adúnque*. There are others of a different sort, as you will find in the following collection:

Con pátto che,	upon condition that.
A'nzi, al contrário,	on the contrary.
Acciò che, acciochè,	to the end that.
Con tútto ciò,	notwithstanding all that.
An'che,	also.
Benchè,	although.
Perchè, imperochè,	for.
Conciossiacosachè,	whereas.
Adúnque,	then.
Perciochè,	forasmuch as.
Ancóra,	still, yet.
Quantúnque,	although.
In sómma,	all fine.

Digitized by Google

In ólire,	besides, over and above.
Di maniéra che,	so that.
In quánto,	as.
E & ed,	and.
Ma,	but.
Nientediméno, / *Nondiméno* / *Nulladiméno,*	nevertheless.
Ne,	nor.
Nè ánch'io, nè mén'io, nemmén'io,	nor I neither.
Nè méno,	nor this.
Nonostánte che,	notwithstanding that.
O, ovéro, oppúre,	or.
Ovéro,	or else.
Perchè,	because.
In cáso chè,	in case that.
Però,	therefore.
Datochè,	suppose that.
Perchè?	why?
Però,	notwithstanding.
Purchè,	provided that.
Piú tósto che,	rather than.
Quándo ánche,	though.
Benchè, sebbéne, con tútto che,	although that.
Se,	if.
Cósi,	as.
Stánte che,	seeing that.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

Of INTERJECTIONS.

The last part of Speech.

AN interjection is an expression of affection or passion, introduced among the other parts of speech; as,

Adjúto! ajúto!	help! help!
Brávo! brávo!	O brave!
Al fuóco,	fire! fire!
All'ármi!	to arms!
Buóno! buóno!	good! good!
Ánimo, corággio!	come, cheer up!
Oh! uh! puh!	fie! fie!
A vói! a vói!	stand away!
Alto!	halt!
Ohime! ahi lásso!	woe is me! O lack!
Zitto! zitto!	hush! peace!
Silénzio,	silence!

THE END OF THE FIRST PART.

Digitized by Google

THE

ITALIAN MASTER.

PART II.

THE Second Part contains Eight Treatises, extracted from the best authors, and particularly from those who have written on the purity of the Italian language.

I. *Of the Italian Orthography.*

II. *Of the Italian Accent.*

III. *Of the Italian Syntax.*

IV. *Remarks on some verbs and prepositions.*

V. *Of composition, and the rules to write and speak Italian well.*

VI. *Of poetical licences, and of the different synonymous names of the Gods.*

VII. *Of improper and obsolete words.*

VIII. *Of expletives, compound words, capitals, and stops.*

FIRST

Digitized by Google

FIRST TREATISE.

CHAP. I.

Of ORTHOGRAPHY.

THE Italian Orthography has this convenience, that all the words are written in the same manner as they are pronounced.

*** Observe as a general rule, that you must double the consonants in the beginning of compound words; as, *abbáttere, affamáre, appoggiáre, oppresso, difficile, differire, offendere, raccógliere, rastrelláre, raddoppiáre.*

*** They write *diffendere* and *difendere*, but *difesa* ought to be written with a single *f*. See *Lon. Dólce, capitoli del raddoppiaménto delle consonánti.*

You must also double the *g*, when the vowels *io* and *ia*, which come after it, make but one syllable; as, *appóggio, lóggia, pióggia, Mággio, rággio*; a support, a lodge, rain, May, a ray. When the vowels *io* and *ia* constitute two syllables, or when the letter *i* is pronounced harder than in the preceeding examples, you must not double the *g*; as, *ágio*, easy; *privilégio*, privilege; *malvágio*, bad. See *Dólce, Buon Mattéi*, and *Bártoli.*

The letter *g* is also doubled in the infinitive of verbs, and in all their tenses, when they have a vowel before *gere*; as, *léggere, réggere, friggere*: but if there be a consonant before *g*, then *g* remains single; as, *fingere, pingere, pérgere.*

Those words which the English begin with a *j* consonant, that is, when an i followed by a vowel, as Jesus, just, judge, are written with a g by the Italians, in order to render their pronunciation more delicate; as, *Giesù, giústo, giúdice.*

Capéllo, with a single *p*, signifies hair.

Cappéllo, with a double *pp*, signifies a hat.

Digitized by Google

There is also another difference between those two words; that, in the former, the letter *e* has a close sound, and in the latter, open.

Dópo we often find with one *p* in verse, and in prose with two, as *dóppo*. But now we write indifferently, *dópo*, or *dóppo* in prose.

Sol has two significations: when preceded by an article, it is a substantive, and signifies the sun; *il sol, del sol, al sol*, for *il sóle, del sóle, al sóle*.

Sol, when it is an adjective, or without an article, signifies *alone*, or sometimes *only*.

Súol has likewise two significations, when preceded by an article it is a noun, and signifies the earth: as, *il súól*, or *suólo*, &c.

Suól, a verb, signifies he is wont; as, *suól venire*, he is wont to come.

Modern authors write, *grázia, azióne, divozióne*, instead of *grátia, attióne, divótione*.

Z is put single, when preceded by a consonant; as, *speránza, licénza*: but it must be doubled between two vowels; as, *Bellézza, pézzo, nózze*, except *Lázaro* and a few other words.

N. B. I shall now give my opinion in regard to the modern orthography, and repeat what I have said in the beginning of this grammar, that the Italians never make use of the grave accent, but where it is necessary to distinguish words, and to fix the pronunciation: therefore we have placed it only on words marked in the introduction, and on some others which you will find in the second treatise, on the Italian accent.

We do not double the letter *z*, when it is in the midst of three vowels, the first of which immediately following the *z*, is an *i*: therefore it would be wrong to write *azzióne*, action; *benedizzione*, benediction; *dizzionário*, dictionary; *pigrizzia*, sloth; *notizzia*, notice; but *azióne, benedizióne, dizionário, pigrízia, notízia*, &c. except *pázzia*, folly, and a few more.

Piázza, a square, being a word that deviates from the above rule, is spelled, like a great many more of the like quality, with a double *z*.

The

Digitized by Google

The letter *x* before *c* is changed into *c*: example, to excite, *eccitáre*, excellency, *eccellénza*; and when it does not happen to be before the *e*, it is sometimes changed into a double *s*, and sometimes into a single *s*: as, to exalt, *esaltáre*; graciously to hear, *esaudíre*, &c.; but it is doubled in all the other syllables; as, the maxim, *la mássima*, Alexander, *Alessándro*, &c.

A great many of the Academicians of the Crusca, chuse to put the letter *s* before the vowel *i* where the common orthography uses the letter *c*: for instance, instead of pronouncing and writing *Fransése*, French; *Francia*, France; *pronunciáre*, to pronounce, &c. they write and pronounce *Franzése*, *Fránzia*, *pronunziáre*, &c. and I approve of this orthography sometimes myself.

We write the masculine relative plural *li* with a *g* when followed by a vowel; example, I have some books, and I purchased them at Frankfort fair; *Ho libri, e gliho compráti alla fiéra di Fráncoforto.*

It is better to write *cherico* than *chiérico*, *cirusico*, than *cerúsceo* or *chirúrgo*, a surgeon. Many of the moderns have such an aversion to the letter *h*, not only in the beginning, but in the middle of words, that they leave it out wherever they can, so as to pronounce and write, for instance, *occio*, an eye, and *occi*, eyes, instead of *ócchio*, and *ócchi*; but this orthography and pronunciation seems to me to be somewhat too confined.

The syllables *do* and *re*, in the beginning of English words, generally become *di* and *ri* in the beginning of Italian; as, to destroy, *distrúggere*; to renew, *rinovàre*, &c.

It was formerly the custom to write several adverbs and prepositions separate; which now make but one word; but they double the first consonant of the latter word, which is joined to the former; for instance, *gia che*, since, *giacchè*; *in tánto*, *fra tánto*, in the mean while: *intánto*, *frattánto*; *a cio che*, *a fin che*, to the end that; *acchiochè*, *affineché*, or *affinchè*; *si cóme*, as, *siccóme*; *a dósso il suo nimico*, upon his enemy, *adósso al suo nimico*; *ólira a ciò*, besides, *oltracciò*; *dinánzi al*

Digitized by Google

giúdice, before the judge, *dinnánsi al giúdice; ùomo da bène*, an honest man, *ùomo dabbène.*

After is expressed by *dippói* with the verbs, and by *dópo*, with a single *p*, before the nouns.

It is true nevertheless, is elegantly rendered in Italian by *egli è certaménte véro*, and this *egli* is a kind of adverb.

Non v'é scúse, signifies there is no room for excuse; and this is altogether an Italian idiom.

We express *several* by *párecchi* for the masculine, and by *parécchie* for the feminine: example, several teachers of a language, *parécchi maéstri di lingua;* several women, *parécchie donne. For which*, or *wherefore*, is expressed in Italian by *per lo che*, or *per la qual cósa*, or *perciò.*

Ne', with the apostrophe, signifies *in the* in the plural, when we are speaking of the masculine gender: example, in the gardens, *ne'* or *néi giardíni.*

To forget, is rendered by the verb *dimenticársi*, and not by *scordársi*, which is applicable only to instruments of music, when we want to signify their being out of tune.

As there is no future tense, no second preterimperfect in the Italian language, that terminates in *aro* and *arei*, except *sarò*, I shall be, and *sarêi*, I should be; *starò*, I shall remain, *staréi*, I should remain; *farò*, I will do, *farêi*, I should do; *darò*, I shall give; *daréi*, I should give; *saprò*, I shall know, *saprêi*, I should know; hence we neither say nor write *amarò* and *amaréi*, &c. but *amerò*, and *ameréi.*

The Italians are fond of placing the particles *si*, *vi*, or the relative *ne*, and such like, after the persons of verbs marked with a grave accent; but then they drop that grave accent, and repeat the consonant of those particles: for example, my brother will repent, *mio fratèllo pentirassi;* I will give you an inkstand, *darovvi un calamàjo*; the king has given an hundred thousand livres to the city of Paris, and he will give fifty to the town of Lyons, *il Rè ha dáto cènto mila lire álla cittá di Parigi, e daranne cinquánta a quélla di Liône.*

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

Of the APOSTROPHE.

THE apostrophe is a mark made like a comma, inserted between two letters, to denote the retrenchment of a vowel; as, *l'amóre, l'ánimo, l'onóre, l'uómo.*

The Italians still observe the rule of old authors, never to make use of the apostrophe, but when it renders the pronunciation more delicate; and not so frequently as those who have but a superficial knowledge of the language.

The apostrophe is generally placed after the articles, if they precede a word, commencing with a vowel; as, *l'ánime, dell'ánime; l'ánima, dell'ánima; l'onóre, dell'onóre,* &c.

See what we have said concerning the apostrophe, treating of the articles, p. 8, and 39.

We sometimes meet with *lo'mpéro*, for *l'impéro*; *lo'nsidie* for *l'insidie*; but this ought rather to be avoided than imitated.

*** Sometimes there is an elision of the article *il*, by cutting off its first letter, which is quite the reverse of other elisions, by which we drop the vowel at the end of words; and when the article *il* happens to follow a word terminating in a vowel, the *i* of the article *il* is cut off, and the preceding word continues entire, without any abbreviation; as, *sopra'l tétto*, for *sopra il tétto.*

E'l più garbáto, él più cortése, for *il.*

Tutta'l mónda sa, for *tutto il mŏnda sa.*

Fra'l sì e'l nò, for *fra il*, &c.

Su'l mezzo dì, for *sù il*, &c.

Se'l capitáno cománda, è ragionévole che'l soldáto ubbidísca, for *se il* and *che il.*

N. B. Observe, in regard to this elision of the article *il*, the best modern authors constantly make use of it;

Digitized by Google

and the reason they allege is, that the *i* has a harsher sound than any of the other vowels.

Sometimes we make an elision of the article *le*, even before words beginning with a consonant, and the two words coalesce into one; as,

nol so, *sel crede*, *vel prométto*, } for { *non lo so*, *se lo créde*, *ve lo prométto*.

The apostrophe is also put after *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *di*, *si*, *da*, *ne*, when they precede a vowel, or the letter *h*; as, *m'amáte*, *t'ascólto*, *l'inténdo*, *s'impória*, *n'avéte*, *s'intènde*, *v'ingánno*, *l'ánima*, *d'António*, *n'árde*, *n'avrò*, *nh'ái*, *n'hánno*.

Words abbreviated are written with an apostrophe; as, *ed' signóri*, for *déi signóri*; *pié* for *piéde*; *me'* for *méglio* in poetry; *vo'* for *cói* or *cólli*.

CHAP. III.

Of the words that must be retrenched.

YOU must retrench the last syllable of the subsequent five words, *úno*, *bélło*, *gránde*, *sánto*, *quéllo*, *búono*, when they precede a word beginning with a consonant; example, *un giórno*, *bel giardíno*, *san Piétro*, *quel páne*, *buón libro*; and not *uno giórno*, *bello giardíno*, &c.

If the subsequent word commences with a vowel, or an *h*, then you only cut off the final vowel, and put an apostrophe; example, *un'ámica*, *bell'aspétto*, *grand'ingégno*, *sant' António*, *quell'uomo*, *buón'aspétto*.

Before the feminine nouns, *gránde* is the only one of those words that we abridge, both in the singular and the plural; as, *una cása*, *bella cámera*, *gran famíglia*, *santa María*, *quélla*, *signora*, *bélle cáse*, *grán ricchézze*, *sánte eltése*, *quélla virtù*.

The masculine plurals of the six preceding words are, *bélli*, *grándi*, *sánti*, *quélli*, *buóni*.

The

Digitized by Google

The feminine plurals are, *úne, bélle, grán, sánte, quélle, buóne,* without any other abbreviation than of *grán:* and even this sometimes makes *grándi* before nouns commencing with a vowel; as, *grándi ánime,* or *ánime, grándi.*

You may also retrench the final vowel of the words that have one of these four letters, *l, m, n, r,* for their penultima.

N. B. But with this rule, that, in making the retrenchment, you do not put an apostrophe, except when the subsequent words begin with a vowel, or they happen to be some persons of the verbs; as, *il ciel' oscúro; il signór' onórato; amiám', áman; crediám', crédon';* and this is in order to conform to the general rule, which is, to put an apostrophe whenever there is an elision of one vowel before another; as,

Il carnovál passáto, quál signóre, instead of *il carnovále* and *quále.*

Andiám' presto, for *andiámo présto.*

Aman' per l'onde i velóci delfini, instead of *ámano.*

Fier grato, cuór generóso, instead of *fiére* and *cuóre.*

Those words, that have *m* or *n* for their penultima, are not so frequently retrenched as those that have *l* or *r.* If we would be directed by the opinion of the best authors, the following chapter would be sufficient for our purpose.

N. B. When a masculine or feminine article comes after the prepositions *per,* we frequently retrench the *r* of the *per,* and put an apostrophe before the article: as, *pe'l, pe'lo,* or *pello,* without an apostrophe, for the masculine, and *pe'la* or *pélla* for the feminine; example, we do every thing for the world and for our reputation; but scarce any thing to extirpate vice out of our souls; *si fa túlto pe'l móndo, e pe'la* or *pélla riputazióne; ma quási núlla pe'lo,* or *péllo, sradicaménto del vizio dall'ánima.*

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

Of the words that must not be retrenched.

WE must never retrench the word which terminates a sentence, or which precedes a comma, or any other point; therefore, we must not write v. s. *ha una bélla man, chi è quel signó ? quell'uómo è grán;* but v. s. *ha úna bellá máno, chi è qual signóre ? quell'uómo è grándę; il libro è buóno*; and so of the rest.

Neither must we retrench the words terminated in *a*, when they are before a consonant, except *óra* an adverb, and *ancóra*; for we may write, *or sú signóri, ancór non viéne;* but it would be wrong to write, *úna picciol cása, úna bel máno,* instead of *úna bélla máno, úna picciola cása.*

Accented words must never be abbreviated; as, *farò, dirò.*

In not retrenching, in the plural, the words that have an *l* before the last letter, you are warranted by the authority of the best authors; therefore you must write *amábili persóne, fávole, ben trovàte, paróle scélte, nóbili cavaliéri.* The singular number is more apt to admit of this abbreviation.

If you mean to write correctly, you must never abridge *Apóllo, affánno, tóllo, dúro, ingánno, pégno, oscúro, sostégno, stráni, vélo*; therefore you must not write *Apól, affán, cól, dur,* &c.

*** The words beginning with an *s*, followed by a consonant, oblige the preceding word to terminate in a vowel; as, *bélło stúdio, gránde státo, quéllo spirito, éssere státo*; and not *bel stúdio, grán státo, quél spirito, ésser, státo.*

*** Observe,

Digitized by Google

*** Observe, that if the preceding word cannot terminate in a vowel, that which commences with an *s*, followed by a consonant, takes an *i* before it; as, *per isdégno*, *in iscuóla*, instead of *per sdégno*, *in scuóla*. See *Ferránte*, *Longobárdi*, *Lod. Dólce*, and *Bentivóglio*.

N. B. In the beginning of a period, or when the sense is interrupted by a colon, or semicolon, we may omit the insertion of the vowel *i*.

We never retrench the *e* of *se*, signifying *if*, except it be followed by another *e*: for instance, we do not say *s'ámo lo stúdio*, if I love study, but *se ámo lo stúdio*. On the contrary, we do not say, *se esercitásse l'árte*, if he exercised the art, but *s'esercitásse l'árte*, by reason that *esercitásse* begins with an *e*: example, I have seen my mother, and given her a gold snuff-box; *ho visto mia' mádre, e l'ho dáto una scátola d'óro*: or, he loveth Anthony, *ám' António*. If we were to cut off the *e* from *le*, in the former sentence, we should not know whether this *l'* was in the accusative or dative, in the singular or plural; and if we were to retrench the final *a* from the word *áma*, we should not be able to tell whether it was the first or third person of the present indicative, or the subjunctive, or the third person of the preter-definite. You must therefore write, without any elision of the vowel, *ho visto mia mádre, e le ho dáto*, &c. *áma António*, and the rest in the same manner.

You must not retrench the *e* in *che*, when the following word begins with an *i*, for it is the *i* that ought rather to be retrenched: but when this *i* is the plural of the definite article, which does not admit of this elision, then you are to pronounce the *che* and *i* both together, as if it were only one word: example, God grant the times may be good, and the winds be not very high next winter; then, if my brother Anthony is well, and my cousin Harry is in town, I will go to Paris: *Dio vóglia che'l témpo sia buóno, e che i vénti non sieno gagliárdi 'l vérno prossimo; allóra, se António mio fratéllo starà béne, e s' Enrico mio cugíno sarà in cittá, andró a Parigi.*

We

Digitized by Google

We never retrench the *i* from *ci*, us, before the vowels *a* and *o*; because it would render the pronunciation too harsh: hence we do not say, for example, *il príncipe c' avéva promésso cénto scudi*, the prince had promised us a hundred crowns, but *ci avéva*; V. S. *c'onóra*, you do us honour, but *ci onóra*.

It would be extremely proper, if, before words beginning with the letter *z*, we were not to retrench the vowel, so as not to say, *buón zúcchero*, good sugar; *gran zázzera*, a large head of hair; but *buóno zúcchero*, *gránde zázzera*.

In Dante, Petrarch, Ariosto, Guarini, Tasso, Marini, and all the poets, we find several tenses of the verbs abridged. See farther on this head, in the treatise of poetic licenses, where I have ranged them in their alphabetical order.

SECOND TREATISE.

Of the Italian Accent.

THE accent, which is the very soul of pronunciation, is the stronger or weaker elevation of the voice on particular syllables, and the manner of pronouncing them, shorter or longer.

I intend to speak here only of the accent which the Italians make use of in writing, and which we find in their printed books.

The Italians, indeed, are acquainted with two accents, but they make use of one only, namely, the grave, which is figured by an oblique stroke from the left to the right, after this manner (`). It is put only on the last syllable of some words; as, *amò*, when it happens to be a verb, as, *parlerò*.

N. B. The

Digitized by Google

N. B. The other accent, called acute, is a contrary mark to that of the grave, as may be seen in the following words *ámano*, *amávano*, &c. The Italians never note it down; so that if we sometimes meet with it in books that teach the principles of their language, as is now the case in this grammar, it is with a view of conveying thereby a just idea of the Italian pronunciation.

CHAP. I.

Of the grave Accent.

THE Italian nouns in *tà*, which in English terminate in *ty*, and in Latin in *tas*, are marked with a grave accent; as, *purità*, *castità*, *santità*, *maestà*, *gravità*, &c. These words form the plural in *tà*, without any alteration.

But they do not place an accent on the *a* in *visita*, because it does not come from a Latin word in *tas*: neither are we to lean upon the last syllable; and, moreover, it makes the plural *visite*, and not *visita*.

The Italians also place a grave accent on nouns terminating in *u*; as, *virtù*, *servitù*, &c.

Monosyllables ending in *o*, or *a*, according to some grammarians, are accented; as, *dò*, *dà*; *fò*, *fà*: *hò*, *hà*; *può*, *sà*; *stò*, *stà*. But I should prefer the opinion of those who do not accent them, because a monosyllable ever preserves the same quantity, whether it be accented or not; so that the accent, in that case, only serves to distinguish one word from another; as, *dà*, he gives, from the indefinite article *da*.

They likewise put the grave accent on the first and third person singular of the future tense; as, *canterò*, *goderò*, *darò*, *canterà*, *goderà*, *darà*.

*** Observe,

Digitized by Google

*** Observe that we may transpose the monosyllables which we happen to find before verbs accented on the last: and then we must double the first letter of the monosyllable, and drop the accent of the verb; as, I have them, *holle*, for *le ho*: I will do it, *faróllo*, for *lo farò*; he shewed me, *mostrómmi*, for *mi mostrò*; he heard me, *sentímmi*, for *mi sentì*.

The manner of transposition, after the tenses of accented verbs, is very common in poetry.

The verbs are marked with a grave accent in the third person singular of the preter-definite, whenever the first person terminates in two vowels; as, *amái*, *amò*; *credéi*, *credè*; *dormj*, *dormì*..

If the first person of the preter-definite does not terminate in two vowels, there is no accent on the third.

For which reason we put no accent on the last syllable of *vinse*, *árse*, *prése*, *diéde*, *féce*, *sétte*, which, in the first person, make *vínsi*, *ársi*, *prési*, *diédi*, *féci*, *sétti*.

N. B. The Italians also put a grave accent on *dì*, a day; and on *dì*, the imperative of the verb *dire*, to say; on *è*, it is; on *lì* and *là*, there; to shew that these words are to be pronounced with greater emphasis, and with a somewhat longer pause; as also to distinguish the above-said two *dì's* from *di* the genitive indefinite, which is sounded without a pause at all: they likewise mark a grave accent on *lì*, there, to distinguish it from *li*, the relative masculine plural; as, I promise three crowns, and I give them, *prométto tre scúdi, e li do*; and on *là*, to distinguish it from *la*, the relative feminine singular; as the princess writes a letter, and causes it to be put into the post: *la principéssa scrive una lettera, e la fa métter' alla pósta*.

The grave accent is also put on *quì* and *quà*, here; on *costì*, and *costà*, there; on *nò*, no; *giù*, below; *sù*, up; *più*, more; *così*, so, or thus; *sì*, yes; because those words are to be sounded somewhat stronger, and, in some measure, with a greater pause; but, on the other monosyllables, they do not mark a grave accent, for it would be entirely superfluous, as they are always pronounced in the same manner.

We

Digitized by Google

We therefore do not accent *da*, from the ablative indefinite: *a*, to; *ma*, but; *ne*, neither, in; *re*, king; *o*, or; and others of the like nature; because no confusion or obscurity can arise from thence, as you will perceive by the following example; particularly with respect to *da* and *a*, the two monosyllables which seem to be somewhat equivocal, but are so by no means.

Alexander gives his word as an honest man, and he has no difficulty to give it to Peter and Paul, or to any other person.

Alessándro dà la sùa paróla da galánt' uómo, e non ha verúna difficoltà di párlar a Piétro ed a Páolo, o a chi che sia.

You see therefore, very clearly, that in this example the first *da* is the verb, the second is the ablative definite; and that the first *ha* is in like manner a verb, being particularly written with an *h*, and that the other *a's* are datives indefinite.

CHAP. II.

Of the Pronunciation of Nouns.

WE have mentioned, in the preceding chapter, that the Italians sometimes make use of the grave accent, and particularly in the examples above given; but as to what concerns the acute accent, we may venture to affirm, that it is used by no modern Italian, at least that understands his own language: because without insisting that it would be impossible for the printer, though ever so exact, to mark it wherever it was wanting, it would occasion such a strange embarrassment and confusion in the letters, that it would be scarce possible to read them. In order therefore to avoid the frequent repetition of the grave and acute accents, I have discovered a method which to me appears very easy and clear; and which will be of great use

Digitized by Google

use to such as are desirous of learning this language, and even to the Italians themselves. But, before I enter upon an explanation of the particular rules which are ranged here in an alphabetical order, you must pay the greatest attention to the general rules contained in the five following numbers.

No. I.

All nouns must be pronounced either short or long; and their short or long sound depends entirely on their penultimate syllable, that is, the last but one; for all the other syllables are to be pronounced steadily and uniformly, that is, without making use of any brevity, except these two nouns, *aúgure*, an augur; *claúsola*, a clause; which have the antepenultima (that is, the last but two) short; and some others mentioned in the exception of the letter *c*.

In order to know in what manner you are to sound this penultimate syllable, observe the penultimate letter of the noun you want to pronounce, and look for that letter as ranged here below in its alphabetical order, where you will see the rule with its exceptions; as, for example, if you want to know whether the noun *rammárico*, regret, ought to be pronounced short or long, you must look for the letter *c*, which is the penultimate letter of the noun, *rammárico*, marked here below in the alphabetical order; you must also examine the exception; and if you do not find it there, then you are to conform to the rule which says, all nouns, that have the letter *c* for their penultima, are pronounced short.

No. II.

Nouns of two syllables have no rule at all, because they are subject to neither brevity, nor length; except a very small number, which will be found in their proper places of exception. I shall give you here, as a general rule, all such nouns as have two consonants before the final vowel, as *macilénte*, *cangiaménto*, make the penultimate syllable long, of whatsoever number of syllables

Digitized by Google

syllables they consist; except a few, which you will find under the letters *r* and *t*.

No. III.

Neither is there any need of a rule for nouns that have a grave accent marked on the last vowel; it is sufficient to know how to pronounce one of them properly; for example, *caritá*; and you will be capable of pronouncing *calamitá*, *veritá*, *virtú*, *bontá*, and all others of the same kind, because you are to sound them all with the same degree of quickness.

No. IV.

All feminine nouns follow the rule of the masculines, from which they are derived. All the plurals follow the rule of their singulars, and compound nouns those of their simples.

No. V.

There are some nouns which the Italians pronounce as they please, that is, either long or short; and of these I have mentioned some in the exceptions to the rules. With regard to poetic nouns, we must be directed by the measure of the verse; for poets have a licence to abbreviate and lengthen a great many words. You pronounce according to the custom of the country, when they happen to be all barbarous and foreign names, and all of Hebrew and Greek derivation. Likewise the proper names of persons, families, towns, provinces, &c. Remember the proverb, *In paése, ove vái, usá che trovi.*

Let us now proceed to the particular rules.

A.

Nouns that have the letter *a* for their penultima, are in a very small number among the Tuscans, and you must pronounce them long; as, *Archelão, Nicolão, Stanisláo.*

B. Nouns

Digitized by Google

B.

Nouns that have the letter *b* for their penultima, are also in a very small number, and must be pronounced short; as *Árabo, Bárnaba, Célibe, Incubo, súccubo;* but pronounce *Cruóba,* a Carob bean, long.

C.

All nouns, whose penultimate is the letter *c*, are short; as *Rammárico:*

Except

Alice,
Amico,
Antino,
Appendice,
Aprico,
Arcidúca,
Alróce,
Beatrice,
Beccafico,
Bernice,
Bibliotéca,
Cadúto,
Capifuóco,
Cervice,
Ciriáco,
Cloáca,
Colica,
Cornice,
Coturnice,
Dappóco,
Enrica,
Fanfaluca,
Fatica,
Federico,
Felice,
Fenice,
Feróce,
Festúca,
Filúca, or *Felúca,*
Imbriáco,
Intrico,
Lattúca,
Lettica,
Lombrica,
Lorica,
Ludovico,
Lumáca,
Mammalúca,
Mantéca,
Matrice,
Mendico,
Molica,
Morice,
Narice,
Nemico,
Opáco,
Oricho, gum Arabic,
Ortica,
Pagliúca,
Pampalúca, a kind of sea-fish,
Panico, panic, a sort of grain.
Pappafico.
Penaice.
Pernice.
Pudico,
Padice.
Rubrúa, a rubric of a missal, or other book.
Sambúco.
Sommáco.
Tamerice.
Tarlice.
Tartarúca.
Tiriáca, or *triáca.*
Velóce.
Vernice.
Verrúca.
Vessica.
Ubbriáca.
Ulderico.
Umbilico, or *bellico,* the navel.

And all nouns terminated in *ace;* as, *audáce, formáce, spináce.* Likewise such as express female qualities, and end in *ice;* as, *meretrice, possedítrice, vendicatrice,* &c.

D. Nouns

Digitized by Google

D.

Nouns that have the letter *d* for their penultima are short;

Except

Alcide,	*Dioméde,*	*Omicida,*
Arréda,	*Disfida,*	*Palúde,*
Belgrádo,	*Eréde,*	*Parentádo,*
Canicida,	*Eróde,*	*Parenticida,*
Congédo,	*Fratricida,*	*Parricida,*
Contádo,	*Ganiméde,*	*Rugiáda,*
Contrádo,	*Goffrédo,*	*Squassacóda,*
Corrádo,	*Ignúdo,*	*Tancréde,*
Corrédo, equipage,	*Lampréda,*	*Toledo,*
Cupido, Cupid,	*Mercéde,*	*Tripiéde,*
Custóde,	*Nicoméde,*	*Zendádo.*

Nouns ending in the syllable *de,* and formed from other nouns which have a grave accent on their final vowel, are also pronounced long; as, *cittáde, povertáde, virtúde,* formed of *città, povertà, virtù.* N. B. This manner of writing is used only by poets, and very seldom occurs in prose.

E.

All nouns that have the letter *e* for their penultima, are long;

Except

Acúleo, Bórea, Cesárea (title of majesty; but when it signifies a city, it is pronounced long), *Cerúleo, Coetanéo, Collatáneo, Empíreo, Etéreo, Línea, Mediterráneo, purpúreo, Tartárea, temporáneo.* Some pronounce the two names, *Teséo,* and *Timotéo,* long; and they seem to be in the right. All nouns adjective, derived from substantives, are also short; as, *férreo,* from *férro,* iron; *marmóreo,* from *mármo,* marble; *venéreo,* from *Vénere,* Venus. In all nouns of this termination, where the letter *u* alone forms their antepenultimate syllable, this letter is pronounced short, as well as the syllable that follows; as, *áureo, naúsea,* &c.

F. You

Digitized by Google

F.

You are to pronounce all nouns short, whose penultimate is the letter *f;* except the three following, *Martúfo, Paráfo, Tartúfo,* which are long.

G.

You must pronounce all nouns short, that have the letter *g* for their penultima;

Except

Arcopágo, Bottéga, Castíga, Colléga, (Congréga, though long, is sometimes pronounced short) *Dionígi, Gonzágo, Impiégo, Intrígo, Lattúga, Lettíga, Luígi, Lupágo, Orígo, Parígi, Pédagógo, Preságo,* (several pronounce *próroga* short) *Ripiégo, sanguinúga, selvágo, sinagógo, sossiógo,* or *sussiégo.*

I.

In some nouns where the letter *i* happens to be the penultima, it forms one syllable with the following letter, and they are pronounced jointly.

In others, it is formed separately, forming a distinct syllable by itself.

The letter *i* therefore forms but one syllable with the subsequent vowel, in all nouns not contained in the following catalogue. It forms two syllables in the nouns marked underneath, and you are to pronounce them long; as,

Agonia,	*Antilogia,*	*Astronomia,*
Albagia,	*Antinomia,*	*Badia,* or *abbadia,*
Amnistia,	*Antipotia,*	*Balia,* power *or* authority,
Anagogia,	*Apologia,*	*Baliaf*,*
Analogia,	*Apoplessía,*	*Baronia,*
Anania,	*Apostasia,*	*Bastia,*
Anarchia,	*Aristocrazia,*	*Befania,* or *epifánia,*
Anatomia,	*Armonia,*	*Bigamia.*
Anfania,	*Arpia,*	
Anfibologia,	*Astrologia,*	

* *This name is given in some parts of Tuscany to the person who, at Rome, is called cursore, a serjeant or bailiff.*

Brio,

Digitized by Google

Brio,
Bugia,
Calpestia,
Carestia,
Castellania,
Codardia,
Chiromanzia,
Chironia,
Chirurgia,
Compagnia,
Costesia,
Cronologia,
Dio or *Iddio,*
Democrazia,
Diafonia,
Desio,
Economia,
Elegia,
Elia,
Energia,
Eresia,
Etimologia,
Eucaristia,
Fantasia,
Fellonia,
Filologia,
Filosofia,
Fisonomia, or *fisionomia,*
Fio,
Follia,
Frenesia,
Gagliardia,
Gelosia,
Genealógia,
Gengiu,
Genia,
Geografia,
Geomanzia,
Gerarchia,
Gerennia,
Golia,
Idrofobia,
Idrografia,
Idromanzia,
Idropisia,
Infingardia,
Ipocrisia,
Ironia,
Lebbrosia,
Leggio,
Liscia, or *Lescia,* lye to wash with.
Litanie,
Litargia, or *letargia,*
Liturgia,
Lombardia,
Lucia,
Magia,
Malacchia,
Malattia,
Malia,
Malvasia, or *Malvagia,* Malmsey wine.
Malinconia, or *Maninconia,*
Mattia,
Melanconia,
Melodia,
Mercanzia,
Messia,
Mio,
Monarchia,
Mormoria, (some pronounce it short,)
Natio,
Negromanzia,
Normandia,
Notomia,
Oblio, or *ublio,*
Omlia, or *umilia,*
Ortografia,
Paralisia,
Pavia,
Pazzia,
Pestio,
Peripezia,
Picardia,
Pio, (but *empo* is pronounced short,)
Piromanzia,
Poesia,
Polizia,
Prigionia,
Prosodia,
Puttania,
Qualsisia,
Restio,
Ricadia,
Rio,
Ritrosia.
Romania,
Resolia,
Saettia,
Sagrestia, or *sagristia,*
Schiranzia, or *scheranzia,*
Schiavonia,
Scoppiettio,
Simonia,
Simpatia,
Sinfonia,
Sodomia,
Sofia,
Spia,
Stallio,
Stantio,
Tentennio,

Digitized by Google

Tentennio,	*Tobia,*	*Via,*
Teologia,	*Traversia,*	*Villania,*
Tipografia,	*Turchia,*	*Zacchia,*
Tirannia,	*Vallonia,*	*Zio.*

We likewise give a long pronunciation to all those nouns which terminate in *ria;* as, *allegria, idolatria, osteria.*

Except feminine nouns derived from short masculines, only by changing the last vowel into *a;* as, *vittório, vittória; fulminatório, fulminatória;* because these are reducible to the rule of No. IV.

The following are also pronounced short:

Adria,	*Féria,*	*Mándria,*
Augúria,	*Fimbria,*	*Matéria,*
Aria,	*Fúria,*	*Memória,*
Artéria,	*Glória,*	*Miséria,*
Balaória,	*Idria,*	*Mitria,*
Bória,	*Indústria,*	*Penúria,*
Calábria,	*Ingiúria,*	*Piria,*
Cúria,	*Istria,*	*Stíria,*
Dória,	*Lussúria,*	*Stória.*

Frádicio, múdicio, súdicio, which several Tuscans use instead of *frácido, múcido,* and *súcido,* are nouns out of all rules; because, besides the conjunction of the two last vowels, they have the syllable *di* short.

In fine, all nouns that have for their penultima, the letter *i,* forming one syllable with the final, as *desidério, propézio,* make the penultima long.

L.

Nouns that have the letter *l* for their penultima, are short;

Except

Acquaméle,	*Camélo,*	*Cautéla,*
Aracéli,	*Candéla,*	*Corrottéla,*
Asílo,	*Caproróla,*	*Crudéle,*
Batticúlo,	*Carmélo,*	*Cucúlo,*
Bestióla,	*Caróla,*	*Fedéle,*

Idroméle,

Digitized by Google

Idroméle,	*Pirôle,*	*Scacciâle,*
Loquéla,	*Pistôlo,* a pistol,	*Strossâle* or *stroncâlo,*
Michéle,	*Querêla,*	*Tordéla,*
Oximéle,	*Rassâla,*	*Vangélo,*
Palûde.	*Segâla* (some pronounce it short),	*Varôla,* or *verôla,*
Parallélo,	*Sequéla,*	*Vitâla,*
Parentéla,	*Soggôlo,*	*Vuriôlo,*
Paróla,		

And all nouns terminating in *ale*; as, *candle, funerâle, guanciâle,* without reckoning *Anibale, Asdrûbale,* and *fînfale.*

You are likewise to pronounce all nouns long that, before the final syllable, have the letter *o* preceded by a vowel, here called accidental, which in verse is seldom used, but frequently in prose, though it is scarcely ever sounded; as, *Argiuólo, Romagnuólo, vignaruólo.* In like manner nouns terminating in *ile*; as, *Aprile, gentile, vedovile:* but of the latter there are twelve short, viz.

Acquátile,	*Fârile,*	*Portâtile,*
Agile,	*Fértile,*	*Volâtile,*
Dócile,	*Frâgile,*	*Umile,*
Difficile,	*Grâcile,*	*Utile.*

N. B. *Atrabile* is pronounced long; but all the other nouns in *ile,* as *amâbile, nôbile, stâbile,* &c. follow the rule of the letter *l.*

M.

You are to pronounce all nouns short, that have the letter *m* for their penultima:

Except,

Abuâmo,	*Guaime,*	*Richiâmo,*
Addâmo,	*Idióma,*	*Sopranâmo,*
Cinamômo,	*Lattime,*	*Struttagêma,*
Cognâme,	*Madâma,*	*Sublime,*
Concime,	*Opômo,*	*Supremo.*
Diadêma,	*Poêma,*	
Estrêmo,	*Problêma,*	

Digitized by Google

In like manner, all nouns terminated in *ame* and *ume*; as, *bestiáme, legnáme, costúme, legúme.*

N.

Pronounce all nouns long, whose penultima is the letter *n*:

Except

Abrótano,
Abrústino, or *arbústino,*
Á'cino,
Amázona,
Antifona,
Á'rgine,
Á'sino,
Bruscólino,
Cánone,
Cármine,
Cárpine,
Cófano,
Cristófano,
Dáino,
Diácono,
Diáfono,
Diógene,
E'bbeno,
E'glino,
E'lcino,
Esámine,
Fémina,
Ferrámina,
Fiórina,
Fiócine,
Frano,
Fúlmine,
Gránfano,
Garófano,
Gémino,
Gérmine,
Gióvane, or *giovine,*
Gómmena, or *gómena,*
Intégina,
Lacedémone,
Lámpana,
Lésina,
Líbano,
Limósina, or *elemósina,*
Máchina,
Mácina,
Mánganos,
Módena,
Océano,
O'rfano,
O'rgano,
Origano,
Página,
Pámpana,
Pátine,
Pástino, a digging up of the vineyard,
Péttine,
Plátano,
Plátina,
Polésine,
Poligono,
Pristino,
Pródano,
Ráfano,
Rágano,
Rimini,
Ródano,
Sátana,
Stággina,
Stágina,
Stéfano,
Strággina,
Términi,
Timpano,
Tráina,
Trápano,
Túrbine,
Vimine,
Uómini,
Záino,
Zingano.

You are likewise to pronounce all nouns short that terminate in *gine*; as, *balordágine, origine, piantágine*; and all those which end in *dine* in the singular; as, *amaritúdine, róndine.*

I never

O.

I never could find more than four nouns that have the letter *o* for their penultima, in regard to which there could be any doubt of their pronunciation: these are *A'loe, Siloe, Nóe, Eróe:* the three first are pronounced with some rapidity, as if they had a grave accent on the letter *e*, which indeed is used by some: but the fourth is long.

P.

You are to pronounce all nouns short, that have the letter *p* for their penultima.

Except,

Antipápa, orchetípo, Cantalúpo, Ciclópa, dirúpa, Europa, Esópo, Isópo, Oroscópo: the following three are better short than long; *Piropo, Pélipo, Priapo.*

R.

Pronounce all nouns long whose penultima is the letter *r*:

Except,

A'lbero, or *árbore*,
A'nitra, or *ánatra*,
A'ncora, an anchor.
A'nfora,
A'rbitro,
A'saro,
Áugure,
A'ura,
A'ustro,
Báratro,
Bárbaro,
Bávaro,
Biscaro,
Búlgaro,
Cáncaro,
Cánfora,
Cántaro,
Cápparo,
Cátedra,
Célebre,
Célebro,
Césare,
Chiávari, the name of a country,
Cláustro,
Cólera,
E'prio,
Esámetro,
Féretro,
Fánfaro,
Fólgore,
Gámbaro,
Gásparo, and *Gáspare*,
Géometro, and *géometra*,
Icaro,
Intérprete,
Láuro,
Lázzaro,
Lógoro,
Mártire,
Mártora,
Máscare, and *maschéra*,
Máuro,
Méteora,
Néttare,
Néutro,

* *In this word the penultima is also pronounced short, as we have observed in the first number of this chapter, p.* 182.

Digitized by Google

Nicéforo,	*Pórpora,*	*Táuro,*
Ungaro,	*Rémora,*	*Ténebre,*
Páparo,	*Státiro,*	*Tórtora,*
Pécora,	*Sáuro,*	*Ungaro,*
Pentámetro,	*Schéletro,*	*Záccara,*
Pésaro,	*Spálatro,*	*Zázzara,*
Piffaro,	*Súgaro,*	*Zingaro,*
Pitágora,	*Súperi,*	*Zúccaro,* and
Pórfiro,	*Tátaro,*	*zúcchero.*

You are likewise to pronounce all nouns short, that terminate in *era, ere,* and *ero,* and have not the letter *i* before the antepenultima *e;* as *léttere, Cérere, número:* but we must except *austéro, chiméra, emisféro, galéra, ingegnéro* or *ingegnére, lusinghiéro, mensognéro, messére, Oméro, pantéra, primavéra, scvéro, sincéro, statéra,* which conform to the rule: as do likewise almost all nouns verbal; as, *il piacére, il parére,* and some other, which are derived from the infinitives contained in the exception to the rule of the second number in the next chapter. And the abbreviated nouns preserve the same sound as they had before their abbreviation; for example, we pronounce *altéro,* long, because it is abridged from *altiéro: intéra,* from *intiéra; magistéro,* from *magastiéro; monastéro,* from *monastiéro,* &c.

The word *chiáschera* is pronounced short, though it has the *i* before the *e.*

S.

All nouns are pronounced long, that have the letter *s* for their penultima:

Except

Aniso,	*Efeso,*	*Parafrasi,*
Brindisi,	*Enfasi,*	*Pausa,*
Causa,	*Estasi,*	*Plauso,*
Citiso,	*Génesi,*	*Sindéresi,*
Créusa,	*Metamórfosi,*	*Tánisi.*
Diécesi,		

T. Pro-

Digitized by Google

T.

Pronounce those nouns long, that have the letter *t* for their penultima:

Except,

A'bito,	*Epiteto,*	*Pálmite,*
Accólito,	*Esaústo,*	*Pérdita,*
Acónito,	*Esército,*	*Pláute,*
A'dito,	*E'rito,*	*Plácito,*
A'guta, a christian name.	*Esplicito,*	*Prémito,*
	Fáusto,	*Préstito,*
A'lito,	*Fégato,*	*Prérito,*
A'nbito,	*Fláuto,*	*Propósito,*
A'udito,	*Fómite,*	*Púlpito,*
Anélito,	*Fortúito,*	*Ricápito,*
Antídoto,	*Frémito,*	*Recóndito,*
Antistite,	*Gálata,*	*Réndita,*
Apóstate,	*Gémito,*	*Sábato,*
Ariete,	*Génito,*	*Séguito,*
Atómato,	*Gómbito,* or *Gómito,*	*Sóccita,*
Attónito,		*Sócrate,*
Cáuto,	*Implicito,*	*Sólito,*
Cógnito,	*Inclito,*	*Sollécito,*
Cómito,		*Spírito,*
Cómpito, the work of a day, or of a certain time,	*Intérprete,*	*Stimmate,* or *Stimate,* marks of wounds.
	Intúito,	
	Ipócrate,	
Cómputo,	*Ipócrito,*	*Scípite,*
Crédito,	*Ippólito,*	*Strépito,*
Cúbito,	*Láuto,*	*Súbito,*
Débito,	*Lécito,*	*Súddito,*
Decrépito,	*Líbito,*	*Tácito,*
Dédito,	*Lícvito,*	*Tránsito,*
Depósito,	*Límite,*	*Trémito,*
Disputa (some pronounce it long,)	*Mérito,*	*Véndita,*
	Náscita,	*Véneto,*
Dómito,	*Olocáusto,*	*Visita,*
Empito, for *I'mpeto*	*O'spite,*	*Vímito.*

* *When it is a noun adjective, it is pronounced almost always short; but when a supine, it is long.*

Digitized by Google

U.

Pronounce all nouns short; that have the vowel *u* for their penultima: example, *árduo, perpétuo, resíduo.*

Except,

Altrúi, búe, dúe, and its compounds, as, *ambidúe, vintidúe,* &c. *colúi, costúi, cúi, lúi, súoi, túoi.*

V.

You are to pronounce those nouns short, that have *v* consonant for their penultima, example, *cóncavo, Génova, trítavo, véscovo.*

Except,

Bisávo, dicianóve, and the other numbers of the same termination; *Genéva,* or *Genévra, incávo, soáve, ottávo,* and all the nouns terminating in *ivo,* and *iva,* as *sostantivo, motivo, gentiva, invettiva.*

Z.

Pronounce all nouns long that have the letter *z* for their penultima, except the noun *pólizza.*

CHAP. III.

Of the Pronunciation of Verbs and Adverbs.

No. I.

DISSYLLABLES, whether verbs or adverbs, observe no rule, because they are pronounced indifferently. See the preceding chapter, No. II. and with regard to words of two or more syllables, that have a grave accent on the last vowel, I refer you to what has been said in the same chapter, No. III. p. 183.

No. III.

The infinitive of the verbs is terminated in *are, ere,* and *ire.* Those which terminate in *are* and *ire* are pronounced long, without any exception; and such as end in *ere* short, the following excepted: *avére, cadére, dissuadére, dolére, dovére, giacére, godére, parére, persuadére, piacére, potére, rimanére, sapére, sedére, solére, tacére, temére, tenére, valére, vedére, volére,* and all their compounds, as *accadére, ottenére, provedére,* &c. it being a general maxim,

Digitized by Google

maxim, that the compounds follow the rule of their simples.

No. III.

All third persons plural are pronounced short, except in the future tense, because of the two consonants which precede the final vowel; in like manner, the first person plural of all the preterimperfect subjunctive, which in the first person singular terminate in *essi*, must be pronounced short; as, *amássi, amássimo, leggéssi, leggéssimo*, &c.

No. IV.

All other persons, of whatever tense or number, are made long; except those of some verbs of the first conjugation, which, in the first person of the indicative, have the penultima short, and preserve this shortness in the other persons, not only of the indicative, but of the imperative and subjunctive moods; for instance, *ricápito*, the first person indicative of the verb *ricápitare*, has the syllable *pi* short; and the same quantity is preserved in *ricápiti*, and *ricápita*. Farther; this and other like verbs receive, by way of augment, in the third persons plural of the said moods, another syllable which is sounded as short as the penultima; for instance, *ricápito, ricápitano, ricápitino; dissimulo, dissimulano, dissimulino;* and since there are several who mispronounce those third persons plural, I have thought fit to adjoin a particular description of them in the two following numbers.

No. V.

In the first place, all verbs, whose infinitive terminates in *care*, without any other consonant before *c*, as *autenticáre, glorificáre, masticáre*, make the first person of the present indicative short, and of course the other persons just now mentioned in the exception to the preceding number: except *affiocáre, arrocáre*, and such as you will find excepted in the following number.

2. All verbs, whose infinitive terminates in *oláre*, as *annoláre, stimoláre, brancoláre*.

3. Likewise all verbs formed of nouns that have

Digitized by Google

the penultimate syllable short; for example, *regolâre*, formed of *regola; generâre*, of *género; sollecitâre* of *sollécito*. To the three foregoing numbers, you must add the following verbs, which are contained therein, viz.

Affocâre,
Agitâre,
Alterâre,
Anfanâre,
Annihilâre,
Assideràre,
Bucheràre,
Calcitràre,
Capitâre,
Commemoràre,
Comperâre,
Confederâre,
Consideràre,
Contaminâre,
Deficeràre,
Definâre,
Dissipâre,
Dominâre,
Dubitâre,
Eccettuâre,
Felicitâre,
Gratulâre,
Imitâre,
Incorporâre,
Insolferâre,
Interrogâre,
Investigâre,
Irritâre,
Istigâre,
Iteràre,
Litigâre,
Luminâre,
Meditâre,
Navigâre,
Moderâre,
Mormorâre,
Muneràre,
Navigâre,
Necessitâre,
Nominâre,
Noveràre,
Occupâre,
Palpitâre,
Penetràre,
Precipitâre,
Procrastinâre,
Pullulâre,
Rammemoràre,
Recitâre, to represent on a stage.
Refrigeràre,
Ricuperâre,
Roborâre,
Ruminâre, or *Rumigâre,*
Scalpitràre,
Schicchera're,
Seguitâre,
Seminâre,
Sgombrâre,
Simulâre,
Smemoràre,
Spettoràre,
Superâre,
Suppeditâre,
Suscitâre,
Tolleràre,
Tumultuâre,
Ventilâre,
Vigilâre,
Vituperâre.

To the above we may also add the verb *offrire*, belonging to the conjugation of verbs in *isco*. There are some who pronounce the foregoing third person indifferently, short or long, in the verbs *miglioràre, peggioràre,* and *riputâre,* but they are pronounced short in the verbs *conitâre, eccitâre, incitâre.*

No. VI.

From the whole we may conclude, that infinitives of two or three syllables, as, *fâre, cecâre,* with their compounds, as, *disfâre, accecâre,* do not shorten the first person indicative, nor the other persons, nor even the

Digitized by Google

the infinitives derived from nouns whose penultima is long, example, *avventuáre*, derived from *ventúra: intricáre*, from *intrico; minchionáre*, from *minchióno*; *contrastáre*, from *contrásto*; *architettáre*, from *architétto*, &c. But I am very sure, that *persevéro*, I persevere, is oftener pronounced short, though it comes from *severo*, which is long; this, perhaps, to distinguish it from the Latin verb *persevéro*, which is sounded long.

No. VII.

With regard to the conjunctive pronouns, *mi, ti, si*, &c. the four relatives, *lo, la, li, le*, and the particle *ne* if if they happen to be at the end of infinitives terminated in *ere* short, *scrivermi, rispónderti, véndere*; and at the end of the third person singular of the preterperfect simple, marked with the grave accent, as also at the end of the first and third person singular of the future; as, *rimproverólli, racconterówvi, racconterássi*, &c. there arises from thence no change at all in the pronunciation, though this union is productive of two consonants before the final vowel; since the foregoing words, being placed after the said persons, are always reduplicated, according to what has been observed, p. 173, and as you may see by the above examples. If the said particles happen to be united to other persons, as, *parlátegli, tenévami, inviándolo*, they cause the last verbal syllable, which is the penultimate of the word, to be pronounced short.

No. VIII.

When two of the said particles happen to be united together, at the end of the person which, without this union, is not pronounced short, as *parlátegliene, inviándosene, portávameli*, then you shorten only the penultimate syllable of the word, which is the first of the two particles; but when they are joined together, at the end of infinitives, and of the persons marked at the beginning of No. VII. you make no change, as I have already observed, in the pronunciation; and the first of the two particles, being the penultimate of the word,

Digitized by Google

is made short; example, *scrivermelo, vénderglielé, rimproverómmela, racconterássene,* &c.

No. IX.

With regard to adverbs, you must follow the rules and exceptions of the preceding chapter, especially as they are derived for the most part from nouns: for instance, *all'improviso, un tantino,* see under the letter *s* for the former, and under *n* for the latter, and you will find that both of them have the penultimate syllable long. As for such as have two consonants before their final vowel, as *allegraménte, incontaménte,* you must recollect the rule mentioned in the preceding chapter, No. II. and with respect to compounds, remember the rule, which says, that compounds follow the nature of their simples.

No. X.

Here I shall observe, that when the adverb *écco* is joined to the conjunctive or relative particles, as *éccoci, éccoli, éccole,* the penultimate syllable, thus united, is to be pronounced short; and it retains the same quantity, when joined to the two aforesaid particles: for instance, *éccotene, éccovene, éccotelo:* you are moreover to observe, that the penultima, which is the first of the articles, is also pronounced short.

These two adverbs, *altrèsi* and *cáppita,* have the penultima short; but in *áltrove, ancóra, assái, dappói, giammái, insiéme,* and *ovúnque,* it is long.

In these two adverbs, *adágio,* and *póscia,* the vowel *i* forms a syllable with the final vowel *o* and *a.*

Digitized by Google

THIRD TREATISE.

OF THE ITALIAN SYNTAX.

CHAP. I.

Of the Division of Syntax.

SYNTAX is a Greek word, by the Latins called *constructio;* and signifies the right placing and connecting of words in a sentence. It is divided into three sorts; the first of order or arrangement, the second of concordance, the third of government. The syntax of order or arrangement is the right disposition of words in a sentence. The syntax of concordance is when the parts of speech agree with one another, as the substantive with the adjective or the nominative with the verb. The syntax of government is when one part of speech governs another; or, as some grammarians express it, when one part of speech is dependent on another.

The rules of syntax are much the same in Italian as in English; however, for the sake of those who have not a grammatical knowledge of their own language, I shall lay down some general rules of Italian construction.

I. *Of the Order of Words.*

I. The nominative is that to which we attribute the action of the verb, and is always ranged in the first place: it is generally a noun, a pronoun, or an infinitive put for a noun; as, *Thomáso scrive*, Thomas writes; *io*

Digitized by Google

párlo, I speak; *il dormire gióva*, sleeping does one good.

2. When the action of the verb is attributed to many persons, or things, these all belong to the nominative, and are ranged in the first place, together with their conjunction; as, *Piétro e Páolo léggono*, Peter and Paul read.

3. The adjectives, belonging to the nominative substantive, to which the action of the verb is attributed, are put after the substantive, and before the verb; as, *gli scolári morigeráti e diligénti stúdiano*, the mannerly and diligent scholars do study.

4. If the nominative has an article, this article always takes the first place, that being its natural situation.

5. Sometimes a verb with its case stands for a nominative; as, *umána cósa è avére compassióne degli afflitti*, to have compassion on the afflicted is an act of humanity.

6. The nominative is sometimes understood, as, *amo*, where you understand *io;* and so of the other persons of the verb.

7. After the nominative you put the verb; and if there is an adverb, it is to be placed immediately after the verbs, whose accidents and circumstances it explains; as, *Piétro ama ardenteménte la glória*, Peter is extremely fond of glory.

8. The cases governed by the verb are put after it; they may be one or many, according to the nature of the action; as, *io amo Piétro*, I love Peter; *io dóno un libro a Páolo*, I make a present of a book to Paul.

9. The preposition is always put before the case it governs; as, *vicino a cása*, near the house.

10. The relative is always placed after the antecedent; as, *Piétro, il quále studia*, Peter, who studies.

II. *Of Concordance.*

1. Adjectives agree with their substantives, in gender, number, and case: as, *un' uómo virtuóso*, a virtuous

Digitized by Google

man; *sontuósi palázzj*, sumptuous palaces; *dónna bélla*, a handsome woman.

2. When two or more substantives singular come together, the adjective, or participle, belonging to them, must be put in the plural; as, *Perdiccóne, e'l pádre, e la mádre délla Lísa, ed élla, altresì conténti, grandissima festa fécero;* Perdiconne, and the father and mother of Lisa, and she likewise, contented, made great rejoicings.

3. If the substantives happen to be one in the singular and the other in the plural, the adjective or participle may then agree with either; as, *essèndosi Dioneo, con gli áltri gióvani mésso a giuocáre à távole;* Dioneo with the other young men having set down to play at tables: *il rè co' subi compágni, rimontati á caválło, alla reále osteria sene tornárono;* the king and his companions, having mounted their horses again, returned to the royal inn.

4. Every verb personal agrees with its nominative, expressed or understood, both in number and person.

5. If the nominative be a collective noun, the verb may be in the plural, though the nominative is in the singular; as, *il comúne pópolo érano ignoránti del véro Dío;* the common people were ignorant of the true God.

6. When there happen to be two nominatives, one masculine and the other feminine, the preterite and participle of the verb agree with the masculine, if speaking of persons; but if any thing else is meant, it may agree with the feminine; as, *convitáti le donne e gli uómini, alle távole*, the men and women being invited to table; *ella avrébbe così l'áltra cóscia e l'áltro piè fuor mandáta* she would have put out the other thigh, and the other foot.

7. The relative *quále*, with the article, agrees entirely with the antecedent; but without the article, and denoting an absolute quality or likeness, it agrees with what follows; as, *quel cúore il quále*, that heart which; *seco pensándo quáli infra píccol término dovéan divenire*, thinking within himself what was shortly to become of them. Except *persóna*, which, though of the feminine gender, yet, when applied to a male, requires

Digitized by Google

quires a masculine relative; as, *alcúna persóna il quále*, some person who.

8. The question and answer always agree in every thing; as, *cavaliére, a qual dónna se' tu? ed egli rispóse, sóno alla regína*, what lady do you belong to, sir knight? and he answered, I belong to the queen.

III. *Of the dependence of the parts of speech on each other.*

1. The nominative being the basis of the sentence, the verb depends on it, as the other cases depend on the verb. The adjective depends on the substantive that supports it; and the adverb on the verb whose accidents it explains.

2. The genitive depends on a substantive expressed or understood; by which it is governed.

3. The accusative depends either on a verb active, as *io ámo la virtú*, I love virtue; or on an infinitive, as *disse se in ciò avére erráto*, he owned himself to have been mistaken in that; or on a proposition, as, *vádo vérso la chiésa*, I go towards the church.

4. The ablative depends on a preposition, by which it is governed; as, *párto da Róma*, I go from Rome.

5. The dative and vocative have, strictly speaking, no dependence on the other parts. The dative is common as it were, to all nouns and verbs. The vocative only points out the persons to whom you speak.

And so much for syntax in general. I come now to the construction of the several parts of speech.

CHAP. II.

Of the Syntax of Articles.

BEFORE we come to the syntax of the Articles, remember that *lo, la, li, le, gli*, before the verb, and the word *écco*, are no longer articles, but pronouns relative.

These

Digitized by Google

Those who understand Latin will quickly perceive the difference, if they take notice, that every time they render *lo, la, li, le, gli,* by *illum, illam, illud;* or by *eum, eam, id; illos, illas, illa; eos, eas, ea;* they are relative pronouns.

The particles *in* and *to,* before the names of cities, are expressed by *in* and *a;* in *or* at Rome, *in Róma,* to Rome, *a Róma.*

*** The best authors often use the infinitives with the article *il* instead of substantives; example, singing relieves me, *il cántare mi rallégra,* instead of *il cánto me rallégra.*

Note, the article *il* is put before the word *signór,* sir, or my lord, speaking of all qualities, dignities, and relations, for the masculine; example, my lord the president, *il signóre presidénte;* my lord duke, *il signór dúca;* the gentlemen, *i signóri;* of the gentlemen, *dei signóri.*

You must observe the same rule for the feminine article *la,* which is to be prefixed to *signóra,* speaking of *or* to the ladies; as, *la signóra principéssa.*

If the Italians express madam by *madáma,* they put the article *la* after it; as, madam the princess, *madáma la princéssa;* of madam the, *di madáma la, &c.*

*** Sometimes the English particle *to,* before infinitives, is rendered in Italian by the article *il* or *lo;* example, it is easy to say, to see, to study; *è fácile il díre, il vedére, lo studiáre:* with the latter we use the article *lo,* because *studiáre:* begins with an *s* followed by a consonant.

We generally use the article, when the Latins express the infinitive by the supine in *u:* as, *facile dictu, facile visu.*

We may also make use of the indefinite article *a;* as, *è facilé a dire, a vedére, a studiáre:* it is easy to say, to see, to study.

See farther, in the syntax of verbs, when it is proper to express the articles *del, déllo, délla, délle, dégli,* &c. after the verbs, and when not.

It is also to be observed, that the Italians frequently make use of the masculine articles plural *dei, ái, dái,*

Digitized by Google

with the apostrophe, before possessive pronouns, and before all indeterminate nouns: for example, *de' miéi líbri*, of my books; *a' tuói paránti*, to thy relations; *da' suói amíci*, from his friends; *la libertà de' pópoli*, the liberty of the pepole; *è permésso a' viaggiatori*, travellers are permitted; *si scrive da' paési lontáni*, they write from distant countries.

CHAP. III.

Of the Syntax of Nouns.

THE adjectives, as we have before observed, agree with their substantives in gender, number, and case: example, *uómo virtuóso, dónna bellíssima, casa nuóva.*

The Italians sometimes use a noun adjective instead of a substantive; as, *il cáldo del fuóco*, for *il calóre; l' álto délle múra* for *l' áltezza*, &c.

*** The comparatives govern a genitive; and the particle *than*, which is after them, is expressed by *di*, or *del*, or *dello*, &c. as you may see in the first part.

We have taken notice, in the chapter of comparatives, p. 55, that the particle *than* is rendered by *che*, when it is before a noun adjective, a verb, or an adverb.

*** If the comparison is made between two substantives, *than* must also be rendered by *che*: example.

Virgil pleases me more than Ovid, *Virgílio mi piáce più che Ovídio.*

He is a better soldier than captain, *è migliór soldáto che capitáno.*

Rome would please me more than Paris, *mi piacerébbe più Roma che Parígi.*

*** When the comparison is made by *so as, as much as, so as*, they must all be rendered by *quánto*: example.

The prince is not so powerful as the king, *il príncipe non è poténte quánto 'l re.*

My

Digitized by Google

My book is as handsome as yours, *il mio libro è bélla quánto' l vóstro.*

You shall have as much of it as you please, *n' avréte quánto vorréte.*

The poor are as much despised as the rich esteemed, *sóno vilipési i póveri quánto sóno stimáti i ricchi.*

CHAP. IV.

Of the Syntax of Pronouns.

I DO not intend to treat here of the pronouns personal; they have been sufficiently explained already in the first part, from p. 61 to p. 64: to avoid any farther repetition, I shall only give the following rule.

The English make use of the verb *to be*, put impersonally through all its tenses in the third person, before the pronouns personal, *thou, he, she, we, you, they; it is I, it is he*, &c. In Italian the verb *to be*, on this occasion, is not impersonal; and they express, it is I, by *sóno io;* it is thou, *sei tu:* it is he *è lui;* it is we, *siámo noi;* it is you, *siéte voi;* it is she, *è lei;* it is they, mas. *sóno églino*, or *sóno éssi;* it is they, fem. *sóno élleno*, or *sóno ésse;* and in like manner through all the tenses; as, it was I, *éro io;* it was we, *erámo noi;* &c.

*** To express in Italian, *it is mine, it is thine, it is his, it is ours, it is yours*, we must say, in the singular number,

Masculine.		Feminine.
It is mine,	*è mio,*	or *è mía.*
It is thine,	*è túo,*	or *è túa.*
It is his,	*è súo,*	or *è súa.*
It is ours,	*è nóstro,*	or *è nóstra.*
It is yours,	*é vóstro,*	or *è vóstra.*

In the plural we must say, *sóno miéi*, or *míe; son tuói*, or *túe; son suói*, or *súe; son nóstri*, or *nóstre, son vóstri*, or *vóstre.*

Me

Digitized by Google

Me, thee, him, to him, &c. are expressed always by the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, gli, &c.* when they are before or after a verb. See p. 64.

*** The conjunctive pronoun *gli* requires a particular remark; to wit, that, whenever it is found before the articles *lo, la, le,* or the adverb *ne,* it takes an *e* at the end to join the following particle: example.

To give it to him, *per dárglielo,* and not *dárglilo;* the vowels *i* and *e* ought to be pronounced as one syllable.

To give it to her, *per dárgliela.*

You shall return them to him, *gliéli renderéte.*

You shall ask him for some, *gliéne domanderéte.*

You shall speak to him of it, *gliéne parleréte.*

*** When the pronouns conjunctive happen to meet with the particle *si,* they must be transposed, and *si* is placed next to the verb: example,

They tell me, *mi si dice,* and not *si mi dice.*

They tell thee, *ti si dice,* and not *si ti.*

They tell him, or her, *gli,* or *le si dice.*

*** The pronouns conjunctive *mi, ti, si, ci, vi,* change *i* into *e* when they are before *lo, la, le, gli,* or the adverb *ne;* example,

He gives it me again, *melo rende.*

The following words, *me some* or *of it, thee some* or *of it, him some* or *of it, us some, you some, &c.* are rendered in Italian by *mene, tene, sene, gliéne, cene, vene,* as we have already observed in the chapter of conjunctive pronouns, p. 64.

Lóro, their, before a noun, is a pronoun possessive indeclinable; as, their book, *il lóro libro;* their chamber, *la lóro cámera;* their goods, *i lóro béni;* their swords, *le lóro spáde:* when *lóro* is a pronoun possessive, you put an article before it.

Lóro after a verb is a pronoun conjunctive; as, the master teaches them, *il maéstro inségna lóro. Lóro* is always made to follow the verb, to whatsoever tense it be.

*** To render the Italian more agreeable and complaisant, you are to use the third person instead of the second: thus, you are in the right of it, is expressed by *V. S. ha ragióne,* instead of *avéte ragione,* pronouncing *vossig-*

Digitized by Google

vossignoria, which is always marked by *V. S.* And to prevent the frequent repetition of *V. S.* they use the pronoun *élla*, or *éssa*, in the nominative, in conversation.

Example,

Nom.	*E'lla*, or *éssa*	*V. S.*
Gen.	*di léi*	*di V. S.*
Dat.	*a léi*	*a V. S.*
Acc.	*léi*	*V. S.*
Abl.	*da léi*	*da V. S.*

In the plural we say, *le signorie lóro, délle signorie lóro: álle signorie lóro, dálle signorie lóro.*

*** *That* is always expressed by *che;* example, the book that I read, *il líbro che léggo;* what do you want? *che voléte*, or *che vuóle, V. S.?*

Che oftentimes denotes *because:* especially when it follows the negative particle *non;* example, do not drink it, because it will hurt you, *non lo bevéte, che vi fard málе.*

*** *Chi* is frequently made use of to express *he that*, and is more elegant than *quel che:* example, *chi dice quéstoha ragióne*, for *quel che dice*, &c.

*** The particle *it* is never expressed in Italian before the third person of the verb *to be:* example.

It is well said, *è ben détto.*

It shall be well done, *sarà ben fátto.*

The poets often make use of *áltri* for *áltro:* example, *áltri fú vágo di spiár tra le stélle, áltri di seguir l'órme di fugitiva féra, áltri d'atterrár' órso,* Guarini *nel Pastór Fido.*

CHAP. V.

Of the Syntax of Verbs.

THE verbs, through every tense and mood (except the infinitive) ought, as we have already observed, to be preceded by a nominative case, either expressed or understood, with which they should agree in number and person. The nominative is expressed, when we say,

Digitized by Google

say, *io áno, tu canti, Piétro scrive;* understood when they say, *cánto, andiámo, dico, ridono.*

The Italians as well as the English use the second person plural, though they address themselves but to a single person: example,

My brother, you are in the wrong, *fratéllo mío, avéte tórto.*

Sir, you are in the right, *signóre, avéte ragióne.*

And if we would speak in the third person, we must say *V. S. ha ragióne.*

The verb active governs the accusative; as, *stúdio la lezióne, ama la virtù.*

The verb passive requires an ablative after it; as, the learned are envied by the ignorant, *i dótti sono invidiáti dagl' ignoránti.*

The verbs, *to take away, to separate, to be distant from, to receive,* and *obtain,* govern also an ablative and accusative: as,

To take something from the hands, *leváre quálche cósa, dálle máni.*

To separate one from the other, *separáre l'un d'all' áltro.*

Get you away from me, *scostátevi da me.*

I have received a letter from my father, *ho riccvúto da mio pádre una léttera.*

I have obtained leave from the king, *ho ottenúto licénsa dal rè.*

†††† The verbs, *to go out, to depart, to come, to return,* govern a genitive and an ablative. The genitive, when the nouns have the indefinite article before them; as, I go, I depart, I come, I return, from Paris, from France; *ésco, párto, véngo, tórno, di Parigi, di Fráncia,* &c.

The ablative, when the nouns are preceded by the definite article; as, I go, I depart, I come, I return, from the garden, from the meadow, from the church; *ésco, párto, véngo, tórno, dal giardino, práto, dálla chiésa.*

You must always put the particle *a* or *ad* after the verbs of motion; as, *andáre, mandáre, inviáre, venire,* when they precede an infinitive; example,

Let

Digitized by Google

Let us go see, *andiámo a vedére.*
Send to look for, *mandáte a cercáre.*
Come ask for, *venite a domandáre.*

They do not say, *andiámo vedére, mandáte cercáre, venite domandáre.* They make use of *ad*, when the following verb begins with a vowel; as, let us go and give notice, *andiama ad avisáre*, &c.

After verbs, we must express *yes* and *no* by *di sì* and *di nò*; and not by *che sì* and *che nò*: example,

I believe yes, *crédo di sì.*
I believe not, *crédo di nò.*
I say not, *dico di nò.*
I think not, *pénso di nò.*
I say yes, *scommétto di sì.*
Have you a mind to lay not? *volète scommèttere di nò?*

I have observed, in the first part, p. 88, that when we find the particle *if*, which in Italian is expressed by *se*, before the imperfect indicative, we must use the imperfect subjunctive in Italian: example, if I had, *se avéssi*: if we could, *se potéssimo*: and not *se avéva*, *se potevámo.*

This rule is not general, because we frequently are obliged to put the imperfect indicative after *se*, and not the imperfect subjunctive.

*** When we find in English *if* before a preterimperfect, it is to be observed, that we speak either of a time past, or a time to come; as *if I had riches, I was not master of them; if I studied, it was to become learned*: in those two examples we speak of a time past; for which reason we must use the imperfect indicative, and say, *se avévo béni, non n'éra padróne: se studiávo, éra per diventár dótto.* But if we happened to speak of a future time; *if I studied, I should become learned; if I had riches, I would give something to the poor*; then we must make use of the imperfect subjunctive, and say, *se studiássi, diventeréi dótto; se avéssi béni, ne daréi ai póveri*; because in the latter examples, we speak by wish, and therefore we place the verbs in the optative; and in the former we do not express ourselves either by wish or desire, but concerning a thing or time past.

*** The

Digitized by Google

*** The English are apt to put the first imperfect of the subjunctive, where the Italians make use of the second: example,

He had done me a kindness: the Italians will not say, *m'avésse fátto pidcere,* but *m'avrébbe fátto piacére;* because one may say, *he would have done me a kindness.*

I have been in the wrong, *avréi avúto tórto,* and not *avéssi avúto tórto;* because one may say, *I should have been in the wrong.*

You had been blamed, *saréste státo biasimáto,* and not *fóste státo biasimáto*: because *you had been* may be turned by *would have.*

☞ Note, that to express in Italian, *though that should be,* we must say, *quándo ciò fósse,* and not *sarébbe.*

N. B. Because the phrase, *though that should be,* may be turned by, *if that was;* and as often as you can turn the second preterimperfect by the imperfect subjunctive, or the second preterpluperfect by the pluperfect subjunctive, you ought to do it; and then those second preterimperfects are put in the subjunctive mood in Italian; for example, *if I had been at Rome,* or *if I were at Rome, I should endeavour to live with the Romans.* ☞ Here you may turn the phrase, and say, *if I was at Rome;* in Italian you must say, *se fóssi státo a Róma, o se vi fóssi, procurerei di viver co' Románi.*

*** The Italians use the future tense after the conjunction *if,* when they speak of a future action; but the English, the present: example, to-morrow, if I have time, *dománi se avrò témpo,* and not *se ho;* if he comes we shall see him, *se verrà, lo vedrémo,* and not *se viéne.*

☞ When they speak of visiting a person at his house, they use the verb *venire* instead of *andáre:* example, I will go to-morrow to your house, *verrò da voi dománi.*

*** When we forbid a person, to whom we say *thee* and *thou,* to do a thing, we ought to use the infinitive, and not the imperative: example, don't thou do that, *non far quésto;* say thou nothing, *non dir niénte;* don't thou stay, *non ti fermáre.*

A con-

Digitized by Google

A conjunction between two verbs obliges the last to be of the same number, person, and tense, as the first example, the king wills and commands, *il rè vuóle e pommánda*; I see and I know, *io védo e conósco*,

To know when to make use of the Subjunctive, read the following remarks.

*** 1. The conjunction *che* generally requires the subjunctive after it; example, *bisógna che Piétro cánti, créda, sénta, ésca*, &c.

☞ 2. Take notice, that *che* makes all the words, to which it is joined, become conjunctions: as *acciochè*, to the end that: *prima che, avánti che*, before that; *benchè*, although; *dáto che, suppósto che*, suppose that; which govern the subjunctive; example, *acciochè, prima che, benchè, suppósto che, io párli, io ésca*, &c.

*** 3. In order, therefore, to know when to put the verb which comes after *che, that*, in the indicative, and when in the subjunctive, take particular notice of the following examples: That I may speak, that I may love, that I may sing.

Now these verbs, *speak, love, sing*, which are after *che, that*, are in one sense in the indicative, and in another in the subjunctive mood.

The way then of not mistaking the one for the other is, to suppose that the verb *fáre*, to do, stands in the place of the verb that follows *che*.

The verb *fáre* makes, in the present of the indicative, *fo, fái, fa; facciámo, fáte, fánno*.

The same verb *fáre* makes, in the subjunctive, *fáccia, fáccia, fáccia; facciámo, facciáte, fácciano*.

To know whether the above examples, *speak, love, sing*, are in the indicative or subjunctive, put the verb *fáre* in their stead: example, *il mio fratéllo vuól ch'io párli*: if, instead of the verb *parli*, you put the verb *fáre*, you will say, *il mio frátello vuól ch'io fáccia*; the verb *fáccia* is in the subjunctive, consequently, *párli* will be in the same mood.

I shall

Digitized by Google

I shall give another example, in which the verb that follows *che* will be in the indicative, and not in the subjunctive: *il mio fratéllo créde ch'io párlo.* Instead of *párlo*, put the verb *fáre*, you will say, *il mio fratéllo créde ch'io fo*: the verb *io fo* is in the indicative, therefore *párlo* must be in the indicative also: and so of the rest of the verbs.

Hence, according to the first example, you will say, *mio fratéllo vuól ch'io párli;* and, according to the second *mio fratéllo créde ch'io párlo: párlo* is the indicative, and *párli* in the subjunctive.

Observe that, to speak Italian correctly, you should make use of the subjunctive in both cases: as, *vuól ch'io párli*, and *créde ch'io párli*. The difference between those two examples is, that in the latter you may sometimes make use of the indicative, though not so properly; in the former you must always employ the subjunctive; you therefore may say, *mio fratéllo créde che párli* or *párlo;* and *vuól che párli*, and not *párlo*. In order rightly to know whether you are to make use of the indicative, or of the subjunctive, read the following remarks.

*** 4. The verbs that signify *will, desire, command, permission*, and *fear*, followed by the conjunction *che*, require the subjunctive after them: example, I will, I desire, I command, I permit, my brother to love, speak, see, go out, &c. *vóglio, desidero, comándo, perméttо, che mío fratéllo ámi, párli, véda, éсa*, &c. I fear he may not sing, he may not say, &c. *témo che non cánti, che non dica*, &c.

*** 5. After the conjunction *although*, the English sometimes use the subjunctive; as, *although he be an honest man, although he may do that.*

In Italian you must take care how you express *though* or *although;* if it is by *benchè* you must put the subjunctive after it: example, though he is an honest man, *benché sia galánt' uómo;* though he does that, *benché fáccia quésto.*

†‡† But if you render *although* or *though*, by, *sebbén*, then you must not use the subjunctive, but the indicative; example, though he is an honest man, *sebbén é ga-*

Digitized by Google

è galánt' uómo, and not *sia*; though he does this, *sebbén fà quésto,* and not *fáccia.*

*** 6. When you meet with two verbs, the former of which is preceded by the particle *non*, and the second by *che*, you must put the latter in the subjunctive: example, I did not know you loved, *non sapévo, che amáste;* I do not believe he studies, *non crédo che stúdj;* I do not think he walks, *non pénso che cammíni.*

*** 7. When the pronoun *qual* precedes a verb, and you do not speak by an interrogation, you must put the following verb in the subjunctive: example, not knowing which was the season proper for sowing, *non sapéndo qual fósse la stagióne própria da seminére;* I do not see which is his intention, *non védo qual sía l'intenzióne súa;* I do not know which are your books, *non so quáli siano i vóstri líbri.*

But if we speak by interrogation, you must put the verb in the indicative: example, which is yours? *quál è l' vóstro.*

*** The articles, *del, délla, délla, dégli,* &c. coming after a verb, are apt to puzzle those who learn Italian: and no one has hitherto thought of removing this difficulty. To explain the matter;

*** Observe, that the Italians often put the genitive after a verb active: example, give me some, *or* of the bread, *dátemi del páne;* eat some, *or* of the pye, *mangiáte del pastício.* You see, by those examples, the genitive is put after a verb active: but observe, at the same time, we are not speaking of a whole, but only of a part; for, *give me some pye, some bread, some wine, some meat,* denotes only a *bit,* or *a little part of the pye, bread, wine,* or *meat.*

If we would speak of a whole, we must not express the articles *del, délla, délla,* &c.: example; I have eaten petty patties, *ho mangiáto pasticciétti;* I have seen men, *ho veduto uómini;* you owe me a hundred crowns; give me bread, wine, and meat, in payment: *mi dovéte cénto scúdi; dátemi páne, vino, e cárne in pagaménto.*

In the last examples, the articles, *del, délla, délla,* &c. are not expressed, because we speak of a sum, a quantity,

Digitized by Google

a whole, that is not separated, and which has no regard or relation but to the person who speaks.

*** Note also, that after the particle *si*, it is, or they, we must not express the articles, *del, déllo, della*, &c,: example; they see men, *si védono uómini;* they tell bad news, *si dícono cattive nuóve.*

You must not express the articles, *del, déllo, della, dégli*, &c. after the prepositions, as the French express *du, de la, de l', des:* example, *avec des soldats*, Fr. *con soldáti*, with soldiers; *pour des paysans*, Fr. *per contadini*, for peasants; *dans des paniers*, Fr. *in canestri*, in baskets; *sur des chevaux*, Fr. *sópra caválli*, upon horses.

*** But if the articles, *del, délli, della*, signify, *concerning;* as, *they speak of your affairs*, that is to say, *concerning your affairs*, the article must then be expressed: example, they speak of you, *si párla di vói;* they treat of war, *si tratta della guérra;* they talked of affairs of state, *si parláva dégli affári di státo.*

It is therefore true, as you have observed, that there are particular cases, in which the articles are not expressed; nay, it is elegant then to omit them.

N. B. We may add to the above rule, that in general when the article is omitted in English, it is also omitted in Italian.

The verb impersonal, *there is, there was, there will be*, has been explained at length, among the impersonal verbs, in the first part, p. 147.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Syntax of Participles.

EVERY participle in the Italian language ends in *to*, or *so;* as, *amáto, credúto, finito, árso, préso, scéso, rimáso, sólito.*

The active participles that follow the verb *avére*, must end in *o;* as,

I have

Digitized by Google

I have seen the king, *ho vedúto il rè.*
I have seen the queen, *ho vedúto la regína.*
I had loved books, *avévo amáto, i libri.*
I had carried the letters, *avévo portáto le lettére.*

We meet with authors who sometimes make the participles agree with the thing of which they are speaking; as, the moon had lost her rays, *la lúna avéva perdúti i súoi rággi.*

If the substantive is before the participle, they ought to agree together: example, the books that I have composed, *i libri ch'ho compósti;* the letter that I have written, *la lettéra ch'ho scritta.* One may also say, *la lúna avéva perdúto i súoi rággi,* &c.; *i libri ch'ho compósto; la léttera ch'ho scritto.* But it is more adviseable to follow the above rule.

*** If it be a verb neuter, the participle ought always to terminate in *o*: example, the king has dined, *il rè ha pransúto;* the queen has supped, *la regína ha cenáto;* the soldiers have trembled, *i soldáti hánno treináto;* my sisters have slept, *mie sorélle hánno dormíto;* your friends have laughed, *i vóstri amici hánno riso.*

When the active participle happens to precede an infinitive, it must be terminated in *o*: example; *il giúdice gli ha fátto tagliáre la tésta,* the judge has caused his head to be cut off; *mia soréla ha crédúto partír,* my sister had like to have gone.

The passive participles, which are joined to the tenses of the verb *éssere* agree with their antecedent; that is to say, those participles must be put in the same gender and number as the preceding substantive: example; the captain is praised, *il capitáno è lodáto;* virtue is esteemed, *la virtù è stimáta;* the lazy will be blamed, *i pígri saránno biasimáti;* your jewels are sold, *le vóstre giòje sáno vendúte.*

*** Take notice, it is more elegant in Italian to use the tenses of the verb *veníre,* instead of those of the verb *éssere,* before a participle: example; he is esteemed, *viéne stimáto,* for *è stimáto;* he shall be praised, *verrà lodáto,* for *sarà lodáto;* they shall be blamed, *verránno*

Digitized by Google

biasimáti, for *saránno biasimáti*; and so of all the tenses, and all the persons.

We generally suppress the gerunds, *háving* and *being*, before the participles: example; having said so, *quésto détto*; the sermon being ended, *finíta la prédica.*

*** In attempting to explain or translate an Italian book into English, we must remember that the participles frequently occur without any tenses of the verbs *avére* or *êssere* before them; as, *il quále, intéso'l diségno, maravigliátisi i cónsoli.*

Then it is a sure sign that the gerunds *avéndo* or *esséndo* are suppressed: and, to explain it properly, we must render it as if it were, *il quále, avéndo intéso'l diségno; esséndosi maravigliáti i cónsoli.*

We must also observe, that although *avéndo* and *esséndo* are suppressed before the particles, we must not suppress the conjunctive pronouns, nor the monosyllables that ought to follow the gerunds *avéndo* and *ess ndo*, but we should put them after the participles: example, having seen it, *avéndolo vedúto:* in suppressing *avéndo* we must say, *vedútolo;* being aware of it, *esséndosene accórto:* in suppressing *esséndo*, we transpose *sene* after the participle, and say *accórtosene.*

It is better to place the nominative after the gerund than before; as, the king being a hunting, *esséndo'l rè alla cáccia;* the soldiers fighting valiantly, *combatténdo valorosaménte i soldáti.*

If after the verb there is an accusative, or any other case, we must put the nominative before the verb; for instance, the soldiers being afraid of the enemy, in Italian we must say, *i soldáti teméndo gl' inimici*, and not *teméndo i soldáti gl' inimici.*

CHAP. VII.

Of the Syntax of Adverbs and Prepositions.

AT is expressed in Italian by *da*, or in *cása.*

When *at* is expressed by *da*, we put the pronouns personal after it: example; at our house, *da nói;*

Digitized by Google

nói; at your house, *da vói*; at my house, *da me*; at thy house, *dà te*; at his house, *da lúi*; at her house, *da léi*; at their house, mas. *da lóro*; at their house, fem. *da ésse*.

*** When *at* is expressed by *in cása*, instead of the pronoun personal, we must use the pronouns possessive: as; at our house, *in cása nóstra*; at your house, *in cása vóstra*; at his and her house, *in cása súa*; at thy house, *in cása túa*; in their house, *in cása lóro*.

*** If after *at* there be an article or a pronoun possessive, you must render *at* by *dal*, *dállo*, *dálla*, *da' dái*, *dágli*, *dálle*, or else by *in cása*, with the articles of the genitive; example; at the prince's, *dal príncipe*, or *in cása del príncipe*; at the scholar's, *dállo scoláre*, or *in cása délla scoláre*; at the sister's, *dálla sorella*, or *in cása délla sorélla*; at the men's house, *dágli uómini*, or *in cása dégli uómini*; at my friend's, *dal mío amico*, or *in cása del mío amico*; at his relation's, *da' suói paránti*, or *in cása de' suói paránti*; at the abbot's, *dal signór abbáte*, or *in cása del signor abbáte*.

The indefinite article *di* is not expressed after the adverbs of quantity, *how much*, *how many*, *much*, *little*, *as much as*, *more*, &c.; but these adverbs are made to agree with the following noun, as if they were adjectives: example; how much time, *quánto témpo*; how much meat, *quánta cárne*; how many soldiers, *quánti soldáti*; a great deal of pleasure, *mólto piacére*; a great deal of pain, *mólta péna*; a great many men, *mólti uómini*; a little time, *póco témpo*; a little fever, *póca fébbre*; so much patience, *tánta paziénza*; as much courage, *tánto ánimo*; a great many persons, *mólte persóne*; how many coaches? *quánte carrózze?* I have no more hope, *non ho più speránza*.

*** *A great deal of*, is frequently expressed in Italian by *gran*: example, I have had a great deal of pain, *ho avúto gran péna*; a great deal of rain, *gran piógg'ia*; a great deal of time, *gran témpo*; a great deal of pleasure, *gran piacére*.

*** *A little of*, is rendered in Italian by *póco di*; as, a little bread, *un póco di páne*; a little of compassion, *un póco di pietà*.

Digitized by Google

Quì and *quà* signify here. *Quà* is joined with verbs of motion: example, *venite quà, passáte quà,* come here, pass here.

The Italians often use *costì,* and *costà,* to point out the place where the person is, to whom we speak or write; as *V. S. mi scríva di costì* or *di costà.* See *Lodovíco Dólce, nel capítolo dégli avérbj locáli*; yet I should prefer *costì* to *costà.* The best writers have often followed this rule.

*** The Italians frequently use the adverb *oggì* to express *after-noon,* or *after dinner:* example, come and see me after dinner, *veníte oggì a vedérmi, venite oggì da me.*

Important Remarks on the Participle si, *it is,* or *they,* &c.

SI, used with a verb impersonal, signifies, *it is,* or *they:* example; *si dice,* it is said, *or* they say; they speak, *si párla.*

They not, is expressed by *non si;* as, *non si dice,* they do not say; *non si párla,* they do not speak.

They of it, is expressed by *sene;* as, *sene saprà quálche cósa,* they will know something of it.

They not of it, is expressed by *non séne;* as, *non séne párla,* they do not talk of it.

*** Note, learners are greatly at a loss how to express in Italian, *they us of it, they you of it, they him of it, they me of it, they thee of it,* &c.; yet there is nothing more easy, if you do but turn the phrase by the tenses of the verb *éssere,* to be; example, to render, *they will speak to us of it,* we must turn it and say, *it will be spoken of to us, cene sarà parláto.*

They { will write to you of it, *vene sarà scritto,*
speak to you of it, *gliéne vién parláto,*
write to us of it, *cene viéne scritto.*

They promise me some, *mene sóno promèssi,* or *mene vién promésso,* or *mene véngono promèssi.*

By these last examples you find that it is more elegant to use the verb *venire* than the *verb essére.*

Remember

Digitized by Google

Remember that the pronouns *lo, la, li, le,* are not expressed after the particle *si:* example, they say so, *si dice,* and not, *si lo dice ;* they all know her, *si conoscerà ;* they see them frequently together, *sóno vedúti spésso insiéme.* See, p. 214, what has been said concerning the articles *del, délla, dégli, dálle,* &c.

Observe, nevertheless, that the best writers have often, and even with elegance, expressed these pronouns; but at present they are laid aside except by poets, who use them sometimes to serve the measure of their verse. Hence we no longer say *e' si dice,* but simply *si dice ; e' si conoscerà,* or *la si conoscerà,* but *si conoscerà.* Behold the letters, they will be read, *écco le léttere, si leggeránno.*

The conjunctive pronouns must be transposed whenever the particle *si* comes before them, as I have already observed p. 206.

*** Yet this rule for transposing the conjunctive pronouns, when the particle *si* comes before them, is not general; for there are some phrases in which the conjunctive pronouns must by no means be expressed, but the phrase is changed.

When the conjunctive pronouns are put after the particle *si,* and there is neither a noun nor case after the verb that follows, you must change the phrase without ever expressing the particle *si ;* as, they ask for me, *sóno domándato,* I am asked for; they seek you, *siéte cercáto,* you are sought for; they will praise us, *sarémo lodáti,* we shall be praised.

But if there happens a case after the verb, as, *they ask me for a crown,* you should express the conjunctive pronoun, and say, *mi si dománda úno scúdo,* or *mi viéne domándato uno scúdo ;* they ask some bread of you, *vi si dománda páne ;* they will commend virtue to us, *ci sarà lodáta la virtù.*

*** If the conjunctive pronouns, that come after the particle *si,* be followed by a verb in the preterperfect definite, the phrase must be turned by the verb *éssere,* and you must put the preter-definite *fù,* or *fúrono,* according as you are speaking, in the singular or the plural; as they gave me a book. *mi fù dáto un libro ;* they sent me letters, *mi fúrono mandáte léttere ;* they

Digitized by Google

wrote us a letter, *ci fù scritta una léttera.* Sometimes the phrase is turned thus; they sent for us to Rome, *fúmmo mandáti a Róma;* they blamed you, *fóste biasimáto,* or *V. S. fù biasimáto.*

When the third persons of the verb *avére,* to have, are preceded by the particle *si,* and after those third persons there follows a particle, you are to render the third persons of the verb *to have,* by those of the verb *éssere,* to be; putting them in the same number with the thing mentioned: as; if we had said so, *se si è détto quésto;* if they have read the letters, *se si fóssero létte le léttere.*

When they shall have taken the town, *quándo la città sarà préso.*

See, p. 146, the remarks on impersonal verbs, with the particle *si.*

But when the tenses of the verb *to have,* are preceded by the particle *si,* and there is no particle after the verb *to have,* we must use the tenses of the verb *avére,* instead of those of the verb *éssere:* example; they have some bread to eat, *si ha del páne,* or *pané da mángiáre;* they have servants to wait, *si hánno cervitóri per servíre.*

For the better explanation of the foregoing important remarks on the particle *si,* it will be proper, I apprehend, to add the following observations.

The first is, that this particle *si* must not be used with reciprocal verbs, but the phrase should be turned; otherwise you would have two *si's* joined together, which would be disagreeable. Thus you do not say, *si sérve délle creatúre per offénder Dio,* they make use of the creatures to offend God; but *uno si sérve* or *l'uómo si sérve,* &c.

The second is, that constant experience shews it to be extremely difficult for those who are beginning to learn Italian, to express, *they me of it, they thee of it, they him of it, they us of it, they you of it, they him of it,* joined to a verb in the compound preterite. I shall therefore give here the indicative intire, which may serve as a general rule for all the other moods and verbs; therefore I shall say,

Indicative

Digitized by Google

Indicative present.

They write to me of it, *mene viéne*, or *men' è scritto.*
They write to thee of it, *tene viéne*, or *ten' è scritto.*
They write to him of it, *gliéne viéne*, or *glien' è scritto*
They write to us of it, *cene viéne*, or *cen' è scritto.*
They write to you of it, *vene viéne*, or *ven' è scritto.*
They write to them of it, *ne viéne*, or *n' è scritto lóro.*

In the other tenses I shall only put the first person singular, as it is easy to know the rest by means of the present indicative, which is conjugated entire.

Imperfect.

They did write to me of it, *mene veniva*, or *men' éra scritto*, &c.

Preter-definite.

They wrote to me of it, *mene vénne*, or *mene fù scritto*, &c.

N. B. in the compound tenses we do not make use of the verb *venire*, but of *éssere*. Thus,

Preterperfect.

They have written to me of it, *men' è státo scritto*, &c.

Pluperfect.

They had written to me of it, *men' éra státo scritto*, &c.

Future.

They will write to me of it, *mene sarà scritto*, &c.

I shall insert here another indicative, to clear up the difficulty of *mi si, ti si, gli si*, &c. they me, they thee, they him; and I will say thus,

Indicative present.

They ask me, or I am asked, an Italian and French grammar printed at Basil.

Mi si dománda, or *dimánda*, or *mi viéne domandáta una grammática Italiána e Franzése, stampáta a*, or *in Basílea*,

Digitized by Google

They ask thee, *&c.* — *Ti si dománda*, &c. or *ti viéne domandáto*, or *domandáta.*

They ask him, *&c.* — *Gli si dománda*, &c. or *gli viéne domandáto*, or *domandáta*, &c.

They ask us, *&c.* — *Ci si dománda*, &c. or *ci viéne domandáto*, or *domandáta*, &c.

They ask you, *&c.* — *Vi si dománda*, &c. or *vi viéne domandáto*, or *domandáta*, &c.

They ask them, *&c.* — *Si dománda loro*, &c. or *viéne domandáto*, or *domandáta loro*, &c.

Imperfect.

They did ask me, *&c.* — *Mi si domandáva*, or *mi veniva domandáto*, or *domandáta.*

Preter-definite.

They asked me, *&c.* — *Mi si domandò*, or *mi vénne domandáto*, or *domandáta.*

Preter-perfect.

They have asked me, — *M' é státo domandáto.* / *M' é státa domandáta.* / *Mi s'è domandáto*, or *domandáta.*

Pluperfect.

They had asked me, — *M'éra státo domandáto.* / *M'éra státa domandáta.* / *Mis'éra domandáto*, or *domandáta.*

Future.

They will ask me, — *Mi si domanderà*, or *mi verrà domandáto*, or *domandáta.*

*** Observe, that in using the verb *venire*, instead of *essere*, you do not express the particle *si*.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE prepositions govern some cases, as may be seen in the seventh chapter of the first part, where we treated of prepositions.

The Italians frequently use the particle *pur* only as an ornament of speech; as, *dite pur quél che vi piacerà*, say what you please.

It is customary for them to use *pur* when the English repeat the verb in the imperative mood; as, go, go, *andáte púr*; give, give, *dáte púre*.

Not is always rendered by *non*: example, *non dite niénte*, do not say any thing.

In, before a noun, is expressed by *in*; example, *in Fráncia*, in France.

Some or *any*, before a verb, is expressed by *ne*; as, will you have some or any? *ne volète?*

In, with the article *the*, singular and plural, as also before pronouns possessive, is expressed by *nel*, *néllo*, *élla*, *néi*, &c. as I have already remarked, p. 42: example, in his book, *nel súo libro*.

However, *in* is generally expressed by *in*; as, in Paris, *in Púrigi*; in me, *in me*.

*** Observe, that as often as *in* comes before numeral nouns, to mark the time, it must be expressed by *trà* or *frà*: example; in two hours, *frà due óre*; in three months, *frà tre mési*.

*** But if *in* precedes numeral nouns, without marking the time, it must be expressed by *in*: example, in three bottles, *in tre fiáschi*; in a garden, *in un giardino*.

Very is expressed by *mólto*, &c.: example; he is very merry, *é mólto allégro*; it is very hot, *fá molto cáldo*.

*** *A great deal of*, or *much*, is rendered by *gran* or *grande*: example; there is a great deal of folly, *v' è grán' pazzia*; he has a great deal of vivacity, *ha gránde spírito*.

☞ *More*, or *more of*, is expressed by *maggióre*, whenever you can turn, *more*, by *greater* or *more great*: example; we must have more courage, *bisogna avére maggiór corrággio*; it may be turned thus, *we must have greater*

Digitized by Google

courage: with more boldness, *con maggiór' ardíre;* it may be turned, *with greater boldness.*

*** When *more* denotes a great number or quantity, it is expressed in Italian by *maggiór número di,* or *maggiór quantità di;* as, we must have more soldiers, more men, more wine; *bisógna avére maggiór número,* or *maggiór quantità di soldáti, d'uómini, di víno.*

*** When *more than* happens to precede a word of time, you may put *più* at the end or at the beginning of the phrase: example, it is more than ten years, *sóno diéci ánni e più;* it is more than an hour, *è un' óra ē più;* you may likewise say, *sóno più di diéci ánni, e più d'ún' óra.*

*** The conjunctive *so,* before adjectives and adverbs, is rendered in Italian by *così,* or *sì,* with a grave accent: example, so great, *così gránde; così tárdi:* or *sì gránde, sì tárdi; sì fátto,* masc. *sì fátta,* fem. signifies *such;* they likewise use *così;* as, *cóme, siccóme.*

FOURTH TREATISE.

Remarks on some Verbs and Prepositions that have different Significations.

THE following phrases contain great part of the Italian idioms, which constitute the chief elegance and beauty of that language.

Different significations of andáre.

We may use the verb *andáre,* through all its tenses, to express all the actions of the verbs of motion, by putting the same verbs of motion in the gerund, and the verb *andáre* in the tense and person that the verb of motion ought to be in; as,

He runs; instead of *corre, và corréndo,*

They take a walk, *spasseggiano,* or *vánno spasseggiándo.*

He-

Digitized by Google

He will tell every where, *andrà dicéndo da per tútto.*
They must run, *bisógna che vádano corréndo.*

Make use of the verb *andáre* through all the tenses for the following phrases.

Andár dittro, signifies to follow, to press, or to solicit a [person
Andar' in amóre, to fall in love
Andar' mále, to perish
Andár vía, to go away
Andar' in éstasi, to be in an ecstasy
Andar' a dónne, to visit the ladies
Andar' in cóllera, to put one's self in a passion
Andar cercándo rógna, to seek misfortune or trouble
Andar cercándo il pélo nell' úovo, to censure without reason
Andar' a gálla, to float, to swim on the water
Andar' in buón' óra, to go in peace
Andar' in mal' óra, to perish, to be ruined
Andar per le téste, to be beaten
Andar' avánti, to go before
Andar' alla lúnga, to be tedious
Andar' alle córte, to make haste
Andar' innánzi, to advance, improve, or go farther
Andar' attórno, to go about
Andar' altéro, to be proud or stately
Andar di tra, ad úna cósa, to stand trifling with any thing
Andar col péggio, to be worse
Andar' in semènzia, to run to seed
Andar per lá ménte, to come into one's mind
Andar di mal in péggio, to fall out of the frying pan into
Andar per vióle, to speak impertinently. [the fire
A lúngo andáre, at long run
Ci và délla vita, our life is at stake
Andar' mal in arnése, to be ill dressed. [estate
Andar' a gámbe levéte, to lose, to squander away one's
Andar' a cavállo, to ride on horseback
Andar a diléttо, to go to be merry
Andár a dipórto, to go a sporting
Andar' a solázzo, to go a solacing one's self
Andar' a spásso, to go a walking

Andar'

Digitized by Google

Andar' a giróne, to ramble about
Andar' a fila, to march in order
Andar' a l' óste, to be a soldier
Andar' aláto, to loiter up and down
Andar' a l' árca, to put in pawn
Andar' al bósco, to drink diet-drink
Andar' alla búsca, to go a plundering
Andar' alla mázza, to go to the slaughter
Andar' all' oscúro, to walk in ignorance
Andar' alla stragliáta, to go reeling
Andar' a mónte, to prove vain
Andar' a montágna, to go out of the world
Andar' a ónde, to go waving
Andar' a pélo, to succeed in one's wishes
Andar' a rúba, to go a stealing
Andar' ruóto, to go a wheeling, or to hover
Andár' a sácco, to be plundered
Andar' a sciáno, to go a sideling
Andar' a secónda, to go down the tide
Andar' a scósse, to go a reeling
Andar' a sinístra, to miscarry by the way
Andar' a sóldo, to go for a soldier
Andar' a sparviére, to go a fowling
Andar' a vágna, to thrive well
Andar' a véla, to sail
Andar' a vérso, to succeed well
Andar' a vollolóne, to go rowling
Andar' a zónzo, to lie hulling, as a ship does
Andar' a bándo, to be published by proclamation
Andar barcolóne, to go staggering
Andar carpóne, to go crawling
Andar col calzáre di piómbo, to go heedfully
Andar con le bélle, to go handsomely to work
Andar vóme la biscia all' incánto, to go as a bear to the stake
Andar con la piéna, to be on the strongest side
Andar di púla in fásca, to leap from bough to bough
Andar di potánte, to go an ambling pace
Andar di buóne gámbe, to set willingly about a thing
Andar diciéndo, to publish *or* report
Andar fallito il pensiéro, to fail in one's purpose
Andar gattalóne, to go groping

Andar

Digitized by Google

Andar grósso, to look big.
Andar' in barbería, to be in the powdering-tub
Andar' in béstia, to fall into a passion
Andar in búsca, to go a sharking
Andar' in cérca, to search up and down
Andar' in cimbélis, to be transported with joy
Andar' in cornaváglia, to be a cuckold
Andar' in córso, to go a pirating
Andar' in fáscio,
Andar' in cósa materiále, } to go to work
Andar' in negózio,
Andar' in polpegóne, to go groping up and down
Andar' in piccardía, to go and be hanged
Andar' in rótta, to be routed
Andar' in síncopi, to fall into a swoon
Andar' in stiázzo, to go sharking up and down
Andar' in súcchio, to have one's mouth water
Andar' in tráccia, to go a tracing
Andar' in vólta, to go ranging about
Andar la rónda, to walk the rounds
Andar' per il móndo, to travel up and down the world
Andar per la pésta, to follow the vulgar fashion
Andar per la piána, to go the plain Dunstable way
Andar per fílo, to be forced to do a thing
Andar piúggia a piúggia, to sail close to the shore
Andar ramingo, to be poorly, begging up and down
Andar ratío, to sneak up and down
Andar rattenúto, to go warily to work
Andar spánto, to be extravagantly dressed
Andar sópra le paróle, to believe fair words
Andar strétto, to go about a thing sparingly
Andar capinándo, to go a begging
Andar tentóne, to grope about
Andar vuóte, to miss one's aim
Andársene préso alle grída, to believe every idle report

Different significations of dáre.

DARE signifies, to give, to fight, to strike
Dar d'ócchio, to cast one's eyes on

Dar'

Digitized by Google

Dar' addósso ad úno, to throw one's self upon a person
Dar' a gámbe, to run away
Dar nélla réte, to fall into the snare
Dar le cárte, to deal *or* give the cards
Dar ánimo, to give courage, or encourage
Dársi 'l cúore, or *l' ánimo,* to have courage
Dar féde, to believe
Dar' ad intendére, to make one believe
Dar del tu, to thee and thou one
Dar' in núlla, not to succeed
Darsi l' ácqua a piédi, to praise one's self
Dar' in lúce, to publish
Dársi a fáre, to set about a thing
Dar nel rósso, to be a little on the red
Dársi pensiéro, to take care for
Dar del signóre, to call one a gentleman
Dar del furfánte, to call one a rogue
Dar paróla, to promise
Dar ne' ládri, to fall into the hads of thieves
Dar la búrla ad úno, to laugh at a person
Dar léva, to provoke
Dar' in préstito, to lend
Dar fuóci, to burn, to set on fire
Dar sicurtà, to bail
Dar' in stravagánze, to say things contrary to common sense
Dar' nel mátto, to play the mad-man
Dar la quádra, to criticise
Dar la cáccia, to put to flight
Dar princípio, or *fine,* to begin or end
Dar cónto, to give an account
Darsi allo stúdio, to apply one's self to study.
Dar cálci al vénto, e púgni all ária, to fight with one's [shadow
Dar di bócca da per tútto, to concern one's self with every [man's business
Dar da ridere, da parláre, to make one laugh, to make [one speak
Dársi la záppa sù'l piéde e la mázza in cápo, to wrong [one's self
Dársi bel témpo, to divert one's self
Dar' a beccáre, to cram poultry
Dar' a credénza, to sell upon credit

Dar'

Digitized by Google

Dar' addiétro, to give back
Dar' ádito, to give access to
Dar' álla máno, to bribe
Dar' all' árme, to cry out for help
Dar' a pigióne, to let out for rent
Dar' a rúbu, to give to be plundered
Dar' assúnto, to give charge of
Dar' a táglio, to strike with the edge
Dar' a travérso, to hit across
Dar' a vedére, to give one to understand
Dar baggiáne, or *gonfiáre alcúno,* to puff one up with vain
Dar baldánza, to embolden. [hopes
Dar bándo, to banish by proclamation
Dar beccáre alla pútta, to sink money at play
Dar bríga, to trouble one
Dar cagióne, to give cause
Dar cámpo, to give liberty
Dar cápo, to come to the end of the matter
Dar cápo máno, to go beyond reason in a business
Dar caróte, to make one believe any thing
Dar che pensáre, to give cause of suspicion
Dar capiménto, to finish
Dar credénza, to give credit to
Dar cróllo, to shake
Dar cúcche, to give one toys
Dar da bére, to give drink
Dar da dormíre, to give one a night's lodging
Dar da mangiáre, to give one some food
Dar da rídere, to give cause of laughter
Dar de' cálci, to kick
Dar de' cálci al rováio, to be hanged
Dar degl' ingóffi, to give a good box on the ear
Dar delle bastonáte, to beat with a cudgel
Dar delle bótte, to beat with stripes
Dar delle calcágna, to kick
Dar delle coltélla, to wound with any weapon
Dar delle máni, to strike with one's hands
Dar delle múccie, to slap one with a fox's tail
Dar delle púgna, to cuff
Dar déntro, to fall to
Dar di brócca, to hit the nail on the head

Dar

Digitized by Google

Dar nóme, to spread a report
Dar nórma, to prescribe a rule
Dar' ógliá, to sooth one
Dar' ómbra, to give suspicion
Dar' ópera, to endeavour at a thing
Dar panzána, to feed one with vain hopes
Dar párte, to impart or share
Dar passáto, to omit
Dar pásto, to feed one
Dar per Dio, to give for God's sake
Dar ricápito, to deliver safely
Dar sésto, to give order
Dar spálle, to abet
Dar sténto, to give cause of sorrow
Dar' una bottisáfiola, to put one into a quandary
Dar una bornióla, to give false judgment at gaming
Dar nel cappellácio, to reprimand one severely
Dar un carpíno, to beat one soundly
Dar vísta, to seem to do a thing
Dar víta, to give time or life
Dar' una fínta, to make a feint
Dar' una gíra vólta, to walk a turn
Dar' un' occhiáta, to cast an eye on
Dar' un grifóne, to strike one in the mouth
Dar' un pax tecum, to stun one with a blow
Dár la pe' chiássi, to get out of the road
Dár la vínta, to yield the victory
Dársi, to apply one's self to
Dársi a che si sia, to be for any thing
Dársi a crédere, for man to persuade himself
Dársi a dilátti, to give one's self over to pleasure
Dársi ad inténdere, to flatter one's self
Dársi ad úno, to give one's self up to one
Dársi attórno, to go the round
Dársi briga, nóia, fastídio, to trouble one's self
Dársi in préda, to yield one's self as a prey
Dársi in úno, to refer one's self to one
Dársi maravíglia, to wonder at
Dársi martéllo, to vex one's self
Dársi páce, to live quietly
Dársi vánto, to brag of one's self

Different

Digitized by Google

Different significations of fáre.

FAR ánimo,	to give courage
Fársi ánimo,	to take courage
Far' a propósito,	to be proper, or fit
Far mótto,	to make a sign
Far del brávo,	to set up for a bully
Far scélta,	to chuse
Far pómpa,	to boast
Far il grágno,	to pour at one
Far danári,	to heap up money
Far génte, or *soldáti,*	to raise soldiers
Il far délla lúna,	the new moon
Al Far del giórno,	at the break of day
Su'l Far délla nótte,	towards the evening
Far di mestiéri,	to be necessary
Far guadágni,	to win
Far due vólte l'ánno,	to bear fruit twice a year
Fársi innánzi,	to come forward
Fársi in quà,	to approach, or advance
Fársi in là,	to go back
Fársi in diétro,	to retire
Far brindisi,	to toast a health
Far capolino,	to deceive or ensnare
Far la spia,	to be a spy
Far páce,	to agree
Fate páce,	agree among yourselves
Far a bottino,	to share alike
Far' a capégli,	to pull one another by the hair
Far' accogliénza,	to shew kindness to one
Far' a compásso,	to work by the compass
Far' a concorrénza,	to strive, to vie
Far' acquísto,	to gain
Far' a créder,	to make one believe
Far' a gára,	to strive for the victory
Far aguáti,	to lay ambushes
Far' a guéchia,	to knit
Far' a púgni,	to play at fisty cuffs
Far' aiúto,	to help one
Far' al bácchio,	to do, go, or speak to no purpose
Far' all' amóre,	to make love

Far'

Digitized by Google

Far' alla pálla d'úno, to toss one about
Far' alle coltelláte, to fight with weapons
Far' alle púgna, to play at handy cuffs
Far' álto, to halt
Far' a chéti, to play least in sight
Far' a máno, to come to blows
Far' a malcuóre, to do against one's will
Far' a méta, to do by halves
Far' a miceíno, to mince
Far' a pennéllo, to do a thing exactly
Far' apprésto, to make preparation
Far' a regátta, to struggle or scramble
Far' a rósto, to roast meat
Far' a sapére, to make one know
Far' a scássi, to throw or fight with stones
Far' a tacéi, to make one be silent
Far' avánzo, to thrive
Far' báco báco, to play at bo-peep
Far bándo, to proclaim
Far béffe, to flout at
Far bellino bellino, to sooth or fawn upon
Far bisógno, to be needful
Far bróglio, to make a hurly-burly
Far buóna riuscità, to come to a good effect
Far buóna vicinánza, to keep fair with one's neighbour
Far buón giúoco, to be merry and jovial
Far buón partito, to make a good offer
Far cantáre, to make one yield
Far capelláccio, to beat a man with his own weapons
Far cápo, to grow to a head, as a sore does
Far cápo ad úno, to have recourse to one for help
Far cápo in un luógo, to meet in some appointed place
Far caséle, to pump a man of his secrets
Far cáso, to make account of, or esteem
Far césso, to make mouths at
Far cérca, to seek after
Far cérchio, to make a ring
Far cervéllo, to call his wits together
Far che che si sía alla mácchia, to do things in hugger-mugger
Far cipíglio, to look frowningly.
Far colazióne, to breakfast

Far

Digitized by Google

Far cólta, to make a collection
Far comparíta, to make appearance
Far cómpra, to buy a bargain
Far cóme lo sparviére, to live from hand to mouth
Far congiúra, to conspire
Far consérva, to lay up in store
Far cónto, to reckon
Far cópia, to make a copy
Far cordóglio, to lament
Far corteggio, to fawn upon one
Far cóse di fuóco, to do wonderful things
Far cuóre, to encourage
Far da céna, to get supper ready
Far del grande, to take state upon one
Far del vezóso, to play the wanton
Far de cappéllo, to pull off one's hat
Non Far di méno, not to chuse but
Far di viéto, to prohibit
Far d'ócchio, to wink upon one.
Far dósso di buffóne, to do a thing, and not care what the [world says
Far d' una lánein un fáso, to bring a noble to nine-pence
Far duói chiódi in una cálda, to kill two birds with one stone
Far entráre úno in vatigia, to provoke one to anger
Far fáccia, to set a good face on things
Far fagótto, to pack up one's awls, and to be gone
Far figliuóli, to beget and bear children
Far filáre úno, to make one do any thing
Far fórte, to strengthen
Far frétta, to make haste
Far frónte, to face
Far fuóco nell' orício, to do one's business secretly
Far gábbo, to flout at
Far gála, to be gay and merry
Far galleria, to shew signs of joy
Far génte, to raise men
Far giornáta, to fight a battle
Far grázia, to do a favour
Far gréppo, to make up a mouth
Far grida, to cry out
Far gruzzólo, to hoard up money
Far osteria, to keep an inn

Far

Digitized by Google

Far' i fátti suói, to follow one's own affairs
Far' il balórdo, to play the ninny [streets
Far' il bèllo in piázza, to shew one's fine clothes in the
Far' il buón pro, to do one good when one eats
Far' il compito, to end one's task
Far' il diávolo, to play the devil
Far' il fórno, to play the baker
Far' il figadétto, to speak in the canting language
Far' il gattóne, to make as if one saw or knew not
Far' il giórgio, to strut in fine clothes
Far' il Latino a cavállo, to be put hard to it
Far' il rómbo, to make a rumbling noise
Far' il rósso, to play the minion
Far' il sánto, to play the hypocrite
Far' il vérno, to pass away the winter
Far' il séme, to come to perfection
Far' instánza, to be urgent with one
Far' in piédi, to jumble standing
Far la búsca, to scramble for
Far' la fèsta ad úno to endeavour to kill one
Far la fischiáta, to make a whistling noise
Far la gátta mórta, to play at bo-peep
Far la ninfa, to mince it
Far la mótte, to pass the night
Far la rónda, to walk the round
Far la ruóta del pavóne, to play the peacock
Far la scárpa, to cut a purse
Far la scopérta, to keep a watch
Far la scórta, to be a guide
Far la bózza, to cuckold one
Far le cárte, to deal at cards
Far le paróle, to speak at large
Far la lépre vécchia, to avoid a danger that's seen
Far le spálle góbbe, to shrug up one's shoulders
Far la sica, to flirt at one
Far le spése, to bear one's charges
Far le stimáte, to esteem one greatly
Far leváta, to raise men
Far le vólte del lióne, to be still walking in one place
Far lo spasimáto, to over-play the lover
Far lo spaventácchio, to brag much

Far

Digitized by Google

Far luógo, or *piázza*, to give place
Far mála riuscità, to have ill luck
Far mála vicinánza, to deal unhandsomely with one's neighbours
Far mal' d' occhio, to have sore eyes.
Far mal pró, to do one no good
Far máschera, to go a mumming
Far mercáto, to cheapen
Far mercè, to do and shew mercy
Far meréndu, to eat one's nuncheon
Far mina, to seem to do a thing
Far mótto, to give notice of
Far mótto ad úno, to salute or send word
Far natále, to keep Christmas
Far' ócchio, to wink at
Far ógni possíbile, to do one's utmost
Far' ópera, to do the same
Far oréchio di mercánte, to hear, and not to seem to hear
Far paragóne, to compare together
Far partíto, to make a match or bargain
Far passággio, to pass over slightly
Far passáta, to get easily through a business
Far pásto, to eat a meal's meat
Far pátto, to make a bargain
Far peoádio, to live by one's wits
Far pedúccio, to sooth one
Far pensiére, to intend
Far pónta, to make an end
Far pónta fálsa, to make a false thrust
Far pópolo, to make one among the rest
Far prézzo, to make esteem of
Far préstito, to lend
Far prò, to do good
Far questióne, to question
Far rabúffo, to chide
Far ragióne, to do right or pledge one
Far réffa, to make resistance
Far ricredénte, to make one change his opinion
Far richiámo, to appeal unto
Far róbba, to heap up riches
Far ruóta, to wheel or hover about
Far facçáia, to fret inwardly

Digitized by Google

Far sácco, to hoard up
Far saccománo, to sack or ravage
Far sálvo, to give a volley of shot
Far sángue, to let blood
Far sapére, to let one know
Far scála, to come to a landing-place
Far scommésse, to lay a wager
Far scónto, to make an abatement
Far sembiánte, or *vista,* to make a show of
Far sfóggi, to brave it or be lavish
Far sicurtà, to be bound
Far spálla, to back one
Far stáre, to over-reach one
Far stáre fórte, to over-reach one cunningly
Far stáre a ségno, to keep one under
Far stáre a flecchétto, to force one to his obedience
Far tantára, to be gay and merry together
Far tavoláccio, to prepare for good cheer
Far tempóne, to live a merry life
Far tésta, to make head
Far trébbio, to live merrily in good company
Far' il tribolo, to weep for money
Far tútte l' nóva in un paniére, to venture all in one bottom
Far vadére laciuóla ad uno, to make the fire fly out of one's eyes
Far velére, to cause to prevail.
Far vedúta, vista, finta, to make a show
Far vedúta, to make one believe what is not
Far véle, to sail
Far vélo, to make resistance
Far vézzi, to play the wanton
Far' una braváta, to make a bravado
Far' un cavallétto ad uno, to cheat one roguishly
Far' una drincáta, to make a merry drinking
Far' una gióstra ad úno, to put a jest upon one
Far' una prédica ad úno, to admonish one fairly
Far' una tagliáta, to keep a swaggering
Far' una farfallóna, to commit some notorious fault
Far' un frégio ad uno, to mark one in the face
Far un manichétto, to point at one in scorn
Far' un maróne, to commit a great error
Far un passerótto, to do a thing hand over head

Far'

Digitized by Google

Far un pénzolo,	to be hanged by the neck
Far úno smácco ad úno,	to affront one
Far úno stáglio,	to fix
Far' un tíro,	to shoot or play a prank
Far' vuotáre la sélla,	to supplant a man
Far' uóva,	to lay eggs

Different significations of stáre.

WE use this verb *stáre* to mark an action of repose, by putting the verb that follows in the gerund, or infinitive, with *a*, or *ad*.

Stà studiándo, or *stà a studiáre,*	he studies
Stánno scrivéndo, or *stánno a scrívere,*	they write
Starát eleggéndo, or *a leggére insiéme,*	you shall read together

Stáre has several other significations; as

Star' in piédi,	to stand upright
Star ben o mále,	to be well or ill
Star sù, to rise; *státe sù,*	rise
Star giù,	to sit down
Státe giù,	sit down
Star' a sentíre, to listen; *sto a sentíre,*	I listen
Star' a sedére,	to be sitting
Státe a sedére,	sit down
Stà béne,	it is well, it is very well
Star per uscíre,	to be just going out
Star ben a cavállo,	to sit well on horseback
Star in cása,	to stay at home
Star lésto,	to be upon one's guard
Star sù le búrle,	to jest, or banter
Star séldo,	to hold out stoutly, or fast
Star per cadére,	to be ready to fall
Star per morire,	to be like to die
Star' in dúbbio,	to be in doubt
Star' a vedére,	to expect the issue
Star con le méni alla cintúra,	to stand idle, or with one's hands in one's p[illegible]
Star sù l[illegible]úa,	to look

Digitized by Google

Quésto vi stà béne,	that becomes you well
Quésto non mi stà béne,	that does not become me well
Star' a báda,	to linger or expect
Star' a bécco,	to out-face
Star' a bottéga,	to mind one's shop
Star' a crépa cuóre,	to live at heart's ease
Stár ad alcúno,	to be at any man's turn
Star' in diságio,	to live in sorrow
Star' a dormíre,	to lie sleeping
Star' a fáre,	to be doing
Star' a frónte,	to out-face
Star' a gála,	to float
Star' a giacére,	to be lying along
Star' al détto,	to rely on a man's word
Star' alla pósta,	to watch for an opportunity
Star' all'erta,	to look heedfully about
Star' alle vedétte,	to stand centinel on a tower
Star' allégro,	to live or be merry
Star' al móndo,	to live in the world
Star' a locánda,	to live in a hired room
Star' al paragóne,	to bear the touchstone
Star' a martéllo,	to live in anxiety
Star' a panciólle,	to live in clover
Star' in badiále,	
Star' in pericolo,	to be in danger
Star' a pétto,	to be opposite
Star a pigióne,	to live in a rented house
Star' a pállo pésto,	to be at the point of death
Star' appoggiáto,	to lean upon
Star' a schimbéci,	to haunt bad places
Star' apprésso,	to stand or dwell near
Star' a ségno,	to stand near the mark
Star' in speránza,	to live in hopes
Star' aspettándo,	to expect
Star' a stéuto,	to live in sorrow
Star' attórno,	to stand about
Star tu per tu,	to be hail fellow well met
Star' a úno,	to depend upon one
Star' béne a cása,	to be well to pass
Star buóna pézza,	to stand a good while
Star cáldo,	to lie warm

Star

Digitized by Google

Star chúto, to be hushed
Star con áltri, to dwell with others
Star della détta, to answer for a debtor
Star di buóna vóglia, to be merry
Star di mála vóglia, to be sad
Star di sópra, to lie over
Star di sótto, to lie under
Star frésco, to be in an ill taking
Star' in agguáto, to lie in wait
Star' in bilánсia, to stand in doubt
Star' innamoráto, to be in love
Star' innánzi, to stand before
Star' in ármi, to be in arms
Star' in bilico, } to be in doubt
Star' in bistánte, }
Star' in cervéllo, to have a care, or to be wary
Star' in dozzína, to board
Star in létto, to be abed
Star' in móltо, to lie asleep
Star' in orécchio, to hearken
Star in pendénte, to be in suspence
Star' in pósta, to wait narrowly
Star' in rischio, to be in danger
Star' in se, to be positive
Star' in sentóre, to listen with suspicion
Star' in sospétto, to be suspected
Star' in su'l pontiglio, to stand upon punctilios
Star' in villa, to live in the country
Star' in zúcca, to lie open to all weathers
Star' in zúrlo, to stand in a maze
Star maggése, to live idle
Star lontáno, to dwell afar off
Star per, to stand for, to be about
Star sópra di se, to presume too much on one's self
Star púnta per púnta, to be always at variance
Star sáno, to be in health
Star su'l avíso, to be prepared
Star su'l dúro, to be obstinate
Star su'l ritróso, to be coy
Star su'l tirátо, to stand upon strict points
Star tra'l sì e'l nò, to be between yes and no

Digitized by Google

Star-vicino, to be neighbours
Star vigiláte, to be watchful
Star ztto, to be mum or hushed

Different significations of avére.

AVER dell uómo da béne, to have the qualities of an honest man
Avér del miráccolo, to look on it as a miracle
Avér cáro, avér da cáro, to be well pleased
Avér a béne, to approve of
Avér per béne, to like or consent to
Avér per mále, to disapprove of
Avér a mále, to dislike
Avér' a cuóre, to have at heart
Avér' il cápo altróve, to think of other things
Avér da fáre, to be busy
Avér' in prégio, in istima, to esteem
Avér in' ódio, to hate
Avér per costúme, to be wont
Avér signifies to believe; as, *l'hó per ignoránte,* I believe him ignorant
Avér' il vízio nelle ósse, to be very vicious
Avér' a capitále, to esteem much
Avér' a cúra, to be careful of
Avér' a dáre, to give
Avér' a dispétto, to have in despite
Avér a dispiacére, to be displeased with
Avér' a fastídio, to loath
Avér agína, to be well in breath
Avér' agío, to be at ease
Avér' a grádo, to esteem
Avér' alle máni, to have in hand
Avér' a máni, to have ready at hand
Avér a ménte, to remember well
Avér' ánimo, to have courage or a mind to
Avér' a nóia, to loath
Avér' a pétto, to have at heart
Avér' ardíre, to dare
Avér schérno, to scorn
Avér a schífo, to loath

Avér

Digitized by Google

Avér' a tornáre, to be about to return
Avér' a vile, to hold very cheap
Aver' bel témpo, to live a merry life
Aver buóna vóce, to be well spoken of
Avér che si sia per uw pézzo di páne, to have a thing dog-cheap
Avér cimiére ad ôgni elmétto, to be ready for any thing
Avér del tóndo, to have a little wit
Avér déstro, to have fit occasion
Avér di che, to have wherewith
Avér diétro, to contemn
Avér di grázia, to take it as a favour
Avér fáccia, to blush for shame
Avér fáccia di pallótola, to have a brazen face
Avér fatica, to be in want
Avér féde in, to confide in
Avér fréddo in piédi, to be in great want
Avér frégа, to lust after
Avér frétta, to be in haste
Avér fúmo, to be proud
Avér góla, to have a longing desire
Avér grand' opinióne, to presume much on one's self
Avér il fído rósso, to be wrapt in one's mother's shift
Avér il' úopo, to have need
Avér il cápo a grílli, to have one's wits wool-gathering
Avér il cervéllo a oriuóli, to be fickle
Avér' il cervéllo che vóli, to have a roving head
Avér' il cimúrro, to have a whimsy in one's head
Avér' il suo piéno, to have one's full allowance
Avér' il tórto, to be in the wrong
Avér' in conségna, to have in trust
Avér' in cónto, to have esteem of
Avér' in guárdia, to keep
Avér' in negligénza, to be careless
Avér' in órdine, to have in readiness
Avér' in sù le dita, to have at one's fingers ends
Avér la gambáta, to wear the willow green
Avér la scolazióne, to have the running of the reins
Avér la pálla in méno, to have the law in one's own hand
Avér l' asso nel ventrígliо, to have an itch at gaming
Avér lingua, to have notice of a thing

Digitized by Google

Avér l' ócchio al panéllo, to mind one's business
Avér l' ósso del poltráne, to have a bone in one's leg
Avér le campáne grôsse, to be deaf
Avér le budélla in un paniére, to be in bodily fear
Avér le máni ad uno, to hold one fast at his pleasure
Avér le traséggole, to take one thing for another
Avér luógo, to be expedient
Avér l' óvvo móndo, to have any thing without pains
Avér mála gátta a peláre, to have an ill crow to pluck
Avér mála vóce, to be ill spoken of
Avér mále campáne, to be deaf
Avér mangiáte néci, to have spoken ill of the absent
Avér martéllo, to be passionately jealous of
Avér mézzo, or *módo,* to be able, or have means
Avér nell' idéa, to bear in mind
Avér' óbligo, to be obliged
Avér' ócchio, to have a fair outside
Avér' ócchio di ramárro, to have a taking look
Avér odóre, to have an inkling of a thing
Aver ómbra, to be fearful of
Avér paúra, to be fearful
Avér pensiére, to be full of care, or thoughtful
Avér per scusáto, to excuse one
Avér piéde, to get footing
Avér poco sále in zúcca, to have but little wit
Avér ragióne da véndere, to have reason to spare
Avér sdégno, to disdain
Avér sónno, to be sleepy. [crime
Aver taccáto la códa di mal pélo, to be tainted with some
Aver su la púnta délla língua, to have at one's tongue's [end
Avér tútto l suo in su'l tavoliére, to have one's all at stake

---

Different significations of éssere.

ESSER per fáre, to be just going to do
Esser da quálche cósa, to be good for something
Esser da póco, to have but little wit
Esser da niénte, to be good for nothing
Esser a cavállo, to be out of trouble or pain
Non éser da tánto, not to be capable of, not to be able

Esser

Digitized by Google

Esser di giovámento, to help, to assist
Esser di buóna náscita, to come of a good family
Esser per la málu via, to be ruined, to be in a bad condition
Esser per la frátte, to be undone or ruined.
Esser fubr di bológna, to be ignorant
Esser' a cavalliére, to have the upper hand
Esser' acciviito, to be well provided
Esser' a férri, to lie close together
Esser' a grádo, to be acceptable
Esser' a cóste, to lie encamped
Esser' o mal partíto, to be in a bad taking
Esser' endázzo, to have the plague reign
Esser' a párte, to be partaker of
Esser' a pósta, to be prepared
Esser' in questióne, to squabble
Esser ben vedúto, to be kindly entertained
Esser d' ánso, to deem
Esser béne in gámbe, to be strong and lusty
Esser brillo, to be foxed
Esser dánno, to be pitied
Esser di póca leváta, to be of small worth
Esser di tésta, to be hare-brained
Esser fórza, to be constrained
Esser' in détta, to have good luck at play
Esser' in assétto, to be prepared
Esser' in détto, to be agreed
Esser' in disgrázia, to be in disgrace
Esser' in éssere, to be in state, quality, and condition
Esser' in faccénda, to be busy
Esser' in fióri, to be in one's prime
Esser in fortúna, to be lucky
Esser' in fréga, to lust after
Esser' in pagliuólo, to be in child-bed
Esser' in piéga, to be bending
Esser' in predicaménto, to be in consideration
Esser' in precénto, to be always ready
Esser in súcchio, to have one's mouth water
Esser' in úggia, to be troublesome to others
Esser largo di bócca, to be a great talker
Esser' luógo, to be convenient.
Esser mála brétta, to sow sedition among friends

Digitized by Google

Esser mal veduto, to be unwelcome
Esser páce, to be quits at play
Esser tenúto, to be beholden to
Esser' una cóppa d'óro, to be one of a thousand

Different significations of sapére.

SAPE'RE, signifies to know or perceive
Sapér a ménte, to know by heart
Sapér' a ména dito, to have at one's fingers' ends
Sapér mále, to displease, to smell ill
Quésto mi sa mále, that displeases me
Sapér di buóno, sapér buóno, to smell well
Sapér di cattivo, to smell ill
Sapér di múffo, or *di múcido,* to have a mouldy smell
Sapér di niénte, to have no smell, to smell of nothing
Sapér trovár' il pélo nell' úovo, to be cunning, to be sharp
Ti so dére, I can tell thee
Sapér di léttere, to have a smattering of learning
Sapér di múschio, to taste or smell musk
Sapér de sécco, to smell of the cask
Sapér méglio, to take in better part
Sapér per lo sénno, to know by rote

Different significations of tenére.

TENE'RE da úno, to be of one's side
Tenér' a báda, to amuse one
Tenér' in contrário, to be of a contrary opinion
Tenére per galánt' uómo, to believe one an honest man
Lo tengo per mátto, I take him to be mad
Tenére le lágrime, to forbear weeping
Non ho potúto ténor le risa, I could not forbear laughing
Tenére le risa, to forbear laughing
Tenér' alla tráccia, to pursue
Tenér' cónto a' úno, to make an account of, to esteem a [person
Tenérla per se, to keep a thing to one's self,
Tenétela per vói, keep it for yourself
Tenér' a ménte, to call to mind
Tenére la favélla ad úno, to hinder one from speaking
Il tále ci tiéne una tále, such a one keeps such a one

Tenér'

Digitized by Google

Tenér' a battésimo,	to stand godfather
Tenér mano al fúrto,	to be accessary to a theft
Tenér carrózza e servitóri,	to keep a coach and servants
Téni quésto,	take that (in the imperative)
Tenéte la candéla,	take the candle
Tenér' il sácco,	to hold the bag
Tenére la battáta,	to beat time in music
Tenére l' invíto,	to accept of what is proposed
Tenér' a diéta,	to keep low in diet
Tenér' a ciménto,	to hold to a trial
Tenér' a pívolo,	to live at rack and manger
Tenér' a sténto,	to keep in pain
Tenér' a sua pósta,	to keep one at his back
Tenére córte bandíta,	to keep open house
Tenére dozzína,	to keep a boarding house
Tenér' a báda,	to hold in suspense
Tenér' il bordóne,	to be still in one's mind
Tenére férmo,	to keep one's word
Tenér' in bócca,	to keep a secret
Tenére la béstia in cavézza,	to bridle one's appetites
Tenére le óche in pastúra,	to keep wenches at rack and
Tenére le póste,	to hold stakes. [manger
Tenére máno,	to lend a hand to
Tenére ménte,	to heed
Tenére mercáto,	to bargain
Tenére ragióne,	to judge according to law
Tenére parlaménto,	to hold a parley
Tenér' in sospéso,	to hold in suspence
Tenére per féde,	to take upon trust
Tenére trattáto,	to hold correspondence with

Different significations of volére.

VOLERE,	signifies to believe; as,
Vógliono alcúni,	some believe
Volérla con úno,	to set upon one
Volér béne,	to love
Volér mále,	to hate
Volér piú tósto,	to have rather
Qualsivóglia,	whatsoever

Digitized by Google

Le cose vógliono éssere cosi,	things must be so
Si vúole,	they will, or are willing
Volére dire,	to mean
Volére méglio,	to have rather
Volére la báia,	to affect mocking
Volére la gátta,	to pick a quarrel with one
Volére múle di mórte,	to hate deadly
Volésse pur Dio,	oh! would to God

Different significations of venire.

VENIR méno, venír mánco,	to fall into weakness, or
Venír' in súcchio,	to have one's mouth water. [faint
Venír' in sórte,	to fall to one's lot
Venire sótto il nóme,	to go by the name of
Venire stimáto,	to be esteemed
Viéne biasimáto,	he is blamed
Venir' alle strétte,	to come to blows
Non mi vién béne,	it does not please me,
Quésto vi vién béne,	that becomes you well
Quánti véne véngono?	how many must you have?
Mene véngono dúe,	I must have two of them
Mi viéne vóglia,	I have a mind or desire
Venir' adósso,	to fall upon
Venir' al di sópra,	to have the upper hand
Venir' al quía,	to come to the reason of a thing
Venir' alle prése,	to come to close fight
Venir' alle brútte,	to come to foul words
Venir' a battáglia,	to fight a battle
Venir' a béne,	to come to good
Venir' a dire,	to import or mean
Venir' álle máni,	to come to blows
Venire detto,	to be said
Venire pósti gli ácchi,	to fix one's eyes on
Venire fallíto,	to miss one's aim or purpose
Venire scontráto,	to meet withal
Venir' in táglio,	to suit well
Venir' in cáldo,	to grow proud
Venir trováto,	to happen to find

Of

Digitized by Google

Of the particles ci *and* vi.

CI signifies *us;* he speaks to us, *ci párla,* &c *Vi* signifies *you;* he speaks to you, *vi párla;* he gives you, *vi dá.*

Ci and *vi* are adverbs of place; as,

Ci siámo, we are there, or at it.

V' andrémo, we will go thither.

Ci and *vi* are conjunctive pronouns, when they signify *us* and *you;* and when *ci* and *vi* signify *there, at it, thither,* &c. they are adverbs of place.

Different significations of che.

CHE signifies *that, who, whom, that he, that she, that they, which, what?*

Che signifies *what?* what man is that? *che uómo è?*

Che? what? fem. what house? *che cása?*

Che? what? plural mas. what books have they? *che libri hánno?*

Che plural fem. what lessons? *che lezioni?*

Che signifies *because; che la dónna nel desiár è ben di noi più frále,* because a woman is much more weak in her desires than we are. *Guarini nel Pástor fído.*

Che signifies *so that,* or *in that mánner.* I will do it, so that, or in that manner, that you shall be contented, *farò che saréte conténto.*

Different significations of via.

VIA signifies *the way;* example, by the way of Paris, *per la via di Parigi.*

Via is put after the verbs *andáre, passáre, condúrre, fuggíre, gittáre,* or *gettáre,* and then these verbs have more force and elegance: as, *andár via,* to go, to go away; *và via,* get thee away, *pássa via, furfánte,* get thee gone, rascal; *condúrre via;* to bring out: *fuggír via,* to run away; *gittáte via quésto,* throw this away.

Via

Digitized by Google

Via signifies *much:* as, much more learned, *via più dótto.*

Via signifies *away, away;* as, away, away, gentlemen, do not fear, *via, via, signóri, non temète.*

Via is sometimes taken for *vólta;* example, *tre via tre sóno nóve,* three times three are nine; *quattro via quáttro sóno sédici,* four times four make sixteen.

Via signifies the means; as, by the means of the passages in the holy fathers, *per via de' testi de' santi pádri.*

Different significations of da.

DA is oftentimes the ablative of the indefinite article, and signifies in English *from;* example, *ho ricevúto da Piétro,* I have received from Peter.

Da' with an apostrophe is the ablative of the definitive article, and signifies *from the,* or by *the:* example, *è stimáto da' Francési,* he is esteemed by the French.

Dà signifies *he gives;* example, *mi da buóna speránza,* he gives me good hope, &c.

Da signifies *upon the faith:* example, *da galánt' uómo,* upon the faith of an honest man.

Da signifies *like:* example, *ha trattáto da galánt' uómo,* he has acted like an honest man. *V. S. párla da amico,* you speak like a friend.

Da signifies *of,* or *to put:* example, *úna scátola da tabácco,* a tobacco-box, or a box to put tobacco in.

Da signifies *about:* example, *un' uómo attempáto da cinquánta ánni,* a man about fifty years old.

Da signifies *from:* example, from Rome to Paris, *da Róma fin' a Parigi. Da che vi viddi,* since I saw you.

Da before infinitives signifies *to be:* example, it is easy to be seen, *è fácile da vedére.*

Different significations of per.

PER signifies *for;* example, for me, *per me.*

Per signifies *through,* or *all over:* example, through or all over the city, *per tútta la cittá.*

Per signifies *during;* as, during a year, *per un ánno.*

Per signifies *to fetch,* and *seek after:* example, go fetch

Digitized by Google

fetch some wine, *andáte per víno*; go seek for a physician, *andáte per un médico.*

Per signifies *what*: example, what good soever it be, *per buóno che sía.*

Per signifies *each* or *every*: example, one in each hand, *úno per máno.*

Per signifies *just* or *ready to*: example, he is just going away, he is ready to go, *è per partíre.*

Per signifies *every one*: example, every one, *un per úno.*

Pér signifies *depending on*: example, it does not depend on me, *non résta per me.* It signifies, *as far as*: example, as far as I see, *per quel che védo.*

Per signifies *as for*: example, as for me, *io per me.*

Per ánche signifies *not yet*; example, I have not seen him yet, *non l'ho per ánche vedúta.*

Different significations of si, ne, *and* pur *or* púre.

THOUGH the following particles *si, ne, pur* or *púre*, are not prepositions, yet their vast extent and signification in Italian has induced me to insert the different acceptations of them here, for the greater ease and advantage of the learner.

S I

Signifies *it is, they, men, the world, yet, so, so as, as much, as well, until, nevertheless, himself*, &c.

Example.

Si dice, it is said, or reported.

Si ámа, or *si ámano*, they love.

Si dirà, the world or men will say.

Sì signór, yes, sir.

Cavalière sì aventuráto non fù mái, never was there so fortunate a gentleman.

Sì per il mío, quánto per il vóstro interésse, as well for my interest as yours.

Sì la móglie come il marito, as well the wife as the husband.

Non si riténne di córrere sì fù a cása, he did not cease running till he got home.

Si

Digitized by Google

Sì vi ámo, perchè, nevertheless I love you, because.
Egli si ricordò, he remembered himself or herself.

*** Note, that when *si* is accented, it is always an adverb.

NE

Signifies *nor, neither, in the, with, hence, thence, away, at it, of it, us, from us, none, any, some, thereof, else*, &c.

Example,

Nè quésto, nè quéllo ti concédo, I grant thee neither this, or that.
Spasseggiándo ne' cámpi, walking in the fields.
M'incontrái ne miéi amici, I met with my friends.
Váttene per fátti tuói, get thee hence about thy business.
Egli sene viéne alla vólta nóstra, he is coming towards us.
Lui ne ha tólto il nóstro ripóso, he has taken our rest from us.
Io méne vádo, I am going away.
Sene ride, he laughs at it.
Sene lamenta, he complains of it.
Egli ci diede il buón dì, he bade us good morrow.
Io non ne ho, I have none.
Se ne avéssi, if I had any.
Vene farèi párte, I would give you some.
Voi ne potréte dispórre, you shall dispose thereof.

*** Note, that when *nè* is accented, it is always an adverb.

Pur or *púre*

Is a particle of great use and elegance in the Italian language, and signifies in English, *yet, although, moreover, besides, notwithstanding all conditions, in the end, when all is said and done, so much as, not only, in case, surely, even, at least, needs*, or *of force:* as it would be tedious to give examples of all the different significations of this extensive particle, I shall only mention the following phrases.

Example,

Pur' adésso, even now.
Pur' óra, now, now.

Digitized by Google

Pur mò, at this instant.
Pur' allóra, even then
Pur' assái, too, too much.
Pur paróle? what! nought but words?
Pur pure, yet for all that.

*** Note, that the following particles, *di, è, egli, ci, ben, ne, già, pur, me, che, il*, have often no signification at all, but are used as expletives by way of embellishing the discourse. See the eighth treatise, chapter 1. of expletives.

FIFTH TREATISE.

Of Composition, and Rules of Writing and Speaking Italian; contained in a few Themes.

AFTER we have learned the auxiliary verbs, and the three conjugations, we may begin to translate English into Italian, and observe the rules of concordance: and, if we think proper, we may compose the following themes, upon the principles of the Italian language, without looking at the Italian that is put after the English, except it be to compare it with the translation.

The first is upon the *articles*.
The second upon the verb *avére*.
The third upon the verb *éssere*.
The third upon the pronouns, *mi, ti, ci, vi, gli*.
The fifth upon the particle *si*.
The sixth upon *there is, there was, there will be, there has been*.
The seventh upon the articles *of the, of*, &c.

Be careful in composing these themes, as they contain a great many niceties in the Italian tongue. I have put them in Italian, word for word, to render them the more easy. The words marked with a number, shew that there are some rules to be observed, as appears by the page which follows the Italian theme.

THEME

Digitized by Google

THEME

On the Articles.

MY brother's fancy and desire for the study of the Italian language, are the cause that the passion he had for hunting, gaming, and musical instruments, is at present much abated; if he had believed the advice you did give him in Mr. President's garden, when he spoke to us of the wit of that gentleman, who was much esteemed by the king, he would then have begun to have studied the principles of it, he would at present have known part of the difficulties, and would have made a great many voyages with the nephew of a great prince, who would have had him.

1 2 3
LA vóglia, e'l desidério, di mio fratéllo, per lo stúdio della
4
língua Italiána, sóno cagióne che gli ardóri ch' avéva per la
5 6 7
cáccia, i giuóchi, e gli stroménti di música, son' adésso
8 9 10
mólto moderáti: se avésse credúto gli avvísi che gli
11 12 13 14
daváte nel giardíno del signor Presidénte, quándo ci parláva
15 16 17
dello spírito di quel gentiluómo ch'éra tánto stimáto dal rè;
18 19 20
avrébbe allóra cominciáto di studiárne i princípj, sa-
21
prébbe adésso una párte delle difficoltà, ed avrébbe fátto
22 23 24 25
mólti viággi col nipóte d'un gran príncipe che lo voléva avére.

This theme, and the following ones, are translated word for word.

The number 1 shews that *'l* is in the place of *il*, see page 173.

The

Digitized by Google

The number 2 teaches that we must say *di mio*, and not *del mio*, see page 67.

3. *lo*, and not *il*, p. 36.
4. *gli*, and not *gl'*, p. 37.
5. *i* is better than *li*, p. 37.
6. *giuóchi*, and not *giuóci*, p. 49.
7. *gli*, and not *li*, p. 37.
8. *se avésse*, and not *se avéva*, p. 88.
9. *gli avvisi*, and not *gl' avvisi*, p. 37.
10. *gli*, and not *lúi*, p. 64.
11. *nel*, and not *in il*, p. 42.
12. *del*, and not *délla*, p. 37.
13. *signór Presidénte*, and not *signóre*, p. 175.
14. *ci*, and not *noi*, p. 65.
15. *délla*, and not *del*, p. 38.
16. *quel*, and not *quélla*, p. 56.
17. *dál*, in the ablative, p. 93.
18. *studiárne*, and not *ne studiáre*, p. 66.
19. *i* for *li*, p. 37.
20. *princípj*, and not *princípi*, p. 50.
21. *difficoltà*, and not *difficólte*, p. 45.
22. *viággi*, and not *viaggii*, p. 50.
23. *col*, and not *con il*, p. 43.
24. *gran*, and not *grande*, p. 56.
25. *lo*, and not *il*, p. 65.

THEME

In which all the Tenses of the Verb avére *are inserted.*

I have the curiosity to know if you have done the business I had recommended to you?

If I had had time, I would have done it; but not having had it, I have not been able to do it.

You would have had it, if you had been willing, and if you had not played so much.

I have quitted play altogether, to have my mind at rest.

I shall therefore have some hopes that you will work for me.

It

Digitized by Google

It is reasonable that I have a care of your affairs, since you have some of mine.

Have some of mine, and I will have some of yours.

1 * 2
HO la curiósità di sapére se avéte fátto l'affáre che
3
v'avévo racommandáto?
4 5 6
Se avéssi avúto il témpo, l'avréi fátto, ma non avéndolo
7
avúto, non l'ho potúto fáre.
8
L' avréste avúto, se avéste volúto, e se non avéste giuocátó tánto.
9
Ho lasciáto il giuóco affátto, per avére lo spírito in ripóso.
10
Avrò adúnque quálche speránza, che lavoreréte per me.
11 12
E' ragionévole ch'abbia cúra de' vóstri affári, giachè
13
n'avéte de' miéi.
14 15
Abbiátene de' miéi, e n'avrò de' vostri.

1. *curiosità*, with an accent, p. 179.
* *se avéte*, we use the plural, though we speak but to one person; p. 257.
2. *l'affáre*, and not *lo affáre*, p. 35.
3. *v'avévo* for *vi avévo*, p. 174.
4. *avéssi*, and not *avévo*, p. 88.
5. *l'avréi* for *lo avréi*, p. 174.
6. *avendólo*, and not *lo avéndo*, p. 41.
7. *l'ho*, for *lo ho*, p. 174.
8. *avéste*, and not *aveváte*, 88, 89.
9. *avére*, without an *h*, p. 29.
10. *avrò*, with an accent, p. 179.
11. *ch'ábbia*, and not *che ábbia*, p. 174.
12. *de'* is better than *délli*, p. 37, 174.
13. *n'avéte*, instead of *ne avéte*, p. 174.

14. *de'*

Digitized by Google

14. *de'* is better than *délli*, p. 37, 174.
15. *n' avrò* for *ne'avrò*, 174.

THEME

On the Tenses of the Verb éssere.

I am well satisfied to have been received for a governor of those gentlemen, who have been in the country, where you have been.

You are in the right to be satisfied, because they are very generous gentlemen.

I should be yet more glad if they had not been in Italy, because I should have made that voyage with them.

It seems that you were there for some months last year.

I should have been there, it is true, if my brother had been there when those gentlemen were with you in the army: but not being there, I was obliged to stay at Paris.

*** Before you compose this theme, remember that the verb *éssere* is formed or conjugated of itself; and that you must never put any tense of the verb *avére* before the participle *státo:* for we say *sóno státo, siámo státi*, and not *ho státo, abbiámo stati*.

You must use *státo* in speaking of a single person only, by *you:* example, you have been my friend, *siéte státo mio amico*, and not *siéti státi*.

1 2
Sónomólto conténto d' éssere státo riceváto pergovernatóre
3
di que' signóri, che sóno státi nel paése dóve siéte státo.
4 5
Avéte ragióne d' éssere conténto, perchè sóno gentiluómini molto generósi.
6
Saréi ancóra più conténto, se non fóssero stati in Itália,
7 8
perchè avréi fátto quel viággio con lóro.

Mi

Digitized by Google

9 10
Mi púre che vi fóste per alcúni mósi l'ánno passáto.
11
Vi saréi andáto, è véro, se mío fratéllo fósse státo quì,
12
quándo quéi signori érano con vói all' esército; ma non
13
esséndoci, fúi obligáto di restár in Parígi.

1. *éssere státo*, and not *avére státo*, p. 83.
2. *éssere státo*, and not *ésser státo*, p. 176.
3. *nel*, and not *in il*, p. 42.
4. We do not express *they*, p. 207, 208.
5. *uómo*, in the plural *úomini*, p. 48.
6. *se*, before the imperfect, p. 88.
7. *quel* and *quello*, p. 174.
8. *con lóro*, and not *col lóro*, because *lóro* is a pronoun conjunctive, p. 206.
9. *vi*, and not *ci*, p. 147.
10. *alcúni*, and not *qualche*, p. 73.
11. *se mio*, and not *se il mío*, p. 67.
12. *quéi* or *quélli*, p. 68.
13. *esséndoci*, and not *ci esséndo*, p. 66.

THEME

On the Pronouns conjunctive mi, ti, ci, vi, gli, le.

You had promised me that you would send us the book which we had asked of you, and you have not sent it to us.

I had promised it to you, it is true, I remember it; but you should have sent to demand it of me, and I would have sent it to you.

Do not put yourself to any more trouble about it. I know that my sister has one of them: here is my servant, I will bid him go to her house to ask it of her. Go directly to my sister's, do not stay any where; thou shalt tell her, that I pray her to lend me her manuscript; that I will send it her back in an hour: thou shalt give my service to my brother-in-law; and if thou seest any

Digitized by Google

any rosés in his garden, thou shalt ask him for some of them.

1 2 3 4 5
M' aveváte promésso che c'invieróste il libro che v' ave-
6 7
vámo domandáto, e non cel avéte mandáto.
8 9 10
Vel' avévo promésso, è véro, mene ricórdo; ma bisogná-
11 12 13
va mandar' a domandármelo, e vel' avréi inviáto.
14 15 16 17
Non vene pigliáte più fastídio, so che mia sorélla n'ha uno;
18 19 20
écco l'mío sérvo, gli dirò d'andár da lèi per domandárgliélo
21
Và quánto prima da mia sorélla, non ti fermár in nissún
22 23 24
luógo, le dirái che la prégo di prestármi 'l súo manuscritto,
25 26
che le rimanderò frà un' óra, farái i miéi baciamáni a mío
27 28 29
cognáto, e se vedrái or *védi róse nel di lúi giardíno, gliéne*
30
domanderái alcúne or *qualchedúne.*

1. *m'aveváte*, in the plural, p. 208.
2. *m' aveváte*, for *mi aveváte*, p. 174.
3. *promésso*, and not *promísso*, or *promettúto*, p. 135.
4. *c'*, and not *ci*, p. 65.
5. *vi aveváno*, or *v'aveváno*, p. 65.
6. *cel avéte*, or *celo avéte*, p. 174.
7. *cel avéte* and not *cil avéte*, p. 65.
8. *vel' avévo*, and *vi' l'avévo*, p. 65.
9. *mene* and not *mine*, p. 65.
10. of it, before a verb is expressed by *mene*, p. 65.
11. *mandáre a*, p. 208.
12. *domandármélo*, p. 66.
13. *vel' avréi*, p. 65.
14. *vene*, p. 65.
15. *mía sorélla*, and not *la mía*, p. 67.
16. *n'ha*,

Digitized by Google

16. *n'ha*, and not *ne ha*, with an apostrophe, p. 174.
17. *uno*, and not *un*, p. 176.
18. *gli*, and not *lúi*, p. 65.
19. *d'andár*, with an abbreviation, p. 174, 175.
20. *domandárglielo*, and not *lui*, p. 65.
21. *non ti fermár*, and not *non ti férma*, p. 210.
22. *li dirái*, p. 65.
23. *prestármi*, and not *mi prestár*, p. 66.
24. *il súo*, and not *stúo*, p. 67.
25. *le*, and not *lúi*, p. 64.
26. *i miéi*, p. 67.
27. *le verái*, or *se védi*, p. 160.
28. *nel*, and not *in*, p. 42.
29. *gliéne*, p. 65.
30. *alcúno*, and not *quálche*, p. 73. It is better to say *qualchedúno*.

*** In order to write and speak Italian fluently, it will be absolutely necessary to make this, and the three following themes, more than once.

THEME

Containing all the Difficulties of the Particles si, *it is, they, we*, &c.

It is said that you do not know if we have received the letters which we expected the last post; and that in case we have not received them, or do not receive them to-day, they will send fifty men into the forest, where it is thought they have robbed the courier, because they knew we had given him letters of great consequence: and it is not doubted but they are enemies that have detained him, because we have had certain advice that they have some of our letters in their hands, we have sent a spy to inform himself of what they say, and we promise him two hundred crowns if we can have any tidings of them.

Digitized by Google

I do not put the number here upon these two last themes to refer you to the rules, because to make this, it will be sufficient to read the pages 218, 219.

Si dice che non sapéte, se sóno state ricevúte le léttere (or *se si sóno ricevúte le léttere*), *che s' aspettávano l' ordinário passáto, e che in cáso che non siano state ricevúte, o che non si ricévano oggi, manderánno cinquánta uómini nélla sélva, óve si créde che sia státo svaligiáto 'l corriére, perché si sa che gli érano state* (or *gli s' érano*) *consegnáte léttere di grán consequénza; e cóme non si ha dúbbio che siáno i nemici, che l' hánno ritenúto, giacchè si hánno avvisi certi, che sono state viste alcúne délle nóstre léttere nélle lóro máni, s' è inviáta úna spia per informársi segretaménte di quánto* (or *di quel che si pássa*, or rather, *di quánto si dice*) *e gli si prométtono ducénto scúdi, se sene potrà ávér nuóva,* (or *se potránno avérsene nuóve.*)

THEME.

On the Phrases there is, there was, there be.

Before you compose this theme, look back on the pages 125, 127.

Remember also, that you must express *there is of it* or *them, there was of it* or *them,* by *cen'e*, or *cene sóno, cene fú* or *vene fúrono,* and not by *ci ne, vi ne.* See pages 150, 151.

THERE is a man in the street, who says, that yesterday there was an uproar over against the palace, where there were three men killed; and he swears that if he had been present, there would have been a great many more, because he has heard there had been two of his friends wounded; and that two women and three children have also been maimed. They talk likewise of several merchants whom the passengers report to have been cruelly beaten; and that of the ten soldiers who are in prison, four of them will be hanged, and that the six others are condemned to the galleys.

M. V' E'

Digitized by Google

V' E' (or *c' è*) *in' uómo nélla stráda, che dice che vi fu jéri un gran rumóre dirimpétto al palázzo, óve fúrono uccísi tre uómini; e giúra che se vi fósse státo, vene sarébbero státo mólto più: perciocchè ha sapúto che v' érano státi feríti due amici suói, e che dúe dónne e tre fanciúlli vi sóno státi stroppiáti. Si párla ánche di mólti mercánti, che i viandánti dicono ésservi státi atrocemènte battúti, e che di diéci soldati che sóno in prigióne, vene saránno quáttro impiccáti, e che vene sóno séi condannáti in galéra.*

Observe that, according to the rule in p. 126, one might leave out *v'* or *c'* of the first line, and only put *é un' uómo nélla stráda.*

THEME

To learn when to express, and when to omit, in Italian, *the Articles,* the, of the, of.

See the pages 213, 214, &c. where you will find all the difficulties explained.

There are the men and the women that look on the pictures, who say that they are paintings much esteemed by all the connoisseurs, and the ignorant themselves.

Do not come here with persons of your country, to talk of the affairs of your brother.

You will have to write letters to all your friends.

We must separate them from the rest, and give nothing to them but bread and water.

I received yesterday news of (*or* from) the prince, and from madam the princess.

I have received a hundred crowns from the prince, and fifty from the princess.

Talk to me of philosophy, and of the affairs of the times.

He labours for ungrateful people, that give pain and sorrow to all their relations.

You will be praised by the soldiers, but you shall be blamed by the captains, and the chief of the army.

You have had a great deal of pain, and little profit.

We

Digitized by Google

We have eaten for dinner partridges, quails, and young pigeons.

1. Give us bread, wine, and flesh.

2. Give us some bread, some wine, and some flesh.

Your brothers are arrived from the Indies; they have brought pearls, diamonds, and a great many other goods, in deal boxes, upon horses and camels.

*** I have put the phrase *give us bread, wine, and flesh,* twice, that you may consider when to express, and when to omit, the article *of the.*

A Translation according to the Rules.

ECCO uómini, e dónne, che considérano i quádri, e che dícono, che sóno pittúre mólto stimáte da tútti i dótti, e dagl' ignoránti medésimi.

Non venite quì con persóne del vóstro paése, per parlar dégli affári di vóstro fratéllo.

Avréte témpo per iscrívere lêttere a tutt' i vóstri amíci.

Bisógna separárli dágli altri, e non dar lóro che páne ed ácqua.

Ricevéi jéri nuóve del signór príncipe, e della signóra principéssa.

Ho ricevúto cénto scúdi dal príncipe, e cinquánta dálla principéssa.

Parlátemi délla filosofía, e dégli affári del témpo.

Lavóra per ingráti, che dánno péna, e fastídio a tutt'i lóro parénti.

Saréte lodáto dái soldáti, ma saréte biasimáto dái capitáni, e dái principáli dell' esército.

Avéte avúto grand' incommodo, e póco profítto.

Abbiámo mangiáto a pránso pernici, quáglie, e piccioncíni.

1. *Dáteci del páne, del vínо, e dálla cárne.*

2. *Dáteci páne, vino, e cárne in pagaménto.*

I vóstri fratélli sóno arrivári dalle Indie, hánno portáto pérle, diamanti, e mólte áltre mercanzie in coffi di pine sópra caválli, e camméli.

Digitized by Google

THE

SIXTH TREATISE.

Of Poetical Licences, and the divers Synonymous Names of the Gods.

THE principal difficulty of the Italian poetry consists in the poetical licences, and in the different synonyma; which shall constitute the two chapters of this treatise.

CHAP. I.

Of Poetical Licences.

POETICAL licences aré certain diminutions or augmentations at the end of words, which frequently occur in poetry; to wit,

álma,	for	*ánima,*	the soul.
áltri,		*áltro,*	one, and some.
andáro,		*andárono,*	they went.
andár,		*andárono,*	they went.
andiámne,		*andiámocene,*	let us go away.
amáro,		*ámárano,*	they love.
augéi,		*augélli,*	birds.
appó,		*appresso,*	near to.
bacciámne,		*bacciámoci,*	let us kiss.
béa,		*béva,*	let him drink.
beè,		*bevétte,*	he drank.
bea,		*bevéva,*	he did drink.
bee,		*béve,*	he drinks.
béi,		*belli.*	fair, beautiful.
cággio,		*cádo,*	I fall.
caggiámo,		*cadiámo,*	we fall.
capéi,		*capéli,*	hairs.
cavái,		*caválli,*	horses.

cadco,

Digitized by Google

cadéo,		*cádde,*	he fell.
céle,		*céla,*	he hides *or* conceals.
célan,		*célano,*	they hide.
cél' han,		*cel' hánno,*	they have it to us.
chére,		*chiéde,*	he demands.
china,		*chináta,*	a bending down.
chino,		*chináto,*	bent down.
coltéi,		*coltélli,*	knives.
cor,		*cógliere,*	to gather.
corrém,		*coglierémo,*	we shall gather.
costáro,		*costárono,*	they cost.
costár,		*costárono,*	they cost.
crederia,		*credérebbe,*	he should believe.
de' or *de,*		*déve,*	he owes.
déggio,		*dévo,*	I owe.
déggi,		*dévi,*	thou owest.
déggia,		*débba,*	he may owe.
deggiámo,		*dobbiámo,*	we may owe.
déggiano,		*débbano,*	they may owe.
deggiáte,		*dobbiáte,*	you may owe.
déggio,	for	*débbo,*	I owe.
degg' io?		*débb' io?*	do I owe?
déggiono,		*débbono,*	they owe.
dénno,		*débbono,*	they owe.
déo,		*débbo,*	I owe.
déono,		*dévono,*	they owe.
diè,		*diéde,*	he gave.
diéro, [*ron,*		*diédero,*	they gave.
dier' and *dié-*		*diédero,*	they gave.
diérõnsi,		*si diédero,*	they gave *or* applied themselves to.
dicésti,		*dicésti tu,*	saidst thou.
disser,		*dissero,*	they said.
dómo,		*domáto,*	tamed.
éi,		*égli,*	he.
émpia,		*émpi,*	he filled.
fáce,		*fa,*	he does, *or* makes.
facéan,		*facévano,*	they did so.
fè,		*féde,*	faith.
fe',		*féce,*	he did, *or* made.
féa,		*faceva,*	he did do.

Digitized by Google

féi,		*fèci,*	I did, *or* made.
félli,		*li féce,*	he made them.
fémmo,		*facémmo,*	we made. [them.
fénne,		*ne féce,*	he made some, *or* of
férno,		*fécero,*	they made.
féo,		*féce,*	he made.
fero,		*fécero,*	they made.
féra,		*ferísca,*	he may strike.
fére,		*ferísce,*	he strikes.
féron,		*fécero,*	they did, *or* made.
férono,		*fécero,*	they did, *or* made.
féste,		*facéste,*	you did, *or* made.
fia,		*sarà,*	he shall be.
fian,		*saránno,*	they shall be.
fie,		*sarà,*	he shall be.
fieno,		*saránno,*	they shall be.
fi,		*sii,*	be thou.
fór,		*sarébbe,*	he should be.
fóran,		*sarébbero,*	they should be.
fóssino,		*fóssero,*	they were, *or* might be.
frà,		*fráte,*	a brother.
fúe,	for	*fù,*	he was.
fuá,		*fúrono,*	they were.
fúro,		*fúrono,*	they were.
gia,		*andáva,*	he did go.
giro,		*andárono,*	they went.
gir,		*andárono,*	they went.
gíte,		*andáte,*	go you.
giva,		*andáva,*	he did go.
hággio,		*ho,*	I have.
hálle,		*le ha,*	he has them.
hálmi,		*me l'ha,*	he has it to me.
hán,		*hánno,*	they have.
avéi,		*avréi,*	I should have.
avia,		*avrébbe,*	he should have.
avian,		*avrébbero,*	they should have.
havrò,		*avrò,*	I shall have.
háve,		*ha,*	he has.
avia,		*avéva,*	he had.
avrái,		*avrébbe,*	he should have.
hávvi,		*vi ha,*	there is.

hólle,

Digitized by Google

hólle,		*le ho,*	I have to him.
hónne,		*ne ho,*	I have some, *or* of it.
i,		*io,*	I.
ir,		*andáre,*	to go.
ite,		*andáte,*	go ye.
ivan,		*andávano,*	they did go.
là've,		*là óve,*	there where.
len',		*gliéne,*	to him of it.
lodáro,		*lodárono,*	they praised.
lodár',		*lodárono,*	they praised.
me',		*méglio,*	better.
men',		*méne,*	me some, or of it.
men,		*méno,*	less.
morío,		*morì,*	died.
ne'l,		*nè il,*	neither the.
nósco,		*connói,*	with us.
pága,		*pagáto,*	contented.
págo,		*pagáto,*	contented.
pár,		*páre,*	it seems.
pór,		*pórre,*	to put.
pie,	for	*piéde,*	a foot.
pónno,		*póssono,*	they can.
puóte,		*può,*	he can.
potría,		*potrébbe,*	he should be able.
que',		*quélli,*	these.
rapió,		*rapì,*	he ravished.
ritór,		*ritógliere,*	to resume.
sállo,		*lo sa,*	he knows it.
sálsi,		*sálj,*	I went up.
sálse,		*salì,*	he went up.
sálti?		*ti sa?*	dost thou find?
satti buóno?		*ti sa buóno?*	dost thou like?
se',		*sei,*	thou art.
séggo, séggio,		*sedo,*	I sit down.
séggono, séggiono,		*sédono,*	they sit down.
sel,		*sélo,*	to himself it.
si,		*così,*	so, as much.
siéde,		*séde,*	he sits.
siédon,		*sédono,*	they sit.
sién,		*siano,*	they be.
solleváro,		*sollevárono,*	they raised up.

Digitized by Google

sollevár,		*sollevárono,*	they raised up.
spéne,		*spéme,*	hope.
spírto,		*spírito,*	a spirit.
sta,		*quésta,*	this.
stè,		*stétte,*	he stood *or* dwelt.
stél,		*stélo,*	the stalk *or* stem.
sólla,		*sópra la,*	upon the.
tái,		*tali,*	such.
terrállo,		*lo terrà,*	he will hold it.
tiéllo,		*tiéni lo,*	hold it thou.
tómmi,		*tóglimĭ,*	take me away.
tór,		*tógliere,*	to take away.
trónche,		*troncáto,*	cut.
trónco,		*troncáto,*	cut.
ú,		*óve,*	where.
válso,		*valúto,*	worth.
vánne,		*váttene,*	go about thy business.
vé,	for	*vĕdi,*	see thou.
véggio, véggo,		*védo,*	I see.
véggiono, véggono,		*védono,*	they see.
véglio,		*vécchio,*	an old man.
vélle,		*volére,*	to be willing.
vélle,		*védile,*	see thou them.
vélli,		*védili,*	see thou them.
vélli,		*éccoli,*	there they are.
véllo,		*éccolo,*	there he is.
ven',		*véne,*	you some, *or* of it.
vér,		*vérso,*	towards.
vo'.		*vóglio,*	I will.
vólto,		*voltáto,*	turned.
vósco,		*con vói,*	with you.
usciano,		*usciváno,*	they did go out.
uscio,		*usci,*	he went out.
uscíro,		*usciróno,*	they went out.

***Observe that the third persons plural of the preterperfect definite terminating in *árono*, as *legárono, amárono, scolorárono, negárono,* are to have their poetical terminations in *áro*; thus they say, *legáro, amáro, scoloráro,*

Digitized by Google

ráro, negáro. See *Petrárca, Tásso, Guarini,* and all the other poets.

The poets always retrench an *l* from the articles *dèllo, della, délli, dèlle; álli, álle,* &c. and from *nélla, nélli, nélle; cólla, cólle*: hence they put *de lo, de la, de li,* &c.; *ne la, ne li, ne le; co la, co le,* &c.; example, *de la futúra cáccia.*

They likewise use *il* before verbs instead of *lo;* as, *il védo,* for *lo védo; il dicea,* for *lo dicéva.*

Remember also, that the poets more frequently use the verbs in *gió,* than those in *do,* when they have two terminations: thus they write *véggio* oftener than *védo, veggéndo* more usually than *vedéndo.*

CHAP. II.

Of the different Synonyma.

THE poets make use of different synonyma to express the names of the gods and goddesses of heaven, earth, and hell; which I have inserted in this chapter in their alphabetical order.

They use as synonyma for APOLLO

Il divin músico.
Fébo.
Il bióndo Dio, che in Tessália s'adóra.
L'orácolo di Délfo.
Il rettóre del Parnásso.
Il Dio d' Elicóna.

BA'CCO.

Il giovinétto Dio che'l Gánge adóra.
Il pio nutrito dálle Ninfe di Nisa.
Il Dio due vólte náto.
Líbero.

CICLO'PI.

I tre fratélli con un sol ócchio in fróute.

Digitized by Google

I gigánti di Vulcáno.
I fabri di Vulcáno.

The names of the Cyclops,

BRÓNTE, STE'ROPE, PIRAMMO'NE.

CIE'LO.

Eterea móle. Regióne stellàta.
La magióne degli Déi.

CERE'RE.

Inventrice délle prime biáde.
Mádre di Proserpina.
Déa d' Eléusi.

CIBE'LE.

La Déa Dindiména.
La Déa Berecéntia.
La móglie di Satúrno.
Réa.

CUPIDO.

L'amóre. Il vincitór dégli Déi.
L'aláto Dio, L'arciéro volánte.
Il faretráto Arciéro. Il núdo Arciéro.
Il ciéco Dio.
Il vagabóndo aláto.
Il núdo pargolétto.
Garzón sóvra l' etáde astúto.
Il figlio di Ciprigna, di Citeréa, di Vénere.

DIA'NA.

Cintia. La Lúna. La sorélla di Fébo.
Délia. La Déa délle selve, de' mónti.

E'OLO.

Dio de' vénti.

FLO'RA.

Déa de' Fiori. Déa amica di Giunóne.

GIA'NO.

Amico di Satúrno. Il dio bifrónte.
Il Dio che pórta due chiavi.

GIO'VE.

Digitized by Google

GIO'VE.

Rettóre délle stélle.
Primo figlio di Satúrno.
Il gran motóre. Rè de' motóri.
Il gran Tonánte.

GIUNO'NE.

La móglie di Gióve. La Déa Lucína.
La Déa Gelósa. La regina dégli Déi.
L'orgogliósa móglie del gran Tonnánte.

INFER'NO.

Bólgia ardénte.
Báratro puzzénte, Avérno.
Néro spéco.

LUCIFERO, STE'LLA.

Foriéra del giórno.
Stélla nunzia del giórno.

LU'NA.

Diána, Cintia, E'cate.

MA'RE.

Pélago, Oceáno, Reggia Cristallína.
Régno umído. Il pádre de' fiúmi.

MARTE.

Dio guerriéro.

MERCURIO.

Mésso, intérprete dégli Déi.
Inventór della lótta. Il divin Citarista.
Il Dio de' ladróni. Cillinio.

MINERVA.

Pállade.
Déa ricamatrice.
La Déa ch' Aténe adóra.
Dé Laa· di Sámo.
Inventrice délle prime ulive.

NETTUNO.

Il regnatór canúto de' flútti.
Il gran rettóre délle ácque.
Il Tiránno del máre.
Il fréddo ed úmido Marito di Téti.

Digitized by Google

PALLADE.

Quélla che sénza pádre dal gran Gióve nácque.
Bellóna, Minérva, Déa délla guérra.
Déa che trovò l'úso dell' olio e délla lána.
Inventrice délle prime ulive.

PLUTO'NE.

Dio délle ténebre.
Dio dell' oscúro régno.
L'autóre délla sepoltúra.
Il primo ch' onorò con eséquie i mórti.

PROSERPI'NA.

La figlia di Cérere.
La móglie di Plutóne.
La regina délle grótte Tartáree.
Déa del cúpo fóndo.

SATU'RNO.

Il témpo, il Dio del témpo.
L'aláto vécchio, il vécchio edáce.

SO'LE.

Il príncipe délle óre.
Il gran monárca de' témpi.
Il luminóso auríga, Apóllo.
Fébo, il Fratéllo di Diána.
Il pianéta etérno.

TE'RRA.

La mádre commúne de' mortáli.
Il suólo.

TE'TI.

Regina de' flutti.
Déa del máre.

VE'NERE.

Citeréa, Ciprina, Ciprigna.
La Déa Ericina.
Verticórdia.
Figlia del máre.
Déa che per Adóno ardéva.
Déa di Pafo.
Déa d' Amatúnta.
Déa, or dónna del térzo giro.

Digitized by Google

VULCA'NO.

Zóppo Dio.
Il Dio distórto.
Fábro adústo.
Il divin artista.
Il genitór d'amóre in Lémno.

SEVENTH TREATISE.

Of Improper and Obsolete Words.

THE Italian, as well as other languages, has a great many improper words, which are used only by the vulgar and illiterate.

It is a mistake to think that the Italian tongue is spoken and pronounced best at Florence, for this is one of the places where the pronunciation of it is the most harsh and uncouth. The court and the academies speak well there; but all the rest have a bad accent, and pronounce through the throat and nose.

The writings of the Florentine authors, both ancient and modern, are in a beautiful style; hence it is that the Italian proverb says, in regard to their pronunciation,

Língua Toscána in bócca Romána.

It is most certain the inhabitants of Rome and Sienna speak the best Italian; therefore we say,

Per ben parlár Italiáno,
Bisógna parlár Románo.

Nevertheless, the vulgar at Rome generally commit a mistake in the preterperfect-definite, by making it end in the first person plural, in *ssimo*, instead of *mmò*: example,

We loved,	is ill expressed by	*amássimo.*
We went,		*andássimo.*
We believed,		*credèssimo.*
We wrote,		*scrivéssimo.*

We

Digitized by Google

We should say, *amámmo, andámmo, credémmo, scrivémmo*; and so all the rest of the verbs.

Neither must we say, *amaréssimo, crederéssimo,* and the like, to express we should love, we should believe; but *amerémmo, crederémmo:* and the same with regard to all verbs in the second imperfect.

The first person plural of the present tense ought to terminate in *iamo,* in all verbs without exception, as well in the indicative as the imperative and subjunctive; so that we must absolutely say, *amiámo,* and *che amiámo,* to express we love, and that we may love; and in like manner *abbiámo, siámo, parliâmo, crediámo, vediámo, dormiámo, concepiámo,* &c. and not *avémo, sémo, parlámo, credémo, vedémo, dormimo, cupimo, concepimo,* which are Calabrian and Neapolitan words, derived from the Spanish; for by adding an *s* at the end of them, we should find, *avémos, semos, palarmos, dormimos,* &e. words entirely Spanish.

Avoid saying, as the Florentines do, *voi dicévi, voi amávi, voi credévi, voi andávi,* and the like, instead of *voi dicévate, voi amavváte, voi credeváte, voi andavváte,* because the termination in *vi* is never used but with *tu* in the singular: as, *tu amávi, tu dicévi.*

*** Read those authors who have written on the purity of the Italian language, whom I have quoted at the end of this treatise; and all those that have written since the origin of that language to this present time, and you will see they disapprove of *voi avévi, voi amâvi,* which is a great blunder in the Florentines, and in illiterate persons.

The reason of it is indisputable; for there must be a difference between the second person singular and the second person plural.

To convince those that say *voi amávi,* instead of *voi amávate; voi dicévi,* instead of *voi dicevâte; voi vedévi,* instead of *voi vedevâte,* &c.; I shall only refer them to the remarks of *Grácomo Pergamini,* who in his book intitled, *Trattáto délla lingua Italiána,* says, page 173, *La secónda persóna dell' imperfetto nel número del piú, déve ésser terminâta in* vate; as, *cantavâte, dicevâte. E céntra quésta terminazióne riceváte universalménte da' regoláti dictóri,*

Digitized by Google

dictóri, háuno alcúni moderni usáto di scrivere, cantávi, vedévi, *il che è un manifésto errore.*

Ferrante Longobardi, in his book intitled *Il tórto ed il dritto,* condemns this manner of speaking, *voi cantávi,* as impertinent.

For the same reason as that above given, you must not say *voi amásti, voi credésti, voi vedésti,* but *voi amáste, voi credéste, voi vedéste.*

To express, *we read, we remain, we say, we go out,* you must say, *leggiámo, rimaniámo, diciámo, usciámo;* and not *leghiámo, rimanghiámo, dichiamo, eschiámo;* and that for two incontestible reasons:

First, because there are none but verbs terminated in the infinitive in *care* and *gare,* as, *cercáre, purgáre,* that take an *h* in the tenses and persons, where the letter *c* or *g* precedes an *e* and an *i,* as I have said before. So that the verbs in *ere* and *ire* are not included in this rule.

Secondly, because *leghiámo* comes from *legáre,* signifying *to tie;* and so of the rest.

Neither must you say, as those of Lucca do, *io dirébbi, io farébbi, io sarébbi,* to express *I should say,* I *should do, I should be,* instead of *io diréi, io farei, io suréi.*

You must not say nor write *ámono, cántono, bállono,* in the third person plural of verbs of the first conjugation, when all terminate in *ano;* therefore write and speak *ámano, cántano, bállano;* because there are none but the verbs in *ere* and in *ire* that end in *ono* in the third person plural of the indicative.

Before I finish this second part, it will be proper to mention three things worthy of attention. The first relates to the letter *h;* the second to the letter *z,* when used instead of *ti;* and the third to the conjugating of all verbs in the first persons singular of the imperfect indicative. Let us begin with the first.

The dispute concerning the letter *h,* is of no small consequence. The point is to know, whether it ought to be retrenched in those words where it is not pronounced? Some pretend that it ought not to be retrenched, because this will occasion ambiguity in several words, and the reader will thereby be led into mistakes: for instance, if we leave out the *h* in the word

Digitized by Google

words *hámmo* they have, and *hánno*, a hook, *ánno*, and *ámo*, there is no distinguishing them from *ánno*, a year, and *ámo*, I love. The same difficulty occurs in a great many other words, which for the sake of brevity we omit.

See, page 28, what has been said in regard to the use of the letter *h*.

Others (of which number are members of the academy of *La Crusca*) maintain, that it ought absolutely to be retrenched. Their reason is this, that they look upon it as altogether superfluous in words where it is not pronounced: and moreover, by using it without necessity, it becomes a stumbling-block to foreigners, especially to the Germans and Swiss, who, being accustomed in their own language to pronounce it wherever they find it written, do the same in Italian; which is wrong, if they intend to express themselves with any propriety.

The second point I have to mention relates to the letter z, when used for *t*, followed by two vowels, the first of which is *i*, in words derived from the Latin, as *grátia, vítio*, which at present are written with a z; example, *grâzia, vízio*. There are a great many who condemn this change of orthography, and insist that these words ought to be spelled with a *t*, as in Latin; yet I think it is right to make use of the z, for otherwise it will be impossible to give a just and true pronunciation to those words. You will say, there is a rule which tells me, that the syllable *ti* is sounded before a vowel, as if there was an *s* in the middle: but how shall I know that I am not to pronounce this syllable in the same manner in the words *natio*, native: *simpatia*, sympathy; *partio*, he went away; and several others? How comes it that we do not say, *natsio, simpatsia, passio?* Doubtless you will assign the common reason of this difference, namely, that those words are not derived from the Latin, or if they be, they are still of Greek derivation, and that even in Latin they are pronounced differently from words of Latin original. This reason perhaps is good in itself, but is of no use to those who are not acquainted with the Latin tongue,

Digitized by Google

tongue, and consequently incapable of tracing the etymology of words.

I shall now proceed to the third difficulty, concerning the first person singular of the imperfect indicative of all verbs. In regard to this article, one might implicitly follow the rule, which commonly prevails at present; that is, to terminate it in *a*, and not in *o*; for example we might say, *avéva*, instead of *avévo*; yet, to tell my sentiment freely, I can see no reason for making this alteration, which I apprehend ought rather to be considered as an abuse, than as a rule. If it is owing to examples that occur in good authors, these examples, I make no doubt, are owing to the mistakes of typographers. And, indeed, I can never imagine that *Boccácio*, *Villáni*, and some others, to whom a great many do pay a degree of veneration bordering upon idolatry, should take it in their heads to make use of the third person instead of the first. I can never believe they would attempt to introduce such an abuse, except by chance, and in poems, where the rhyme and measure of the verse will plead excuse for a multitude of words, which would never be tolerated in prose. Convinced of this truth, I maintain, that we ought ever to make use of the termination *o*, and not that of *a*, till I see a better reason to justify this alteration. Hitherto I have met with none among the best writers on this subject: and they who pretend that we should say *amáva*, *avéva*, &c. instead of *amávo*, *avévo*, &c. are able to assign no other reason than this, viz. that we sometimes meet with the expression in the best authors: upon which they take upon them boldly to pronounce, that *amávo*, *avévo*, &c. are low words, and only used by the common people.

For my part, I think quite the contrary, and am convinced, that the words, *amáva*, *avéva*, &c. are more suitable to the vulgar, than to polite persons and people of education; because I cannot comprehend how those who ought naturally to surpass others so much in knowledge, should attempt to defend an expression in many respects repugnant to good sense. Besides, I have three reasons for being of this opinion. The first is, that in all

Digitized by Google

one; *gentilúomo*, a gentleman; *sottovóce*, softly; *sottománo*, underhand; *nondiméno nulladiméno*, nevertheless; *trentótto*, eight and thirty; *quaránta cinque*, forty-five; *sottésopra*, topsy-turvy. However, we shall make a few remarks on this subject, which may be of use to the learner.

When the first of the compounding words end with a vowel, and the second begins with a consonant, the Italians are wont to pronounce them with greater emphasis, and therefore they repeat the first consonant of the second word, as, *déllo, colássù, laggiù, appiè*, &c. We except from this rule the verb, *ridirizzáre*.

The first of the compounding words sometimes loseth the last vowel, whatever consonant it precedes; and the first consonant of the second word is repeated, as *sottéra, séggola, sōppáno, sózzopra*, &c.

When one of the compounding words is a participle, and the last syllable of the word is accented, the consonant of the participle is repeated, unless it happens to be followed by another consonant: for example we say *dámmi*, give me; *dirotti*, I will tell thee: but not *dirógli*, because the participle has a double consonant, and therefore we say *dirógli*. But if the word, to which the particle is joined, loseth its final vowel in the junction, the consonant of the particle is not repeated; for which reason *dirai, farái*, and the like, with the junction of the particle, makes *dirálo, faráne*, &c.

In some words, for the facility of utterance, a consonant is changed; thus you put before the letter *h*, for instance, an *m*, instead of an *n*; or before a *c* you put an *n* instead of an *m*, for the sake of the sound, as in *pamboliito, amiánci, farénlo*, &c. instead of *pamboliito, amiámci, farémlo*, &c.

CHAP. III.

Of Capitals and Stops.

I. *Of* CAPITALS.

IN regard to Capital Letters, the following rules are established by the Italians;

I. Over

Digitized by Google

1. Over capitals you are never to put any mark of accent or apostrophe.

2. The proper names always begin with a capital.

3. The names of nations, taken substantively, begin with a capital; as, *i Francési fácero guérra*, the French made war; but taken adjectively they require a small letter, and therefore they write, *mercatánte francése*.

4. The expressing of a genus or species requires a capital, hence they write *l' Uómo è la più nóbile délle inferiòri creatúre*, Man is the noblest of the inferior creatures; *il Cavállo è útile alla guérra*, a Horse is useful for war; but the capital is dropped when they are applied to individuals; *quest' è un buón uómo*, this is a good man; *écco un bél cavállo*, there is a fine horse.

5. Those appellatives which are used instead of proper names, require a capital; hence they write *il Padre, il Medico, il Maéstro*, the Father, the Physician, the Master, when speaking of some particular person.

6. All names of dignities, degrees, and honours, require a capital; thus they write *Pápa, Imperadóre, Rè, Véscovo*, &c. Pope, Emperor, King, Bishop, &c.

7. At the beginning of a period, the first letter is always a capital.

II. *Of* STOPS.

The use of stops or points is to distinguish words and sentences, so as not to darken the sense. The Italians have five stops, or pauses;

1. The *púnto fèrmo*, the same as our period, or full stop (.), and is used at the end of a period, to shew that the sentence is completely finished;

2. The *mézzo púnto*, which is our colon (:), and is the pause made between two members of a period, that is, when the sense is complete, but the sentence not ended;

3. The *púnto e virgola*, our semicolon (;), and denotes that short pause which is made in the subdivision of the members or parts of a sentence;

4. The *point of interrogation*, thus (?), or the point of admiration, thus (!);

5. The *virgola*, the same as our comma (,), and is the shortest pause of resting in speech, being used chiefly to

Digitized by Google

to distinguish nouns, verbs, and adverbs, as also the parts of a shorter sentence.

The use of those stops is much the same among the Italians as the English; if the former have any particularity, it is in regard to the *virgolas* or commas; concerning which we shall make the following remarks.

Whenever a word or proposition is inserted in a period of which it does not form a part, it is put between two commas: as *facciám dúnque a cotésto módo, ma con quésto, vêdi, che tu non parta di me*, let us proceed in this manner, but with this condition, *take care*, that you do not leave me.

The conjunction *e*, and the disjunctions *o* or *nè*, require a comma before them; yet when these particles are repeated, and the first stands as an expletive, it ought to have no commas before it; as, *quánto egli, nell'una, e nell' áltra interpretazióne si segnalásse, non fá d'uópo ch'io vi ridica*, how much he distinguished himself both in one, and the other explication, there is no necessity for my telling you. In like manner, *pesándolo o cólle stadara, o colla bilância: perciocchè nè nell' uno, nè nell' áltro.*

The relatives *che*, and *quále*, require a comma before them, as they suppose some kind of pause, though very small; but when *che* signifies *what*, it requires no comma, as *atténto a védere* che *di lui avvenisse*, attentive to see what became of him; *avvégnane* che *può*, let what will happen.

A comma is always to be prefixed to conjunctions, even when those conjunctions are not expressed, but understood: as, *non sia ebriáco, nè taverniére, non giuocatóre, non masnadière*, the conjunction *e* is understood.

When conjunctions and adverbial expressions are repeated, and correspond to one another, the first does not réquire a comma: *éra Cimóne si per la sua fórma, e sì per la nobiltà, e ricchézza del pádre, quási noto a ciascún del paése.* Simon was known almost to every man in the country, as well on account of his person, as for the nobility and wealth of his father.

THE END OF THE SECOND PART.

Digitized by Google

THE
ITALIAN MASTER.

PART III.

CONTAINING,

I. *A vocabulary of words most necessary to be known.*
II. *The words most used in discourse.*
III. *Familiar dialogues.*
IV. *A collection of Italian phrases, in which the delicacy of that language consists.*
V. *Several little stories, jests, sentences of divers authors, and a collection of the choicest Italian proverbs.*
VI. *An introduction to the Italian poetry.*
VII. *Fine thoughts from the Italian poets.*
VIII. *Different inscriptions and titles used in Italian letters.*
IX. *Letters of business and compliment.*

A VOCABULARY OF WORDS
NECESSARY TO BE KNOWN.

Del ciélo e degli eleménti. *Of the heavens and the elements.*

Dio, Iddio,	God.
Giesù Cristo,	Jesus Christ.
lo Spírito Sánto,	the Holy Ghost.
la Trinità,	the Trinity.
gli ángeli,	the angels.
un profèta,	a prophet.

Digitized by Google

il ciélo,	heaven.
il paradíso,	paradise.
l' inférno,	hell.
il móndo,	the world.
i diávoli,	the devils.
il fuóco,	the fire.
l' ária,	the air.
la térra,	the earth.
il máre,	the sea.
il só'e,	the sun.
la lúna,	the moon.
le stélle,	the stars.
i rággi,	the rays.
le núvole,	the clouds.
il vénto,	the wind.
la piógg'a,	the rain.
il tuóno,	the thúnder.
il balêno, il lámpo,	the lightning.
la grándine,	the hail.
il fúlmine,	the thunderbolt.
la néve,	the snow.
il gélo,	the frost.
il ghiáccio,	the ice.
la brína,	the glazed frost.
la ruggiáda,	the dew.
la nébbia,	a fog or mist.
il terremóto,	the earthquake.
il dilúvio,	a deluge or flood.
il cáldo,	the heat.
il frédde,	the cold.

Del témpo, e délle stagióni.	*Of the time and seasons.*
Il giórno,	the day.
la nótte,	the night.
il mézzo dì,	noon or mid-day.
la mézza nótte,	midnight.
la mattína,	the morning.
la séra,	the evening.
un óra,	an hour.
un quárto d' óra,	a quarter of an hour.

tína

Digitized by Google

una mézz' óra,	half an hour.
tre quárti d'óra,	three quarters of an hour.
oggì,	to-day.
iéri,	yesterday.
dománi, dimáni,	to-morrow.
jér l'áltro, l' altro jéri,	the day before yesterday.
posdománi, domán l'áltro,	the day after to-morrow.
quésta séra,	this evening.
quésta mattína,	this morning.
dópo pránso,	after dinner.
dópo céna,	after supper.
una settimána,	a week.
un mése,	a month.
un' ánno,	a year.
un moménto,	a moment.
la primavéra,	the spring.
la státe,	the summer.
l'autúnno,	autumn.
l'invérno, il vérno,	the winter.
giórno di fésta,	a holiday.
giórno di lavóro,	a working day.
il far del sóle,	the sun-rising.
il tramontár del sóle,	the sun-setting.
l'auróra,	the dawn, aurora.

I giórni délla settimána.		*The days of the week.*	
Lunedì,	Monday.	*Venerdì,*	Friday.
Martedì,	Tuesday.	*Sábato,*	Saturday.
Mercordì,	Wednesday.	*Doménica,*	Sunday.
Giovedì,	Thursday.		

I mési.		*The months.*	
Gennájo,	January.	*Lúglio,*	July.
Febbrájo,	February.	*Agósto,*	August.
Márzo,	March.	*Settémbre,*	September.
Aprile,	April.	*Ottóbre,*	October.
Mággio,	May.	*Novémbre,*	November.
Giúgno,	June.	*Decémbre,*	December.

Digitized by Google

Le féste dell' ánno,	*The holidays of the year.*
il cápo d'ánno,	New-year's day.
il giórno déi Rè,	Twelfth-day.
la Quarésima,	Lent.
le Quátro témpora,	the Ember-weeks.
la Doménica délle pálme,	Palm-Sunday.
il Venerdì sánto,	Good-Friday.
il giórno di l'ásqua,	Easter-day.
la Pentecóste,	Whitsuntide.
il giórno de' Morti,	All-souls day.
Natále,	Christmas-day.
la vigília,	the eve.
la mcititúra, mésse,	the harvest.
le vendémmie,	the vintage.

Délle dignità ecclesiástiche.	*Of ecclesiastical dignities.*
Il pápa,	the pope.
un cardinále,	a cardinal.
un arcivéscovo,	an archbishop.
un véscovo,	a bishop.
un núnzio,	a nuncio.
un prelláto,	a prelate.
un rettóre,	a rector.
un vicário,	a vicar.
un vicário generále,	a vicar-general.
un decáno,	a dean.
un canónico,	a canon.
un préte,	a priest.
un cappelláno,	a chaplain.
un elemosiniére cappelláno,	an almoner.
un curáto, un pároco,	a curate.
un predicatóre,	a preacher.
un sagristáno,	a sexton.
un chiérico, or *chérico,*	a clerk.
un músico,	a musician.

Names of some eatables.

páne,	bread.
áocqua	water.

vino,

Digitized by Google

vino,	wine.
cárne,	meat or flesh.
pésce,	fish.
alésso,	boiled meat.
arrósto,	roast meat.
un boccóne di páne,	a mouthful of bread.
un' pasticcio,	a pie.
úna félta di pásticcio,	a slice of pie.
úna minestra,	a soup.
un bródo,	the broth.
un insaláta,	a salad.
úna sálsa,	the sauce.
un' intingolo,	a ragoo.
délle frútta,	fruit.
del formággio,	cheese.

L' apparécchio della távola.	*The covering of the table.*
La távola,	the table.
úna sédia,	a chair.
la továglia,	the table cloth.
la salviétta,	a napkin.
un coltéllo,	a knife.
úna forchétta,	a fork.
un cucchiájo,	a spoon.
un tóndo,	a plate.
un piátto,	a dish.
úna saliéra,	a salt-cellar.
un' accetájo,	a vinegar bottle.
un zuccarino,	a sugar box.
un candeliére,	a candlestick.
úna candéla,	a candle.
lo smoccolatójo,	the snuffers.
úno scaldavivánde,	a chafing dish.
un bacile,	a bason.
un bicchiére,	a glass.
un fiásco,	a flask.
úna tazza,	a cup.
úna sottocóppa,	a saucer.
úno sciugamáni,	a towel.
Un servizio,	a service or course.

Digitized by Google

un cestóne,	a basket.
úna fogliétta,	a half-pint.
úna pínta,	a pint.
un boccále,	a jug.
úna bottíglia,	a bottle.

Quel che si mángia a távola per l'alésso.	*What is eaten at table for the boiled meat.*
búe,	beef.
castráto,	mutton.
vitéllo,	veal.
agnéllo,	lamb.
úna gallína	a hen.
un gállo,	a cock.

Per gli antipásti.	*For the first course.*
Un manicarétto,	a ragoo.
úna frigasséa,	a fricassee.
un guazzétto,	ragoo.
úno stufáto,	stewed meat.
un' animélla di vitéllo,	sweet bread.
úna crostáta,	a tart.
de' pasticcétti,	petty pattees.
del presciútto,	some hams.
délle salsíccie,	sausages.
un salsicciótto di Bologna,	a Bologna sausage.
del sanguináccio,	black pudding.
del fégato,	liver.
délle radíci,	radishes.
un melóne.	a melon.

Quel che si fá arrostíre.	*What is roasted.*
Un cappóne,	a capon.
pollástri,	pullets.
piccióni,	pigeons.
le beccácie,	woodcocks.
le pernici,	partridges.
i tórdi,	thrushes.
le lódole,	larks.

Digitized by Google

le quáglie,	quails.
i fagiáni,	pheasants.
un gallináccio,	a cock turkey.
un' óca,	a goose.
un pápero,	a gosling.
un' ánitra,	a duck.
una lépre,	a hare.
un coniglio,	a rabbit.
un pórco,	a hog.
un porchétto,	a roasting pig.
un cinghiále,	a wild boar.
un cérvo,	a stag.
un cosciótto,	a leg of mutton.
un lómbo di vitéllo,	a loin of veal.
una spaléta di castráto,	a shoulder of mutton.
una bráciuóla,	a steak.
il selvaggiume,	game.

Per condire le vivánde.	*To season meat with.*
Del sále,	salt.
Del pépe,	pepper.
dell' óglio,	oil.
dell' acéto,	vinegar.
dell' agrésto,	verjuice.
délla mostárda,	mustard.
dei garófani,	cloves.
délla cannéla,	cinnamon.
dei cápperi,	capers.
del laúro,	laurel.
dei fúnghi,	mushrooms.
dei tartúfoli,	truffles.
délle cipólle,	onions.
dégli scalógni,	shalots.
un áglio,	garlick.
del lárdo,	bacon.
dei merángoli,	oranges.
dei limóni,	lemons.
del prezzémolo,	parsley.
délle cipolléte,	young onions.
délle uóva,	eggs.

Digitized by Google

Per l'insaláta.	*For a sallad.*
Dell' érbe,	herbs.
dell' indívia,	endive.
délla lettúga,	lettuce.
de' sélleri,	celery.
del cerfóglio,	charvel.
del cresciône,	cresses.

Per i giórni mágri.	*For fast-days.*
Del buttíro,	butter.
del látte,	milk.
ælle uóva da bére,	eggs in the shell.
délle uóva affógate,	poached eggs.
úna frittúta,	an omelet.
dei gambéri,	crawfish.
un lúccio,	a pike.
un cárpio,	a carp.
úna tróta,	a trout.
úna sogliola,	a sole.
un' anguílla,	an eel.
úna tinca,	a tench.
úno storiône,	a sturgeon.
un' aringa,	an herring.
délle óstriche,	oysters.
del salmône,	salmon.
del merlúzzo,	cod-fish.
délle alici,	anchovies.
dei piselli,	peas.
délle fáve,	beans.
dêgli spináci.	spinage.
dei carciófoli,	artichokes.
dêgli sparági,	asparagus.
dei cávoli,	cabbages.
dei bróccoli,	sprouts.
dei cávoli fióri,	cauliflowers.
del finócchio,	fennel.
un arigústa,	a lobster.

Per le frútta.	*For the desert.*
Delle méla,	apples.
delle pére,	pears.

délle

Digitized by Google

délle pérsiche,	peaches.
dei bricócoli,	apricots.
délle ceráse,	cherries.
delle uvéspine,	gooseberries.
dei fichi,	figs.
delle susine,	plumbs.
angéliche,	raspberries.
délle úve,	grapes.
délle fritélle,	fritters.
úna tórta,	a tart.
dei zuccherini,	sugar-plumbs.
dei confétti,	sweet-meats.
délle nóci,	nuts.
délle noccivóle,	filberts.
délle castágne,	chesnuts.
délle mándole,	almonds.
délle néspole,	medlars.
délle móre,	blackberries.
délle cotógne,	quinces.
delle melagráne,	pomegranates.
dei melángoli di Portogállo,	Portugal oranges.
délle ulive,	olives.
délle móre,	mulberries.

Grádi di parentádo.	*Degrees of kindred.*
Il pádre,	the father.
la mádre,	the mother.
l' ávo,	the grandfather.
l' áva,	the grandmother.
il bisávo,	the great-grandfather.
la bisáva,	the great-grandmother.
il figlio,	the son.
la figlia,	the daughter.
il fratéllo,	the brother.
la soréllа,	the sister.
il primogénito,	the eldest son.
il cadétto,	the youngest son.
il zio,	the uncle.
la zia,	the aunt.

Digitized by Google

il nipóte,	the nephew.
la nipóte,	the niece.
il pronipóte,	the nephew's son.
la pronipóte,	the niece's daughter.
il cugino,	the cousin.
la cugina,	the female cousin.
il cognáte,	the brother-in-law.
la cognáta,	the sister-in-law.
il suócero,	the father-in-law.
la suócera,	the mother-in-law.
il figliástro,	the son-in-law.
la figliástra,	the daughter-in-law.
il nipotíno,	the grand-son.
la nipotina,	the grand-daughter.
il genitóri,	the fathers and mothers.
lo spóso,	the spouse, *masc.*
la spósa,	the spouse, *fem.*
consórte, masc. & fem.	a consort.
il fratéllo uterino,	a twin brother.
un bastárdo,	a bastard.
il compáre,	a he-gossip.
la compáre,	a she-gossip.
il figliócio,	a god son.
la figlióccia,	a god-daughter.
il sántolo,	the god-father.
la sántola,	the god-mother.
una dónna di párto,	a lying-in woman.
la bália,	the nurse.
la levatrice,	a midwife.
il parénte,	a relation.
la paréntе,	a female relation.
l'amico,	a friend.
l'amica,	a female friend.
il nemico,	an enemy, *masc.*
la nemica,	a female enemy.
un védovo,	a widower.
una védova,	a widow.
l'eréde,	an heir.
l'eréde,	an heiress.
il pupillo,	a pupil, *masc.*
la pupilla,	a female pupil.

Digitized by Google

un parentádo,	an alliance.
il matrimónio,	a marriage.
lo sposalizio,	a wedding.

Degli státi dell' uómo e délla dónna.	*Of the conditions of man and woman.*
L'uómo,	a man.
la dónna,	a woman.
un' uómo attempáto,	an aged man.
úna dónna attempáta,	an aged woman.
un vécchio,	an old man.
úna vécchia,	an old woman.
un gióvane,	a young man.
úna gióvane,	a young girl.
il dámo,	a spark.
la dáma,	a mistress.
il marito,	a husband.
la móglie,	a wife.
un bambino, masc. / *úna bambina,* fem.	an infant.
un ragázzo,	a boy.
un raggazzino,	a little boy.
úna fanciullina,	a little girl.
úna zittélla,	a maid.
úna vérgine,	a virgin.
il padróne,	a master.
la padróna,	a mistress.
il sérvo,	a man servant.
la sérva,	a female servant.
il cittadino,	a citizen.
il contadino,	a countryman.
il forestiéro,	a stranger.
un baróne,	a rogue.
un monéllo,	a sharper.
un ládro,	a thief.

Quel che bisógna per vestírsi.	*What is necessary for dressing oneself.*
Un vestito,	a suit of clothes.
un cappéllo,	a hat.

Digitized by Google

le fálde,	the brims.
un cordóne,	a hat-band.
úna perrúcca,	a wig.
úna cravátta,	a cravat.
un ferrajólo,	a coat.
un giustacóre,	a close coat.
le calzétte,	stockings.
le sottocalzétte,	under-stockings.
gli scarpini,	the pumps.
le scárpe,	the shoes.
le pianélle,	the slippers.
úna camícia,	a shirt.
úna camicióla,	an under-waistcoat.
úna véste,	a vest.
úna mánica,	a sleeve.
le manichétte,	the ruffles.
úna berrétta,	a cap.
úna zimárra,	a night-gown.
úna saccóccia,	a pocket.
il borsellíno,	the fob.

Con i vestíti bisógna.	*With clothes, we must have*
Délle fettúcie,	ribbons.
de' merlétti,	lace.
dei bottóni,	buttons.
délle bottoniére,	button-holes.
délla frángia,	fringe.
dei guánti,	gloves.
un fazzolétto,	a handkerchief.
úna móstra,	a watch.
un manicótto,	a muff.
délle fíbbie,	buckles.
délle legáccie,	garters.
un' anéllo,	a ring.
un péttine,	a comb.

Per quéi che móntano a cavállo.	*For those that ride on horseback.*
La spáda,	a sword.

Digitized by Google

il pendóne,	a belt.
una cintúra,	a girdle.
le pistóle,	the pistols.
la brìglia,	a bridle.
la sélla,	a saddle.
le stáffe,	the stirrups.
la frústa,	the whip.
gli stivàli,	the boots.
gli speróni,	the spurs.
la ginocchiéra,	the top of the boot.
la rotélla,	the rowel of the spure.
la gámba,	the leg.
la suóla,	the sole.
il calcágno,	the heel.

Per le dónne.	*For the ladies.*
Una cúffia,	a cap or head-dress.
una gonnélla,	a petticoat.
il bústo,	the stays.
il grembiále,	the apron.
una máschera,	a mask.
un vélo,	a veil.
gli orecchini,	bobs.
i ricci,	the curls.
cartóne.	pasteboard.
un ventáglio,	a fan.
una stécca,	a busk.
gli smanigli,	bracelets.
l'apparecciatójo,	the toilet.
le spille,	pins.
il gomitolo,	a pincushion.
le fórbici,	a pair of scissars.
il ditále,	a thimble.
l'ágo,	a needle.
il filo,	thread.
il liscio,	paint.
le mósche,	patches.
ácque odorífere,	sweet waters.
délla pólvere,	powder.
lo spillo di tésta,	a bodkin.

l'acconciatúra

Digitized by Google

l'acconciatúra di cápo,	a head-dress.
la scátola,	a box.
délle gióje,	jewels.
un giojéllo,	a jewel.
un diamánte,	a diamond.
úno smeráldo,	an emerald.
un rubíno,	a ruby.
úna pérla,	a pearl.
úno stuzzicadénti,	a tooth-pick.
délla téla,	linen.
una conócchia,	a distaff.
il fúso,	the spindle.
séta,	silk.
lána,	wool.
dell' ámido,	starch.
del sapóne,	soap.
lo stúccio,	a case.

Délle párti del córpo.	*Of the parts of the body.*
La testa,	the head.
il víso,	the face.
la frónte,	the forehead.
gli ócchi,	the eyes.
le ciglia,	the eye-brows.
le palpébre,	the eye-lids.
la pupilla,	the eye-ball.
le orécchie,	the ears.
i capélli,	the hair.
le témpia,	the temples.
le guáncie,	the cheeks.
il náso,	the nose.
le narici,	the nostrils.
la bárba,	the beard.
la bócca,	the mouth.
i dénti,	the teeth.
la língua,	the tongue.
le lábbra,	the lips.
il paláto,	the roof of the mouth.
le basétte,	whiskers.
il ménto,	the chin.
il cóllo,	the neck.

Digitized by Google

la góla,	the throat.
le spálle,	the shoulders.
le braccia,	the arms.
il gómito,	the elbow.
il púgno,	the wrist.
la máno,	the hand.
il díto,	the finger.
il póllice,	the thumb.
le únghie,	the nails.
lo stómaco,	the stomach.
il pétto,	the bosom.
le zinne,	the breasts.
il véntre,	the belly.
le cóste,	the ribs.
l'umbilico,	the navel.
il pettignóne,	the groin.
le cóscie,	the thighs.
le ginócchia,	the knees.
la gámba,	the leg.
la pólpa délla gámba,	the calf of the leg.
la nóce del piéde,	the ancle-bone.
il cóllo del piéde,	the instep.
il piéde,	the foot.
il calcágno,	the heel.
la ciéra,	the mien.
la complessióne,	the complexion.
l'ária,	the air.
il portaménto,	the demeanour.
la grassézza,	the fatness.
la magrézza,	the leanness.
la statúra,	the stature.
l' andatúra,	the gait.
il gésto,	the gesture.
il cervéllo,	the brain.
il sángue,	the blood.
le véne,	the veins.
le artérie,	the arteries.
i nérvi,	the nerves.
i múscoli,	the muscles.
la pélle,	the skin.
il cuóre,	the heart.

Digitized by Google

il fégato,	the liver.
il polmóne,	the lungs.
la vesica,	the bladder.
il fiéle,	the gall.
la saliva,	the spittle.
il sudóre,	the sweat.
la tósse,	a cough.
il catárro,	the rheum.
il fiáto,	the breath.
la vóce,	the voice.
la paróla,	the speech.
il sospíro,	a sigh.
la vísta,	the sight.
l'udíto,	the hearing.
l'odoráto,	the smell.
il gústo,	the taste.
il sentiménto,	the opinion.

Per studiáre.	*For studying.*
Il gabinétto,	the closet.
un líbro,	a book.
la cárta,	the paper.
un fóglio,	a leaf.
una página,	a page.
la copérta del líbro,	the cover of a book.
una pénna,	a pen.
l' inchióstro,	ink.
un calamájo,	an ink-stand.
un temperíno,	a pen-knife.
lo spágo,	packthread.
la pólvere,	powder.
il polveríno,	the powder-box.
la céra,	the wax.
un sigíllo,	a seal.
una léttera,	a letter.
un bigliétto,	a billet.
la scrittúra,	the writing.
il ricórdo,	the pocket-book.
la cartapécora,	parchment.
il pennéllo,	the pencil.

Digitized by Google

una lézione,	a lesson.
una traduzióne,	a translation.
un téma,	a theme.
una cartélla,	a case for paper.

Stroménti di música.	*Instruments of music.*
Un violino,	a violin.
una vióla,	a bass-viol.
un flaúto,	a flute.
un zúffolo,	a flageolet.
una zampógna,	a bagpipe.
una piva,	a hautboy.
una chitárra,	a guitar.
un clavicémbalo,	a harpsichord.
una spinétta,	a spinet.
un liúto,	a lute.
un' árpa,	a harp.
l'órgano,	an organ.
una trómba,	a trumpet.
un tambúro,	a drum.

Délle párti délla cása.	*Of the parts of the house.*
La cása,	the house.
la pórta,	the gate.
lá cámera,	the chamber.
l'anticaméra,	the anti-chamber.
la sála,	the hall.
il gabinétto,	the study.
la finéstra,	the window.
le invitriáte,	the glasses.
la cucina,	the kitchen.
il cortile,	the yard.
il pózzo,	the well.
la stálla,	the stable.
la cantina,	the cellar.
la scála,	the stair-case.
le scále,	the stairs.
il giardino,	the garden.
la fontána,	the fountain.
la dispénsa,	the pantry.

Digitized by Google

il primo piáno,	the first story.
il secóndo piáno,	the second story.
il terrázzo,	the terrace.
la soffitta,	the garret.
il tétto,	the roof.
le tégole,	the tiles.
le grondáje,	the gutters.
il múro,	the wall.
il camino,	the chimney.
i mattóni,	the bricks.
il pálco,	the floor.
la rimessa,	the coach-house.
il fórno,	the oven.
la tráve,	the beam.
i travicélli,	the joists.
le távole,	the planks.
l'inségna,	the sign.
la pigióne,	the rent.
il gésso,	the plastering.
la calcána,	the lime.
il mármo,	the marble.
la piétra,	the stone.
il colombájo,	the pigeon-house.
il pollájo,	the hen-house.

I móbili délla cámera.	*The furniture of a chamber.*
La tapezzería,	the hangings.
lo spécchio,	a looking-glass.
il létto,	the bed.
le lenzuóla,	the sheets.
il materásso,	the mattress.
il coltrice,	the feather-bed.
il plagiariccio,	a straw-bed.
il capezzále,	the bolster.
il sopraciélo del létto,	the tester of the bed.
le cortine,	the curtains.
la bandinélla,	the head curtain.
la copérta,	the counterpane.
il guanciále,	the pillow.

Digitized by Google

le vérghe,	the curtain-rods.
la spónda del létto,	the bed-side.
lo scaldalétto,	the warming-pan.
i quádri,	the pictures.
la cornice.	the frame.
le sédie,	the chairs.
una sédie d'appóggio,	an arm chair.
la távola,	the table.
il tappeto,	the carpet.
la credénza,	the cupboard.
un paravénto,	a screen.
una cássa,	a box.
un báule,	a trunk.
una cassétta,	a little box.
la ricamatúra,	embroidery.
la pittúra,	the painting.
l'indoratúra,	the gilding.
la scultúra,	the carving.
un bústo,	a figure.
un piedestállo,	a pedestal.
un váso,	a vessel.
una gábbia,	a cage.
un uccéllo,	a bird.
un ritátto,	a portrait.

Quel che si tróva intórno al cammíno.	*What we find about the chimney.*
La porcellána,	the China ware.
un' úrna,	an urn.
un váso,	a vessel.
il fuóco,	the fire.
il carbóne,	coals.
le céneri,	ashes.
il focoláre,	the hearth.
un tizzóne,	a fire brand.
un pézzo di légna,	a log of wood.
una fascina di légno grósso,	a fagot.
un soffiétto,	a pair of bellows.
la paléttа,	the shovel.
le molléttе,	the tongs.

solfarnélli,

Digitized by Google

solfarnélli,	matches.
il focile,	the steel.
la piétra fociia,	the flint.
l'ésca,	the tinder.
la fiámma,	the flame.
il parafuóco,	a screen.
il fúmo,	the smoke.
la fuligine,	the soot.

Quel che si tróva nélla cucína.	*What we find in the kitchen.*
Lo spiédo,	the spit.
il voltaspiédo,	the jack.
il calddro,	a kettle.
una padélla,	a frying-pan.
un trepiéde,	a trivet.
una graticola,	a gridiron.
una brócca,	a pitcher.
una sécchia,	a pail.
una eórda,	a rope.
una girélla,	a pulley.
un catino,	an earthen pan.
una pignátta,	a great pot.
una péntola,	a pot.
una cucchiára,	a spoon.
una móstola,	a ladle.
una forcina,	a fork.
uno scaldavivánde,	a chafing dish.
un rampino,	a hook.
la caténa,	the pot-hanger.
una gratúggia,	a grater.
una tortiéra,	a pudding-pan.
un mortáro,	a mortar.
un pistéllo,	a pestle.
uno sciacquatóre,	the sink.
una scópa,	a broom.
uno straccio,	a rag.
una struffináccio,	a dish-clout.

Quel

Digitized by Google

Quel che si tróva nélla cantína.	*What we find in the cellar.*
Una bótte,	a butt.
un baríle,	a barrel.
un' imbottatójo,	a funnel.
un cérchio,	a hoop.
la fóccia,	the dregs.
del vino,	wine.
della bírra,	beer.
sídro,	cider.
vin vécchio,	old wine.
vin nuóvo,	new wine.
vin rósso,	red wine.
vin biánco,	white wine.
vin chiarétto,	claret.
vino guásto,	sour wine.
acéto,	vinegar.
mósto,	sweet wine.
un martéllo,	a hammer.
métter mano ad úna bótte,	to tap a butt.
cavár vino,	to draw wine.

Quel che si tróva intórno álla pórta.	*What is found about a gate.*
La chiáve,	the key.
la serratúra,	the lock.
il catenáccio,	the bolt.
il saliscéndi,	the latch.
il chiavistéllo,	the bolt.
i riscóntri,	the wards of a lock.
il battitójo,	the knocker.
la campanélla,	the bell.
la stágna,	the bar.
il sóglio,	the threshold.
i gángheri,	the hinges.

Quel che si tróva nélla stálla.	*What we find in the stable.*
del fiéno,	hay.
della biáda,	oats.

della

Digitized by Google

délla páglia,	straw.
una rastelliéra,	a rack.
una mængiatója,	a manger.
la sémola,	the bran.
il péttine,	the comb.
la stríglia,	the curry-comb.
un váglio,	a sieve.
la bríglia,	the bridle.
la sélla,	the saddle.
il pettorále,	the breast-plate.
le cínghie,	the girths.
il cavícchio,	the fetlocks.
un chiódo,	a nail.
l' arcióne,	the saddle-bow.
una cavézza,	a halter.
il mózzo di stálla,	the groom.
i caválli,	the horses.
la carrózza,	the coach.
un cárro,	a waggon.
una carrétta,	a cart.

Quél che si tróva nel giardíno, i fióri, e gli álberi.	*What is found in the garden, the flowers, and the trees.*
Una spalliéra,	a row of wall-trees.
una pérgola,	an arbour.
una rósa,	a rose.
un gelsoméno,	a jessamin.
dei garófani,	pinks.
délle tulípe, dei tulipáni,	tulips.
dei gígli,	lilies.
dellé vióle,	violets.
délle vióle mámmole,	gilliflowers.
délle gionchíglie,	jonquils.
dei papáveri,	poppies.
un poméro,	an apple-tree.
un péro,	a pear-tree.
un cirégio,	a cherry-tree.
un susíno,	a plumb-tree.
un bricócolo,	an apricot-tree.
un pérsico,	a peach-tree.

Digitized by Google

un móro,	a mulberry-tree.
un fico,	a fig-tree.
un ulivo,	an olive-tree.
il bósso,	the box-tree.
il laúro,	the laurel-tree.
l' ábete,	the fir-tree.
la quércia,	the oak.
il fággio,	the beech-tree.
l'órmo,	the elm.
l'úva spína,	the gooseberry-tree,
l'aráncio,	the orange-tree.
un rosáio,	a rose-bush.
il seminário,	the nursery.
la vite,	the vine.
l'édera,	ivy.
un rámo,	a branch.
un mándorlo,	an almond-tree.
un viále,	an alley.
un boschétto,	a little wood.
l'ómbra,	the shade.
il frésco,	the cool.
la fontána,	the fountain.
i canáli,	the canals.
un cespúglio,	a bush.
un mírto,	a myrtle-tree.
la maggiorána,	sweet-marjoram.
del timo,	thyme.
la verdúra,	verdure.
un mázzo di fióri,	a nose-gay.

Dignità temporáli.	*Temporal dignities.*
Un imperatóre,	an emperor.
una imperatrice,	an empress.
un ré,	a king.
una regína,	a queen.
il delfíno,	the dauphin.
il delfína,	the dauphiness.
il príncipe,	the prince.
la principéssa,	the princess.
il dúca,	the duke.

Digitized by Google

la duchéssa,	the duchess.
il marchése,	the marquis.
la marchésa,	the marchioness.
il eónte,	the earl.
la contéssa,	the countess.
il baróne,	the baron.
la baronéssa,	the baroness.
l'ambasciadóre,	the ambassador.
l'ambasciadrice,	the ambassadress.
il governatóre,	the governor.
la governatrice,	the governor's lady.
un inviáto,	an envoy.
un residénte,	a resident.
un agénte,	an agent.
un maresciállo di Fráncia,	a marshal of France.
il capocáccia,	the grand veneur, or chief hunter.

Cáriche ed ufficiáli di giustízia.	*Officers and offices of justice.*
Il cancelliére,	the chancellor.
il custóde de' sigílli,	the keeper of the seals.
il segretário di státo,	the secretary of state.
l'intendénte,	the surveyor.
il tesoriére,	the treasurer.
il presidénte,	the president.
il consigliére,	the counsellor.
il maéstro delle súppliche,	the master of requests.
il maéstro de' cónti,	the master of accounts.
il giudíce,	the judge.
il cónsole,	the consul.
il luogotenénte civíle,	the civil magistrate.
il luogotenénte criminále,	the criminal magistrate.
il podesto,	the mayor.
lo schiavíno,	the alderman.
l' avvocáto,	the advocate.
il procuratóre,	the attorney.
il procuratór fiscále,	the attorney-general.
un sostitúto,	a deputy.
un notáro,	a notary.

un

Digitized by Google

un segretário,	a secretary.
un sollicitatóre,	a solicitor.
uno scriváno,	a clerk.
un copista,	a hackney-writer.
l' usciére,	a door-keeper.
il sergénte, il cursóre,	the serjeant.
un custóde di cárcere,	a jailor.
un litigatóre,	a pleader.
un prigioniére,	a prisoner.

Officiali di guérra.	*Officers of war.*
Il generále,	the general.
l' ammiráglio,	the admiral.
il luogoténente di cámpo,	the lieutenant-general.
un maresciállo di cámpo,	a field-marshal.
un brigadiére,	a brigadier.
il colonéllo,	the colonel.
un maéstro di cámpo,	a camp-master.
il maggióre,	the major.
l' ajutánte maggióre,	the adjutant.
il capitáno,	the captain.
il luogoténente,	the lieutenant.
il cornétta,	the cornet.
l' alfiére,	the ensign.
il sergénte,	the sergeant.
il caporále,	the corporal.
un sottocaporále,	the under-corporal.
un forriére maggióre,	a quarter-master.
un commissário,	a commissary.
un forriére,	a harbinger.
un cavaliére,	a horse-man.
un fantaccíno,	a foot-soldier.
il cavalleggiéro,	the light-horse.
un dragóne,	a dragoon.
un moschettiére,	a musqueteer.
un trombettiére, trombétta,	a trumpeter.
un tamburíno,	a drummer.
il pifaro,	the piper.
la sentinélla,	the sentinel.
la rónda,	the round.

Digitized by Google

la pattúglia,	the patrole.
una spía,	a spy.
un guastatóre,	a pioneer.
un cannoniére,	a cannoneer.
un minatóre,	a miner.
gli avventuriéri,	volunteers.
i fánti perdúti,	the forlorn-hope.

L'esército.	*The army.*
Un esército,	a land army.
una armáta,	a fleet.
il córpo di battáglia,	the main body.
la vanguárdia,	the van-guard.
la retroguárdia	the rear-guard.
il córpo di resérva,	the body of reserve.
un cámpo volánte,	a flying-camp.
la cavallería,	the horse.
la fantería,	the foot.
úno squadróne,	a squadron.
un battaglióne,	a battalion.
la príma fíla, or *schiéra,*	the first rank.
lí secónda fíla,	the second rank.
il bagáglio,	the baggage.
il cannóne,	the cannon.
le ténde,	the tents.
il padiglióne,	the pavilion.
un regiménto,	a regiment.
úna compagnía,	a company.
un presídio, or *guarnigióne,*	a garrison.

Le fortificazióni.	*The fortifications.*
Una città,	a city.
la cittadélla,	the citadel.
un fórte,	a fort.
una fortézza,	a fortress.
un castéllo,	a castle.
le mura,	the walls.
il fósso,	the ditch.
una palizzáta, úno steccáto,	a pallisade.

Digitized by Google

la cortína,	the curtain.
la mézza lúna,	the half moon.
la casamátta,	the casement.
la stáda copérta,	the covered way.
un fortíno,	a redoubt.
le trinciére,	the trenches.
una mína,	a mine.
úna contramína,	a counter-mine.
úna tórre,	a tower.
un parapétto,	a parapet.
il terrapiéno,	the rampart.
úna piátta fórma,	a platform.
un cavaliéro,	a horseman.
un bastióne,	a bastion.
provisióni da bócca,	provision.
provisióni da guérra,	ammunition.
un assédio,	a siege.
le capitolazióni,	the capitulations.
i soccórsi,	succours.
úna sortíta,	a sally.
un' assálto,	a storm.

Professióni, e mestiéri.	*Professions, and trades.*
U'no stampatóre,	a printer.
un médico,	a physician.
un cerúsico,	a surgeon.
úno speziále,	an apothecary.
un barbiére,	a barber.
un fornáro,	a baker.
un pasticciére,	a pastry cook.
un rosticciére,	a cook that roasts.
un marcelláro,	a butcher.
un' óste,	an innkeeper.
un mercánte,	a merchant.
un sartóre,	a taylor.
un calzoláro,	a shoemaker.
un ciabattíno,	a cobler.
un cappelláro,	a hatmaker.
un merciáio,	a mercer
un sellájo,	a sadler.

Digitized by Google

un maliscálco,	a farrier.
úno scultóre in rame,	an engraver in brass.
un scultóre, intagliatóre,	an engraver in wood.
un pittóre,	a painter.
un ricamatóre,	an embroiderer.
un falegnáme,	a joiner.
un marangóne,	a carpenter.
un muratóre,	a mason.
un magnáno, un chiavâro,	a locksmith.
un molináro,	a miller.
úna lavandâra,	a washer-woman.
un orologiâro,	a watchmaker.
un' oréfice,	a goldsmith.
un tapezziére,	an upholsterer.
un rigattiére,	a broker.
un guantâjo,	a glover.
un commediânte,	a player.
un músico,	a musician.
úno spadâro,	a sword-cutler.
úna scuffiâra,	a milliner.
un facchino,	a porter.
un vetrâio,	a glazier.

Officiâli di cása.	*Officers of the house.*
Un lacché,	a running footman.
úno staffiére,	a footman.
il pággio,	the page.
il cocchiéro,	the coachman.
il palafreniéro,	the groom.
la sérva,	the maid-servant.
la cameriéra,	the chamber-maid.
il cameriére,	the waiting-man.
lo scudiére, il cavallerizzo,	the gentleman of the horse.
lo scálco,	the carver.
il coppiére,	the cupbearer.
il cantiniére,	the butler.
il credenziére,	the cupboard-keeper.
il maéstro di cása,	the steward.
il secretário,	the secretary.
il cappelláno,	the almoner.

Digitized by Google

il gentiluómo,	the gentleman.
l' intendénte,	the intendant.
il cuóco,	the cook.
il giardiniére,	the gardiner.
il vignaruólo,	the vine-dresser.
il padróne,	the master.
la padróna,	the mistress.

Qualità, difétti, ed imperfezióni dell' uómo.	*Qualities, defects, and imperfections of man.*
Un guércio,	a one-eyed man.
un ciéco,	a blind man.
un góbbo,	a hunch-backed man.
un zóppo,	a lame man.
uno stroppiáto,	a cripple.
un mancíno,	a left-handed man.
un mánco,	a one-handed man.
un sórdo,	a deaf man.
un múto,	a dumb man.
uno scilinguáto,	a stammerer.
un cálvo,	a bald-pated man.
un náno,	a dwarf.
un ládro,	a thief.
un guidóne,	a rascal.
un bója,	a hangman.
un furfánte,	a rogue.
un ruffiáno,	a pimp.
un mágo,	a magician.
uno stregóne,	a sorcerer.
una stréga,	a witch.
un cattívo,	a wicked fellow.
un tristo,	a sad wretch.

Buóna fortúna,	good luck.
disgrázia,	bad luck.
la fortúna,	fortune.
un ammaláto,	a sick person.
la malattía,	sickness.
la fébbre,	a fever.

Digitized by Google

la terzána,	a tertian ague.
la quartána,	a quartan ague.
il trémito,	the cold fit.
una ferita,	a wound.
una contusióne,	a contusion.
la podágra,	the gout.
i dolóri cólici,	the cholic.
la rosolía,	the measles.
le vajuóle,	the small-pox.
l' infreddatúra, il catárro,	the rheum.
la tósse,	the cough.
la rognúzza, la scábbia,	the itch.
il pizzicóre,	an itching.
un 'apostéma,	an imposthume.
la márcia,	the corruption.
il mal di piétra,	the stone.
la renélla,	the gravel.
un bernóccolo, un tumóre,	a bunch.
úna sgrafignatúra,	a scratch.
una caduta,	a fall.
úna sconciatúra,	a miscarriage.
un buffétto,	a fillip.
úno schiáffo,	a box on the ear.
un púgno,	a cuff.
un cálcio,	a kick.
úna fioccáta,	a thrust with a sword.
úna pistolettáta,	a pistol-shot.
un' archibugiáta,	a gun-shot.
úno sveniménto,	a swooning.
un súdor fréddo,	a cold sweat.
la mórte,	death.

Dégli uccélli. *Of birds.*

Un' áquila,	an eagle.
un' uccéllo,	a bird.
un uccellíno,	a little bird.
un cardéllo,	a goldfinch.
un fanéllo,	a linnet.
un canaríno,	a canary-bird.
un verzellíno,	a yellow hammer.

Digitized by Google

un lucarino,	a goldfinch.
un' usignólo,	a nightingale.
úno stórno,	a starling.
un fringuéllo,	a chaffinch.
úna pássera, un passerétto,	a sparrow.
un pappagállo,	a parrot.
un merlo,	a blackbird.
úna gázza,	a magpye.
úna ghiandája,	a jay.
un tortoréllo,	a cock turtle dove.
úna tortoréla,	a hen turtle dove.

De' quadrúpedi.	*Of four-footed animals.*
Un cáne,	a dog.
un cagnolíno,	a little dog.
úna cagnolína,	a little bitch.
un gátto, úna gátta,	a boar cat, a she cat.
un sórcio,	a mouse.
un tópo, un sórcio,	a rat.
úna scímia,	an ape.
úna pécora,	a sheep.
un pórco,	a hog.
úna scrófa,	a sow.
úna vólpe,	a fox.
un lúpo,	a wolf.
un tóro,	a bull.
un múlo, úna múla,	a mule, *masc.* and *fem.*
un camméllo,	a camel.
úna cápra,	a she-goat.
un' elefánte,	an elephant.
un leóne,	a lion.
un leopárdo,	a leopard.
úna tígre,	a tyger.
un cavállo,	a horse.

Dégli animáli rettíli, ed insétti.	*Of reptiles and insects.*
Un róspo,	a toad.
úna ranócchia, rána,	a frog.

Digitized by Google

una lucértola,	a lizard.
una lumáca,	a snail.
una chiócciola,	a beetle.
un scorpióne,	a scorpion.
un rágno,	a spider.
un serpénte, una bíscia,	a serpent.
una farfálla,	a butterfly.
una mósca,	a fly.
una zanzára, zanzála,	a gnat.
un brúco,	a caterpillar.
un vérme, un lombríco,	a worm.
un pidócchio,	a louse.
un púlce,	a flea.
un címice,	a bug.
una lóndine,	a nit.
una formíca,	an ant.
una tartarúga,	a tortoise.

Quel che si véde in campágna.	*What one sees in the country.*
La stráda,	the road.
la stráda maéstra,	the high-way.
una pianúra,	a plain.
una válle,	a valley.
una montágna,	a mountain.
un póggio, un cólle,	a little hill.
un bósco,	a wood.
una sélva,	a forest.
una frátta, or *siépe,*	a hedge.
un cespúglio,	a bush.
un' álbero,	a tree.
un rámo,	a branch.
del gráno,	corn.
del forménto,	wheat.
dell' órzo,	barley.
délla biáda, dell' avéna,	oats.
una vígna,	a vine.
un giardíno,	a garden.
un viále,	an alley, or walk.
un castéllo,	a castle.

Digitized by Google

un campaníle,	a steeple.
un práto,	a meadow.
un lágo,	a lake.
úno stágno,	a pond.
un dirúpo,	a rock.
un fósso,	a ditch.
un ruscéllo,	a brook.
un fiúme,	a river.
un pónte,	a bridge.
úna bárca,	a bark.
úna palúde, un pantáno,	a marsh.
un pantáno,	a slough.
una térra,	a village.
un bórgo,	a town.

Quel che si véde nella città.	*What we see in a city.*
Il pónte,	the bridge.
la pórta,	the gate.
la stráda,	the street.
la cása,	the house.
il palázzo,	the palace.
lo chiésa,	the church.
il convénto,	the convent.
lo spedále,	the hospital.
il mercáto,	the market.
la fiéra,	the fair.
la piázza d' árme,	the place of arms.
la bottéga,	the shop.
la dogána,	the custom-house.
la prigióne,	the prison.
la fontána,	the fountain.

I colóri.	*Colours.*
Il biánco,	white.
il nero,	black.
il rósso,	red.
il vérde,	green.
il giállo,	yellow.

Digitized by Google

il turchíno,	blue.
il fiór di líno,	gridelin.
il bígio,	grey.
il pavonázzo,	violet-colour.
l' incarnáto,	carnation.
il colór di fuóco,	fire-colour.
il cavallíno, fóglia mórta,	fillemont.
l' olivástro,	olive-colour.
il colór di páglia,	straw-colour.
il cremefíno,	crimson.
il leonáto,	dun colour.

I metálli. — *Of metals.*

L' óro,	gold.
l' argénto,	silver.
il férro,	iron.
il piómbo,	lead.
il brónzo,	cast copper.
il ráme,	brass.
il ráme giállo,	copper.
l'ottone,	yellow brass.
lo stágno,	tin, or pewter.
il mercurío, argénto vívo,	quicksilver.
la calamíta,	a loadstone.
la látta,	tin.
il zólfo,	brimstone.
il verderáme,	verdigrease.
il vítro,	glass.

Délle nazióni. — *Of nations.*

Italiáno,	an Italian.	*Borgognóne,*	a Burgundian.
Tedésco,	a German.	*Suízzero,*	a Switzer.
Francése,	a Frenchman.	*Piemontése,*	a Piedmontese.
Spagnuólo,	a Spaniard.	*Suedése,*	a Swede.
Portoghése,	a Portuguese.	*Polácco,*	a Polander.
Inglése,	an Englishman.	*U'ngáro,*	a Hungarian.
Irlandése,	an Irishman.	*Danése,*	a Dane.
Scozzése,	a Scotchman.	*Maltése,*	a Maltese.
Olandése,	a Dutchman.	*Túrco,*	a Turk.

Flaming,

Digitized by Google

Fiamingo, a Fleming. *Tártaro,* a Tartar.
Lorenése, a Lorrainer.

La dáta délle léttere.	*The date of letters.*
Il prímo,	the first.
i dúe, ái dúe,	the second.
i tre, ái tre,	the third.
i quáttro, ai quáttro,	the fourth.
i cínque, ai cínque,	the fifth.
i séi, ai sé,	the sixth.
i sétte, ai sétte,	the seventh.
gli ótto, ágli ótto,	the eighth.
i nóve, ai nóve,	the ninth.
i diéci, ai diéci,	the tenth.
gli úndici, ágli úndici,	the eleventh.
i dódici, ai dódici,	the twelfth.
i trédeci, ai trédeci,	the thirteenth.
i quattórdici, ai quattórdici,	the fourteenth.
i quíndici, ai quíndici,	the fifteenth.
i sédici, ai 16.	the 16th.
i diécisétte, ai 17,	the 17th.
i diéciótto, ai 18,	the 18th.
i diécinóve, ai 19,	the 19th.
i vénti, ai 20,	the 20th.
i vént' úno, ai 21,	the 21st.
i vénti dúe, ai 22,	the 22d.
i vénti tre, ai 23,	the 23d.
i vénti quáttro, ai 24,	the 24th.
i vénti cínque, ai 25,	the 25th.
i vénti séi, ai 26,	the 26th.
i vénti sétte, ai 27,	the 27th.
i vénti ótto, ai 28,	the 28th.
i vénti nóve, ai 29,	the 29th.
i trént' úno, ai trént' úno,	the 30th.
or *l' último,*	the 31st.

One may put *i*, or *a dì*, *prímo*, *dúe*, *tre*, *quáttro*, &c.

I giuóchi.	*The several games.*
La pálla a córda,	tennis.
il bigliárdo,	billiards.

Digitized by Google

a' dadi,	at dice.
alle cárte,	at cards.
all' ómbra,	at ombre.
álle bassétta,	at basset.
álla béstia,	at beast.
ágli scácchi, a scácchi,	at chess.
álla dáme,	at draughts.
álle trichetráche,	at tick tack.
álle piastrélle,	at quits.
álle bóccie,	at bowls.
a chiáma l' óste,	an Italian game.
al volánte, álla racchétta,	a shuttlecock.
álla ciéca,	at blind man's buff.
all' óca;	a goose.

A COLLECTION OF VERBS,

Most necessary to be first learnt.

Per lo stúdio.	*For study.*
Studiaré,	to study.
imparáre,	to learn.
imparár' a ménte,	to learn by heart.
léggere,	to read.
scrívere,	to write.
sottoscrívere,	to sign or subscribe.
piegáre,	to fold up.
sigilláre,	to seal.
fáre il soprascritto,	to put the superscription.
corréggere,	to correct.
scassáre, scancellare,	to blot out.
tradúrre,	to translate.
cominciáre,	to begin.

continuáre,

Digitized by Google

continuáre,	to go on.
finire,	to make an end
recitáre,	to repeat.
fáre,	to do.
sapére,	to know.
potére,	to be able.
volére,	to be willing.
ricordársi,	to remember.
dimenticáre,	to forget.

Per parláre.	*To speak.*
Pronunziáre,	to pronounce.
accentuáre,	accent.
proferire,	to utter.
dire,	to say.
ciarláre,	to prattle.
cicaláre,	to chat.
gridáre,	to cry out.
aprire la bócca,	to open one's mouth.
serráre la bócca,	to shut it.
taeére,	to be silent.
chiamáre,	to call.
rispóndere,	to answer.

Per bére, e mangiáre.	*To drink, and eat.*
Masticáre,	to chew.
inghiottire,	to swallow.
tagliáre,	to cut.
prováre, gustáre,	to taste.
sciacquáre,	to rinse.
bére,	to drink.
mángiáre,	to eat.
digiunáre,	to fast.
far colazióne,	to breakfast.
pranzáre, desináre,	to dine.
merendáre,	to eat an afternoon's luncheon.
cenáre,	to sup.
imbriacársi,	to fuddle one's self.

saziársi,

Digitized by Google

saziársi, satollársi,	to fill one's self.
avér fáme,	to be hungry.
avér séte,	to be dry.
avér' appetito,	to have a stomach.

Per andár' a dormíre.	*To go to sleep.*
Andár' al létto,	to go to bed.
dormíre,	to sleep.
vegliáre,	to watch.
risposáre,	to rest.
addormentársi,	to fall asleep.
sognáre,	to dream.
russáre,	to snore.
svegliársi, destársi,	to wake.
levársi,	to rise.

Per vestírsi.	*To dress one's self.*
Vestírsi,	to dress one's self.
spogliársi,	to undress one's self.
calzársi,	to put on one's shoes.
scalzársi,	to pull off one's shoes.
pettinársi,	to comb one's head.
acconciársi il cápo,	to dress one's head.
méttersi la pólvere,	to powder one's head.
fársi i ricci,	to curl it.
lisciársi,	to paint one's self.
métter 'l suo cappéllo,	to put on one's hat.
coprírsi,	to be covered.
abbottonársi,	to button one's self.
allacciársi, affibbiársi,	to lace one's self.

Azióni ordinárie all' uómo.	*The ordinary actions of men.*
Ridere,	to laugh.
piángere,	to weep.
sospiráre,	to sigh.
sternutáre,	to sneeze.
sbadigliáre,	to gape.

soffiáre,

Digitized by Google

soffiáre,	to blow.
fischiáre,	to whistle.
ascoltáre,	to hearken.
odoráre,	to smell.
sputáre,	to spit.
soffiársi il náso,	to blow one's nose.
uscir sángue dal náso,	to bleed at the nose.
gli ésce sangue dal náso,	he bleeds at the nose.
sudáre,	to sweat.
asciugáre,	to dry or wipe.
tremáre,	to tremble.
gonfiáre,	to swell.
tossire,	to cough.
éssere raffreddáto,	to have a cold.
rignardáre, miráre,	to look.
pizzicáre,	to pinch.
grattáre,	to scratch.
solleticáre,	to tickle.

Azióni d'amóre, e d'ódio.	*Actions of love and hatred.*
Amáre,	to love.
accarezzáre,	to caress.
lusingáre,	to flatter.
far carézze,	to show a kindness.
abbracciáre,	to embrace.
baciáre,	to kiss.
salutáre,	to salute.
insegnáre,	to teach.
nudrire,	to nourish.
corréggere,	to correct.
punire,	to punish.
castigáre,	to chastise.
frustáre,	to whip.
lodáre,	to praise.
biasimáre,	to blame.
dáre, concédere,	to give.
negáre,	to deny.
difendere,	to forbid.
strappazzáre,	to use ill.

báttere,

Digitized by Google

báttere,	to beat.
odiáre,	to hate.
scacciáre, mandár via,	to drive.
perdonáre,	to pardon.
disputáre,	to dispute.
contrastáre,	to quarrel.
litigáre,	to plead.
protéggere,	to protect.
abbandonáre,	to forsake.
be edíre,	to bless.
maledíre,	to curse.

Per gli esercízj.	*For diversions or exercises.*
Gantáre,	to sing.
ballár e,	to dance.
saltáre,	to leap.
giuocáre,	to play.
sonáre la chitárra,	to play on the guitar.
sonáre 'l liúto,	to play on the lute.
tirár di spáda,	to fence.
cavalcáre, montár' a cavállo,	to ride the great horse.
giuocár' al máglio,	to play at mall.
giuocár' álla pálla a córda,	to play at tennis.
giuocár' alle carte,	to play at cards.
giuocár' a picchéto,	to play at picquet.
giuocár' all' ómbra,	to play at ombre.
giuocár' alla passétta,	to play at basset.
giuocár' a' dadi,	to play at dice.
guadagnáre, vincére,	to win.
pérdere,	to lose.
scommettere,	to lay a wager.
risicáre,	to venture.
éssere páce,	to be quits.
scartáre,	to lay out.
mescoláre,	to shuffle.
alzáre,	to lift up.
trastullársi,	to divert one's self.
scherzáre,	to joke.
burlársi,	to laugh at.
motteggiáre,	to make one laugh.

star

Digitized by Google

stár in piédi,	to stand up.
inchinársi,	to stoop downwards.
giráre,	to turn.
fermársi, trattenérsi,	to stop.

Per le malattíe.	*For distempers.*
Medicáre,	to give one physic.
guarire,	to cure.
stár méglio,	to be better in health.
peggioráre,	to grow worse.
cavár sángue,	to let blood.
pigliár medicína,	to take physic.
purgáre,	to purge.
far' un' incisióne,	to make an incision.
fasciáre,	to bind up.
tagliáre,	to cut.
púngere,	to prick.
tentáre,	to probe.
esamináre,	to examine.

Per compráre.	*For buying.*
Domandáre il prézzo,	to ask the price.
quánto vále?	how much is it worth?
quánto cósta?	what does it cost?
prezzoláre, fáre 'l prézzo, mercantáre.	to haggle.
misuráre,	to measure.
compráre,	to buy.
pagáre,	to pay.
offerire,	to bid or offer.
sopraffáre, far' úna domanda esorbitánte,	to exact.
vénder cáro,	to sell dear.
vénder' a buón mercáto,	to sell cheap.
prestáre,	to lend.
tórre in préstito, pigliár in préstito,	to borrow.
impegnáre,	to pawn.

disimpegnáre,

Digitized by Google

desimpegnáre,	to take out of pawn.
dáre,	to give.
ingannáre,	to cheat.

Per la chiésa.	*For the church.*
Andár' alla chiésa,	to go to church.
sentire la prédica,	to hear a sermon.
pregár' Iddio,	to pray to God.
communicársi,	to receive the sacrament.
predicáre,	to preach.
sentir la prédica,	to hear a sermon.
ornáre,	to adorn
battezzáre,	to baptize.
confermáre,	to confirm.
sonáre le campáne,	to ring the bells.
seppellire,	to bury.
sotterráre,	to enter.
cantáre,	to sing.
inginocchiársi,	to kneel.
rizzársi, alzársi,	to rise.

Per le azióni di movimento.	*For the actions of motion.*
Andáre,	to go.
stáre, dimoráre,	to stand, to dwell.
venire,	to come.
tornáre,	to return.
fermársi,	to stop or stay.
cammináre,	to walk.
córrere,	to run.
seguitáre,	to follow.
fuggire,	to fly.
scappáre,	to escape.
partire,	to depart.
andár' innánzi, avanzáre,	to advance.
andár in diétro, rinculáre,	to stand back.
allontanársi,	to be distant.
avvicinársi, appressársi, accostársi,	to come near.

voltáre,

Digitized by Google

voltáre,	to turn.
cuscáre, cadére,	to fall down.
sdrucciolâre,	to slide.
fársi mále, ferirsi,	to hurt one's self. / to wound one's self.
giúngere, arrivâre, or *giúgnere,*	to arrive.
incontráre, andár' all' incóntro,	to go to meet.
entráre,	to come in.
uscíre,	to go out.
salíre, montáre,	to go up.
scéndere,	to go down.
trattenérsi, star' a báda,	to stand idle.
sedére,	to sit down.
spasseggiáre,	to walk.
andár' a spásso, andár a camminâre, a spassegiáre,	to go a walking.
affrettársi,	to make haste.

Azióni manuáli.	*Manual actions.*
Lavoráre,	to work.
toccáre,	to touch.
maneggiáre,	to handle.
legáre,	to tie or bind.
sciórre, slegáre, sciógliere,	to untie.
attaccáre,	to tie.
staccáre,	to untie.
allentáre,	to let loose.
levâre, togliere, tórre,	to take away.
prigliáre, prêndere,	to take.
rubáre,	to steal away.
raccógliere,	to gather again.
stracciáre, strappâre,	to tear.
presentáre, donáre,	to present.
ricévere,	to receive.
stringere, strignere,	to squeeze or crowd.
tenére, ferráre,	to hold.
rómpere, spezzáre,	to break.
nascóndere,	to hide.

scoprire,

Digitized by Google

coprire,	to cover.
scoprire, manifestáre,	to discover.
sporcáre, insuciáre.	to dirty.
nettáre, pulire, forbire,	to cleanse.
stroffináre, stroppiciáre,	to rub.
testáre,	to feel.
additáre, mostrár' a dito,	to point with one's finger.
pizzicáre,	to pinch.
solleticáre,	to tickle.
graffignáre, & sgraffiáre	to scratch.

Azióni di memória e d'imaginazióne.	*Actions of the memory and imagination.*
Ricordársi,	to remember.
dimenticáre,	to forget.
pensáre,	to think.
crédere,	to believe.
dubitáre,	to doubt.
sospettáre,	to suspect.
osserváre,	to observe.
avvertire,	to take care.
conóscere,	to know.
figurársi, imaginársi,	to imagine.
brámare, desideráre,	to wish.
speráre,	to hope.
temére,	to fear.
assicuráre,	to assure.
giudicáre,	to adjudge.
conchiúdere,	to conclude.
risólvere,	to resolve.
fingere,	to feign.
intestársi,	to be conceited of.
ostinársi,	to be obstinate.
adirársi, andár' in cóllera,	to fly into a passion.
pacificársi,	to be appeased.
ingannársi,	to mistake.
perdere la tramontána, imbroglársi,	to embroil one's self.
avér per cérto,	to be certain of.

avér

Digitized by Google

avér sù la púnta délle dita,	to have it at one's finger's end.
ésser gelóso,	to be jealous.

Per le árti ed i mestiéri.	*For arts and trades.*
Dipíngere,	To paint or draw.
intagliáre, scolpíre,	to engrave.
disegnáre, fár' un diségno,	to design.
abbozzáre,	to draw a sketch.
ricamáre,	to embroider.
smaltáre,	to enamel.
indoráre,	to gild.
inargentáre,	to gild over with silver.
incessáre,	to enlay.
stampáre,	to print.
legar' un líbro,	to bind a book.
lavoráre,	to labour.

Per l'esército.	*For the army.*
Far soldáti,	to raise soldiers.
toccáre, báttere 'l tambúro,	to beat the drum.
sonáre la trombétta,	to sound the trumpet.
marciáre,	to march.
accampáre,	to encamp.
alloggiáre,	to lodge.
montár' a cavállo,	to get on horseback.
smontáre,	to alight.
far giornáta,	to give battle.
riportáre, la vittória,	to gain the victory.
scompigliáre, disordináre,	to put in disorder.
sbaragliáre, sconfiggere,	to rout.
svaligiáre,	to rob.
saccheggiáre,	to sack.
dáre 'l guásto,	to plunder.
circonvalláre, stríngere,	to block up.
assediáre,	to besiege.
dar' un assálto,	to storm.
prénder d' assálto,	to take by storm.
far volár la mína,	to spring a mine.

sparáre,

Digitized by Google

sparáre,	to fire.
capitoláre,	to capitulate.
réndersi a pátti,	to surrender on terms.
cacciár man alla spáda,	to clap one's hand on one's sword.
ammazzáre, uccídere,	to kill.
dar quartiére,	to give quarter.
ferire,	to wound.
aprire la trinciéra,	to open the trenches.
sonár la raccólta,	to sound a retreat.
incalzáre 'l nemico,	to pursue the enemy.

FAMILIAR DIALOGUES.

DIALOCHI FAMIGLIARI.

DIALOGUE I.

GOOD morrow, sir.
Good night, sir.
How do you do, sir?
Well; not very well; so, so.
Very well to serve you.
At your service.
I am obliged to you.
I thank you.
How does your brother do?
He is well.
He will be glad to see you.
I shall have no time to see him to day.
Be pleased to sit down.
Give a chair to the gentleman.
There's no occasion.

DIALOGO I.

BUON dì a vosignoría.
Buónaséra a vossignoría.
Cóme stá V. S.?
Béne; non tróppo bène; cosi, cosi.
Benissimo per servírla.
Al súo servízio.
Són' obbligáto a V. S.
Ringrázio V. S.
Cóme stà súo fratéllo?
Stá béne.
Avrà gústo di vedérla.
Non avrò témpo di vedérlo óggi.
V. S. séda.
Dáte úna sédia al signóre.
Non è necessário.

I must

Digitized by Google

I must go to pay a visit in the neighbourhood.
You are in haste.
I will be back presently.
Farewel, sir.
I am glad to see you in good health.
I kiss your hand.
I am your servant.
Your most humble servant.
Your servant.
Your most humble servant.

Bisógna che váda a far' úna vísita qui vicíno.
E mólto affrettáta V. S.
Tornerò adésso adésso.
Addío, signóre.
Ho gran gústo di vedérla in buóna salúte.
Bácio le máni a V. S.
Sóno sérvo súo.
Umilíssimo sérvo súo.
Sérva súa.
Umilíssima sérva sua.

DIALOGUE II.

To make a visit in the morning.

WHERE is your master.
Is he asleep still?
No, sir, he is awake.
Is he up?
No, sir, he is a-bed.
What a shame 'tis to be a-bed at this time of day!
I went to bed so late last night, I could not rise early this morning.
What did you after supper?
We danc'd, we sung, we laugh'd, we play'd.
At what game?
We play'd at picquet with the knight.
What did the rest do?
They play'd at chess.
How griev'd am I, I did not know it.
Who won? who lost?

DIALOGO II.

Per far' una vísita la mattína.

Ov'è'l túo padróne? pronounce *Ovel.*
Dórme ancóra.
Signór, nò, è svegliáto.
E' leváto?
Signór, nò, sta ancor' al létto.
Che vergógna di star' al letto, a quést óra!
Andái jéri al letto, tánto tardi, che non ho potúto levármi a buón' óra.
Che si f'ece qui dópo céna?
Si ballò, si cantò, si ríse, si giuocó.
A che giuóco.
Giuocámmo a picchétto col signór cavaliére.
Che fécero gli áltri.
Giuocárono a scácchi.
Quánto mi dispiáce non avérlo sapúto.
Chi ha vínto? Che ha perdúto?

I won

I won ten pistoles.	*Ho guadagnáto diéci dóppie.*
Till what hour did you play?	*Fin a che óra giuocáste?*
Till two in the morning.	*Fín álle dúe dópo mézza nótte.*
At what o'clock did you go to bed?	*A che óra siéte andáto al létto?*
At three, half an hour after three.	*Alle tre, allé tre e mézza.*
I don't wonder at your rising so late.	*Non mi maravíglio che vi leviáte così tardi.*
What's o'clock?	*Che órè?*
What do you think it is?	*Che óra credéte che sia?*
Scarce eight, I believe, yet.	*Crédo che non siáno ancor le ótto.*
How! eight! It has struck ten!	*Cóme le ótto! sóno sonáte le diéci!*
Then I must rise with all speed.	*Bisógna adúnque che mi lévi quánto príma.*

DIALOGUE III.

DIALOGO III.

To dress one's self.	Per vestírsi.
WHO is there?	*CHI è là?*
What will you please to have, sir?	*Che commánda, V. S.*
Be quick, make a fire, dress me.	*Sù, sù, présto, fáte fuóco, vestítemi.*
There is a fire, sir.	*Cè' fuóco, signóre.*
Give me my shirt.	*Dátemi la mia camíscia.*
Here 'tis, sir.	*Eccola, signóre.*
'Tis not warm, 'tis quite cold.	*Non è cálda, é ancóra frédda.*
If you please, sir, I'll warm it.	*Se V. S. bráma, la scalderò.*
No, no; bring me my silk stockings.	*Nò, nò, pórtátemi le mie calzétte di séta.*
They are torn.	*Sóno rótte.*
Stitch them a little, mend them.	*Dáteci un púnto, o fátele aconciáre.*

I have

Digitized by Google

I have given them to the stocking-mender.	*Le ho dáte élla conciacalzétte.*
You have done right—Where are my slippers?	*Avéte fátto bénc. Ove sóno le mie pianélle?*
Where is my night-gown?	*Ov' è la mia zimárra?*
Comb my head.	*Pettinátemi.*
Take another comb.	*Pigliáte un' áltro péttine.*
Give me my handkerchief.	*Dátemi 'l mío fazzolétto.*
There's a clean one, sir.	*Eccone un pulito, signóre.*
Give me that which is in my pocket.	*Dátemi quel ch' è nélla mia saccóccia.*
I gave it to the washer-woman, it was foul.	*L' ho dato álla lavandára, éra spórco.*
Has she brought my linen?	*Ha portáto élla i miéi pannilini?*
Yes, sir, there wants nothing.	*Signór sì, non ci mánca niénte.*
What cloaths will you wear to-day?	*Che vestíto metterà oggi V. S.?*
Those I wore yesterday.	*Quel ch' avévo jéri.*
The taylor will bring your cloth suit presently.	*Il sartóre déve portár présto quel di pánno.*
Somebody knocks, see who 'tis.	*Si picchia, vedéte chi è.*
Who is it?	*Chi è?*
'Tis the taylor.	*E'l sartore.*
Let him come in.	*Fátelo entráre.*

DIALOGUE IV.

DIALOGO IV.

The gentleman and the taylor.	Il gentiluómo ed il sartóre.
Do you bring my suit of cloaths?	*Portáte voi il mío vestíto?*
Yes, sir; here 'tis.	*Sì signór, eccolo quì.*
You make me wait a great while.	*Mi fáte aspettár mólto.*
I could not come sooner.	*Non ho potúto venir più présto*
It was not finished.	*Non éra finito.*
The lining was not sewed.	*La fódera non éra cucita.*
Will you be pleased to try the close coat on?	*Vuóle V. S. prováre 'il giustacóre.*

Digitized by Google

Let's see whether it be well made.	*Vediámo s' é ben fátto.*
I believe it will please you.	*Crédo che V. S. ne sarà conténta.*
It seems to me to be very long.	*Mi páre mólto lúngo.*
They wear them long now.	*Si pórtano lúnghi adésso.*
Button me.	*Abbottonátemi.*
It is too close.	*Mi stringe tróppo.*
To fit properly it ought to be close.	*Per ésser ben fátto' bisógna che sia giústo.*
Are not the sleeves too wide.	*Le mániche non sono élle tróppo lárghe?*
No, sir, they fit very well.	*Signór nò, stánno benissimo.*
This suit becomes you mighty well.	*Quest' ábito le stà benissimo.*
'Tis too short, too long, too big, too little.	*E tróppo córto, tróppo lúngo, tróppo lárgo, troppo strétto.*
Pardon me, sir, it fits very well.	*V. S. mi perdóni, stà béne.*
How do you like my trimming?	*Che dite del mio forniménto?*
'Tis very fine and rich.	*E bellissimo, e ricchissimo.*
What did these ribbons cost a yard?	*Quésti nástri quánto costano il bráccio?*
I paid a crown.	*Li ho pagáto uno scúdo.*
That's not too much, 'tis cheap.	*Non è tróppo, è buón mercáto.*
Where is the rest of my cloth?	*Ov' è 'l résto del mio pánno?*
There is not a bit left.	*Non v'è niénte affátto d'avánzo.*
Have you made your bill?	*Avéte fátto 'l vóstro cónto?*
No, sir, I had not time.	*Signor, nò, non ho avúto 'l témpo.*
Bring it to-morrow, I will pay you.	*Portátelo dománi, vi pagherò.*

DIA-

Digitized by Google

DIALOGUE V.

To go to breakfast.

BRING us something for breakfast.
Yes, sir, there are sausages and petty-pattees.
Do you chuse the gammon of bacon?
Yes, bring it, we will cut a slice of it.
Lay a napkin on the table.

Give us plates, knives, and forks.
Rinse the glasses.
Give the gentleman a chair.
Sit down, sir; sit by the fire.

I am not cold, I am very well here.
Let us see whether the wine be good.
Give me that bottle, and glass.
Taste that wine, pray.

How do you like it? what say you to it?
It is not bad, it is very good.
Here are the sausages, take away this plate.
Eat some sausages.
I have eat some, they are very good.
Give me some drink.
Your health, sir.
Sir, I thank you.

DIALOGO V.

Per far colazióne.

Portáteci quálche cósa da far colazióne.
Signór, sì; ecco salsiccie, e pasticciétti.
Vuól V. S. ch'io pórt'il presciútto.
Sì, portátelo; ne taglierémo úna fetta.
Mettéte úna salviétta sópra la távola.

Dáteci tóndi, coltélli, e forchétte.
Sciacquáte i bicchiéri.
Dáte úna sédia al signóre.
V. S. séda, si métta vicino al fuóco.

Non ho fréddo, sóno benissimo quì.
Vediámo se'l vino è buóno.

Dátemi quélla bottiglia, ed un bicchiére.
Di grázia, V. S. assúgi quésto vino.

Che gliene páre? che ne dice?
Non è cattivo, è squisitíssimo.

Ecco le salsiccie, leváte quésto piátto.
V. S. mángi délle salsiccie.
Ne ho mangiáto, sóno buonissime.
Dátemi da bére.
Alla sanità, di V. S.
Ringrázio V. S.

Digitized by Google

Give the gentleman some drink.	*Dáte da bére al signóre.*
I drank but just now.	*Ho bevúto adésso.*
The petty-pattees were very good.	*I pasticciétti érano buónissimi.*
They were baked a little too much.	*Erano un tantino tróppo cótti.*
You do not eat.	*V. S. non mángia.*
I have eat so much I shall not be able to eat my dinner.	*Ho mangiáto tánto, che non potrò pranzáre.*
You only jest, you have eat nothing at all.	*V. S. si búrla, non ha mangiáto niénte.*
I have eat very heartily both of the pudding, and ham.	*Ho mangiáto benissimo dél sanguináccio, e del presciútto.*

DIALOGUE VI.

To speak Italian.

HOW goes on your Italian?	*COME và l' Italiáno?*
Are you much improved in it now?	*Ha, V. S. fátto mólto profítto?*
Not much; I know nothing almost.	*Non tróppo, non sò quási niénte.*
It is said, however, you speak it very well.	*Se dice però che V. S. párla benissimo.*
Would to God it were true.	*Volésse Dio che fósse véro!*
Those that say so are much mistaken.	*Quéi che lo dicono s'ingánnano mólto.*
I assure you I was told so.	*L'assicúro che m' è stato détto.*
I can say a few words which I have learnt by heart.	*Pósso dir' alcúne paróle che so a ménte*
And so much as is necessary to begin to speak.	*E quánto básta per cominciár a parláre.*
The beginning is not all, you must make an end.	*Non è il tútto il principiáre, bisógna finíre.*

DIALOGO VI.

Per parlar' Italiáno.

Be

Digitized by Google

Be always speaking, whether well or ill.	*Parli V. S. sémpre, o béne o mále.*
I am afraid of committing blunders.	*Témo di far' errori*
Never fear; the Italian language is not hard.	*V. S. non téma, la lingua Italiána non è difficile.*
I know it; and that it has abundance of graces.	*Lo so, e so ch'ha mólte leggiadrie.*
It is true; and especially from a lady's mouth.	*E véro, e particolarménte nélla bócca délle dónne.*
How happy should I be, if I were master of it.	*O me félice se la sappéssi!*
Application is the only way of learning it,	*Bisógna studiáre per imparárla.*
How long have you been learning?	*Quánto témpo è che V. S. impára?*
Scarce a month yet.	*Non è ancor' un mése.*
What is your master's name?	*Cóme si chiáma 'l suo maéstro?*
His name is Veneroni.	*Si chiáma 'l signór Veneróni.*
I have known him a great while.	*E un pézzo che lo conósco.*
He has taught several friends of mine.	*Ha insegnáto a mólti amici miéi.*
Does not he tell you that you must constantly talk Italian?	*Non dice égli a V. S. che bisógna sémpre parlár' Italiáno?*
Yes, he often tells me so.	*Signór sì, melo dice spésso.*
Why do you not talk then?	*Perchè dúnque non párla?*
Who will you have me talk with?	*Con chi vuól V. S. ch'io párli?*
With those that shall talk to you.	*Con quéi che le parleránno.*
I would fain talk, but dare not.	*Vorréi parláre, ma non ardísco.*
You must not be afraid, you must be bold.	*Non bisógna temére, bisógna ésser' ardito.*

Digitized by Google

DIALOGUE VII.

Of the weather.

WHAT sort of weather is it?	*CHE témpo fá?*
It is fine weather.	*Fà bel témpo.*
It is bad weather.	*Fà cattivo témpo.*
Is it cold? is it hot?	*Fà fréddo? fà cáldo?*
Is it not cold? it is not hot.	*Non fà fréddo; non fà cáldo.*
Does it rain? does it not rain?	*Pióve? non pióve?*
I do not believe it.	*Non lo crédo.*
The wind is changed.	*Il vénto è cambiáto.*
We shall have rain.	*Avrémo délla pióggia.*
It will not rain to-day.	*Non pioverà oggi.*
It rains, it pours.	*Pióve, dilúvia.*
It snows.	*Névica.*
It thunders.	*Tuóna.*
It hails.	*Grándina.*
It lightens.	*Lampéggia.*
It is very hot.	*Fà mólto cáldo.*
Did it freeze last night?	*Ha geláto sta nótte?*
No, sir, but it freezes now.	*Signór nò, ma géla adésso.*
It appears to me to be a great fog.	*Mi par che fa una gran nébbia.*
You are not mistaken, it is true.	*V. S. Non s'ingánna, è véro.*
You have caught a violent cold.	*V..S. è mólto raffreddáta.*
I have had it this fortnight.	*Sóno quindici giórni che sóno raffreddáto.*
'Tis the fruit of the season.	*Sóno frútti della stagióne.*
What's o'clock?	*Che óra è?*
'Tis early, 'tis not late.	*E di buón'óra, non è tárdi.*
Is it breakfast-time?	*E témpo di far colazióne?*
'Twill be dinner-time immediately.	*Sará présto témpo di desináre.*
What shall we do after dinner?	*Che farémo dópo pránzo?*

We'll

Digitized by Google

We'll take a walk. *Andrémo a spásso.*
Let's take a turn now. *Andiámo a fur'un giro adésso.*
We must not go abroad this weather. *Non bisógna uscír per quésto témpo.*

DIALOGUE VIII.

Of the charms of a young lady.

THERE's a beautiful young lady. *E'cco úna bélla signóra.*
She is finely shaped. *E ben fátta.*
She is charming, she is pretty. *E vezzósa, è leggiádra.*
Do you know her? *La conoscéte?*
I don't know her. *Non la conósco.*
She has fine eyes. *Ha bégli ócchi.*
I never saw a better shape. *Non ho mái visto úna píù bélla statúra.*
She has an easy carriage. *E disinvólta.*
She has a noble mien. *Ha un aspétto nóbile.*
The shape of her face is well proportioned. *Il contérno del súo viso è ben fátto.*
Her cheeks are plump and delicate. *Le súe guáncie sono pienótte e delicáte.*
Her mouth is little, and red. *La súa bócca è picciola, e vermíglia.*
Her nose well made. *Il náso ben fátto.*
Have you taken notice of her complexion? *Avéte osserváto la sua carnaggióne.*
It is the finest in the world. *E'l più bel colóre del móndo.*
A complexion fair, and lively. *Una carnaggióne biáncha, e viváce.*
What white hands she has! *O che bélle máni ha!*
The vermilion of her cheeks shames the lilies and the roses. *Il vermíglio del súo viso fa senza dúbbio tórto ai gígli, ed álle róse.*
She has teeth as white as snow. *Ha i dénti biánchi cóme la néve.*
It may be said that she's a fair beauty. *Si può dire ch'élla è úna bélla biónda.*

DIALOGO VIII.

Délle bellézze d'úna zittélla.

Digitized by Google

She's the finest brown woman one can see.	*E la più bella brúna che si pósza vedére.*
She has a noble gait.	*Cammina con bel gárbo.*
She has a sprightly countenance.	*Ha úna fisonomía spiritóso.*
She has exquisite features.	*Ha fattézze vághe.*
She's mightily cry'd up for her beauty.	*E mólto commendáta per la súa bellézza.*
I think she has a great deal of wit.	*Crédo ch'ábbia mólto spírito.*
Beauty may be seen, but not wit.	*Ben si può vedére la bellézza, ma lo spírito nò.*
They say her wit is equal to her beauty.	*Si dice che sia adequáto lo spírito álle sue bellézze.*
Then she is an epitome of all perfections.	*E adúnque un compéndio di tútte le perfezióni.*

DIALOGUE IX.

To enquire after news.

DIALOGO IX.

Per domandár quel che si díce di nuóvo.

WHAT news is stirring?	*CHE si dice di nuóvo?*
Do you know any?	*Sapéte niénte di nuóvo?*
I have heard none.	*Non ho intéso niénte.*
What is the talk of the town?	*Di che si párla?*
There's no talk of any thing.	*Non si párla di niénte.*
Have you heard no talk of war?	*Avéte sentito dire ch'avrémo la guérra?*
I heard nothing of it.	*Non ne ho intéso parláre.*
There's a talk however of a siege.	*Si párla però d' un assédio.*
It was reported so, but it is not true.	*Si dicéva, ma non è véro.*
On the contrary there's a talk of peace.	*Al contrário, si párla di páce.*
Do you think we shall have peace?	*Credéte ch'avrémo la páce?*
I believe so.	*Crédo di sì.*
What say they at court?	*Che si dice in córte?*

Digitized by Google

They talk of a voyage.
Si párla d'un viággio.

When do they think the king will set out?
Quándo si créde che partirá 'l rè?

'Tis not known. They do not say when.
Non si sa. Non si dice.

Where do they say he'll go?
Dóve si dice eh' andrá?

Some say into Flanders, others into Germany.
Chi dice in Fiándra, chi in Germánia.

And what says the Gazette?
E la Gazzétta che dice?

I have not read it.
Non l'ho létta.

Is it true what is reported of Mr. ——?
Sarébbe véro quel che si dice del Sig.——?

What of him?
Che sene dice?

They say he's mortally wounded.
Si dice che sia ferito a mórte.

I should be sorry for that; he's an honest man.
Mi dispiacerébbe, perch' è un galantuómo.

Who wounded him?
Chi l'ha ferito?

Two rogues who set upon him.
Duoi farfánti che l' hánno assalito.

Is it known why?
Si sá 'l perchè?

The report is, that he gave one of them a box on the ear.
Corre vóce che sia per avér dáto uno schiáffo ad úno di lóro.

I don't believe it. Nor I neither.
Non lo crédo. Nè men'io.

However, we shall soon know the truth.
Comúnque si sia, si saprá présto.

DIALOGUE X.

To enquire after one.

DIALOGO X.

Per domandáre d'úno.

WHO is that gentleman that spoke to you a little while ago?
CHI è quel gentiluómo che vi parláva póco fá?

He is a German.
E un Tedésco.

I took him for an Englishman.
Lo credévo Inglése.

He came from Saxony.
E dálla párte di Sassónia.

Digitized by Google

He speaks French very well.	*Párla benissimo Francése.*
He speaks French like the Frenchmen themselves.	*Párla Francése quánto i Francési medésimi.*
The Spaniards take him for a Spaniard, the English for an Englishman.	*Gli Spagnuóli lo stimano Spagnuólo, e gl' Inglési, Inglése.*
It is difficult to be conversant in so many different languages.	*E' pur difficile d'ésser prático in tánte lingue cosi differénti.*
He has been a long time in those countries.	*E' státo un pézzo in quéi paési.*
Have you known him for any time?	*E' un pézzo che lo conoscéte?*
About two years.	*Sóno dúe anni incirca.*
He has a noble air, he has a good mien.	*Ha buón' ária, ha buóna ciéra.*
He is a genteel person.	*E' di bélla presénza.*
He is neither too tall, nor too little.	*Non è nè tróppo gránde, nè tróppo piccolo.*
He is handsome, he is well shaped.	*E' ben fátto, e la súa statúra è disinvólta.*
He plays upon the lute, the guitar, and several other instruments.	*Suóna 'l liúto, la chitárra, e mólti áltri stromenti.*
I should be very glad to know him.	*Avréi a cáro di conóscérlo.*
I will bring you acquainted with him.	*Vene procurerò la conoscénza.*
Where does he live?	*Ove sta di cása?*
He lives just by.	*Stá quì vicino.*
When will you have us go and wait on him?	*Quándo voléte ch' andiámo a riverírlo?*
Whenever you please, for he is my intimate friend.	*Quándo vi piacerà, perch' è amico mio intrínseco.*
It shall be when you have leisure.	*Sarà quándo avréte témpo.*
We'll go to-morrow morning.	*V' andrémo domattína.*
I shall be obliged to you.	*Vi resterò obligáto.*

DIA-

Digitized by Google

DIALOGUE XI.

To write.

GIVE me a sheet of paper, a pen, and a little ink.

Step into my closet, you'll find on the table whatever you want.

There are no pens.

There are a great many in the standish.

They are good for nothing.

There are some others.

They are not made.

Where is your penknife?

Can you make pens?

I make them my own way.

This is not bad.

While I finish this letter, do me the favour to make a pacquet of the rest.

What seal will you have me put to it?

Seal it with my cypher or coat of arms.

What wax shall I put to it?

Put either red or black, no matter which.

Have you put the date?

I believe I have, but I have not signed it.

What day of the month is this?

The eighth, the tenth, fifteenth, twentieth.

DIALOGO XI.

Per scrívere.

Dátemi un fóglio di cárta, una pénna & un póco d' inchióstro.

Entráte nel mío cabinétto, troverête sopra la távola quánto vi sára di bisógno.

Non vi sóno pénne.

E'ccone mólte nel calamájo.

Non vágliono niénte.

E'ccone áltre.

Non sóno temperáte.

Ov' e'l vóstro temperino?

Sapéte temperár le péme?

Le témpero a módo mío.

Quésta qui non è cattiva.

Méntre finisco quésta léttera, favoritemi di far' un piégo di quélle áltre.

Che sigillo volête che ci métta?

Sigillátele cólla mia zífera ovéro cólle mie ármi.

Che céra ci metterò?

Mettétene délla rósa, o délla néra, non impórta.

Avéte mésso la dáta?

Crédo di sì, ma non ho sottoscritto.

Ai quánto siámo del mése?

Siámo oggi agli ótto, ai diéci, ai quindici, ai vénti.

Digitized by Google

Put the direction.
Where is the powder?
You never have either powder or sand.
There's some in the sand-box.
There's your servant; will you let him carry the letters to the post-house.
Carry my letters to the post-office, and don't forget to pay postage.
I have no money.
Hold your hand, there's a pistole.
Go quickly, and return as soon as possible.

Mettéteci 'l soprascritto.
Ov' è la pólvere?
Non avéte mái nè pólvere, nè aréna.
Ven' è nel polverino.
E'cco'l vóstro sérvo; voléte che pórti le léttere alla pósta?
Portáte le mie léttere alla pósta, & non vi dimenticáte di pagáre 'l pórto.
Nón ho quattrini, signóre, non ho danári.
Pigliáte, ecco úna dóppia.
Andáte présto, e tornáte quánto prima.

DIALOGUE XII.

To buy.

WHAT do you want, sir?
What would you please to have?
I want a good fine cloth to make me a suit of clothes.
Be pleased to walk in, sir, you'll see the finest in London.
Shew me the best you have.
There's a very fine one, and what's worn at present.
'Tis a good cloth, but I don't like the colour.
There's another lighter piece.
I like that colour well, but

DIALOGO XII.

Per compráre.

CHE bráma V. S. che cérca?
Vorréi un pánno béllo e buóno da far' un vestito.
V. S. éntri, vedrà quì i più bélli pánni di Lóndra.
Mostrátemi 'l migliór ch' abbiáte.
E'ccone unbellissimo, e cóme si pórta adésso.
E buóno, ma 'l cólor non me piáce.
E'ccone 'un áltra pézza più chiára.
Il colór mi piáce, ma 'l pán-
the

Digitized by Google

the cloth is not strong, 'tis too thin.
no non é forte abbastánza, è tróppo sotíle.

Look upon this piece, here, sir, you'll not find the like any where else.
Véda V. S. quésta pézza, non ne troverà cosi bélla altróve.

What do you ask for it an ell?
Quánto lo vendéte il bráccio?

Without exacting, 'tis worth twenty livres.
Sénza dire a V. S. un sóldo di tróppo, élla vále venti fránchi.

Sir, I am not us'd to stand haggling; pray tell me your lowest price.
Signóre, io non sóno avvézzo a prezzoláre, dítemi di grazia l'último prézzo.

I have told you, sir, tis worth that.
L'ho detto a V. S. tánto vále.

'Tis too dear, I'll give you six crowns.
E tróppo cáro, vene daró sei scúdi.

I can't bate a farthing.
Non v'è un sóldo da leváre.

You shall not have what you ask.
Non avréte quel ch' avéte domandáto.

You ask'd me the lowest price, and I have told you.
V. S. m'ha domandáto l'último prézzo, gliel' ho détto.

Come, come, cut off two ells of it.
Via, via, tagliátene dúe bráccia.

I protest, on the word of an honest man I don't get a crown by you.
Le giúro da galantuómo che non guadágno úno scúdo con léi.

There's four pistoles, give me the change.
E'cco quátro dóppie, dátemi 'l résto.

Be pleas'd, sir, to let me have another, this is too light, it wants weight.
Di grázia V. S. mi dia un' áltra dóppia, quésta è leggiéra, non è di péso.

Here's another.
E'ccone un' áltra.

Farewel, sir, your servant.
Addío, signóre, sóno servitór di V. S.

DIA-

Digitized by Google

DIALOGUE XIII.

To play.

LET us play a game at picquet.
What will you play for?
Let us play for half-a-crown to pass away the time.
Give us cards.
Let us see who shall deal.

You are to deal; I am to deal.

Shuffle the cards, all the court cards are together.
They are shuffled enough.
Cut, sir.
Have you all your cards?
I believe I have.
How many do you take?
I take all. I leave one.

I have a bad game.
Deal again.
Not this time.
Have you laid out?
No, sir, my game puzzles me.
You must have good cards, for I have nothing.
Tell your point.
Fifty, sixty.
It is not good; it is good.
A quint major, a quint to a king, a small quint, fourteen by queens, a tierce to a knave.
I have as much.
Fourteen by kings, three aces, three queens.

DIALOGO XIII.

Per giuocáre.

Giuochiámo úna partita a picchétto.
Quánto voléte giuocáre?
Giuochiámo tránta sóldi per passatémpo.
Dáteci carte.
Vediámo a chi toccherà a fáre.

Tócca a vói, tócca a me.

Mescoláte le cárte, túlte le figure sóno insiéme.
Sóno mescoláte abbastánza.
Alzáte, signóre.
Avéte le vóstre cárte?
Crédo di sì.
Quánte ne pigliáte?
Piglio tutto, or *le piglio túlte.*
Ne láscio úna.

Ho un cattivo giuóco.
A mónte.
Signór nò, per quésta vólta.
Avéte scartáto?
Signór nò, il mio giuóco m'imbarrázza.
Dovéte avér bel giuóco, poichè non ho niénte.
Contáte 'l vóstro púnto.
Cinquánta, sessánta.
Non válc; e buóno.
Quinta maggióre, quinta al rè, quinta bássa, quárta álla dáma, térza al fánte.

Ne ho altrettánto.
Quattórdici di rè, tre ássi, tre dáme.

Play.

Digitized by Google

Play.	*Giuocáte.*
Hearts, spades, clubs, diamonds.	*Cuóri, picche, fióri, quádri.*
The ace, the king, the queen, the knave, the ten, the nine, the eight, the seven.	*L'âsso, il rè, la dáma, il fánte, li diéci, il nóve, l'ótto, il sétte.*
I have lost, you made a peek a re-peek.	*Ho pérso, avétte fátto un pico, repico.*
You have won.	*Avéte guadagnáto.*
You owe me half-a crown.	*Mi dovéte trénta sóldi.*
You owed it me, pardon me.	*Scusátemi, meli doveváte.*
We are quits, or even then.	*Siámo páce,* or *pári.*

DIALOGUE XIV.

For a journey.

How many leagues is it from this place to N?	*Quánte léghe sóno da quà a N?*
It is eight leagues.	*Ci sóno ótto léghe.*
We shall not be able to get thither to-day, it is too late.	*Non vi potrémo arrivár' oggì, è tróppo tárdi.*
It is not more than twelve o'clock, you have time enough yet.	*Non è più di mézzo dì, v'arriveréte ancór' a buón' óra.*
Is the road good?	*E bélla la stráda?*
So, so; there are woods and rivers to pass.	*Non tróppo, vi sóno bóschi, e fiúmi a passáre.*
Is there any danger upon that road?	*V'è perícolo per quélla stráda?*
There is no talk of it; it is a highway, where you meet people every moment.	*Non sene párla, è una stráda maéstra dóve si tróva génte ad ógni moménto.*
Do not they say there are robbers in the woods?	*Non si dìce che vi siáno ládri néi bóschi?*
There is nothing to be feared,	*Non v'è núlla da temére, nè*

DIALOGO XIV.

Per un viággio.

Digitized by Google

feared, either by day or night.	*di giórno, nè di nótte.*
Which way must one take?	*Che stráda bisógna pigliáre?*
When you come near the hill, you must take to the right hand.	*Quándo saréte vicini alla montágna, piglieréte a man dritta.*
Is it not necessary to ascend a hill then?	*Non bisognerà dúnque salir la montágna.*
No, sir, there is no other hill but a little declivity in the wood.	*Signór nò, non v'è ch'' un picciol cólle nel bósco.*
Is the way difficult through the wood?	*E' difficile la stráda nel bósco?*
You cannot lose your way.	*Non potéte smarrirla.*
As soon as you are out of the wood remember to keep to the left hand.	*Quándo saréte fuór del bósco, ricordátevi di pigliár' a man mánca.*
I thank you, sir, and am much obliged to you.	*Vi ringrázio, signóre, e vi résto mólto obligáto.*
Come, come, gentlemen, let us take horse.	*Via, via, signóri, montiámo a cavállo.*
Where's the marquis?	*Ov' è'l signór marchése?*
He's gone before.	*E' andáto innánzi.*
He will wait for you just out of town.	*V' aspetterà fuóri délla città.*
What do we stay for now? come, come, let's begone, let's have done.	*Ch' aspettiámo? partiámo, andiámo, via, via, finiámola.*
Farewell, gentlemen, farewell.	*Addio, signóri, addio.*
I wish you a good journey.	*V' augúro un félice viággio.*

DIALOGUE XV.

DIALOGO XV.

For supper and lodging.	Délla céna e dell' alloggiaménto.
So; we are arrived at the inn.	*E'Ccoci, giúnti all' ostéria.*
Let us alight, gentlemen.	*Smontiámo, signóri.*
Take these gentlemen's	*Pigliáte i caválli di quésti* horses,

Digitized by Google

horses, and take care of them.
signóri, ed abbidíme cúra.

Now let's see what you will give us for supper.
Or sù vedíamo che ci daréte da cenáre.

A capon, a half dozen of pigeons, a sallad, six quails, and a dozen of larks.
Un cappóne, una mézza dozzína di piccioni, un' insaláta, sei quáglie, ed úna dozzína di lódole.

Will you have nothing else?
Non vógliono áltro le signórie lóro?

That's enough, give us some good wine and some desert.
Quésto básta, dáteci del buón vino, e délle frútta.

Let me alone, I'll please you I warrant ye.
Láscino far' a me, sarémo' conténti.

Light the gentlemen.
Fáte lúme a quésti signóri.

Let's have our supper as soon as possible.
Fáteci cénar quánto prima.

Before you have pulled your boots off, supper shall be upon the table.
Prima che si siano cavàti gli stivàli, la céna sarà in órdine.

Let our portmanteaus and pistols be carried up stairs.
Che si pórtino lassù le nóstre valígie, e le nóstre pistóle.

Pull off my boots, and then you shall go and see whether they have given the horses any hay.
Cavátemi gli stivàli, ed andréte dópo a védere se avránno dáto del fiéno ai cavalli.

You shall conduct them to the river, and take care they give them some oats.
Li condurréte al fiúme, ed avréte cúra che sia loro dáta la biáda.

I'll take care of every thing, don't trouble yourself.
Avrò cúra del tútto, V. S. non si pigli fastídio.

Gentlemen, supper is ready; it is upon the table.
Signóri, la céna è in órdine, è portáta in távola.

We'll come presently.
Adésso, adésso, cen' andiámo.

Let us go to supper, gentlemen,
Andiámo a cenár, signóri;

Digitized by Google

tlemen, that we may go to bed in good time.
necioché possiámo andár' al létto a buón' óra.

Give us water to wash our hands.
Dáteci l' ácqua álle mán.

Let's sit down, gentlemen, let's sit down at table.
Sediámo, signóri, entriámo a távola.

Give us some drink.
Dáteci da bére.

To your health, gentlemen.
Brindisi álle signorie lóro.

Is the wine good?
E' buóno 'l vino?

It is not bad.
Non è cattivo.

The capon is not done enough.
Il cappóne non è cótto abbastánza.

Give us some oranges, with a little pepper.
Dáteci merángoli con un póco de pépe.

Why don't you eat of these pigeons?
Pérche non mangiáte di quésti piccioncini?

I have ate one pigeon and three larks.
Ho mangiáto un piccióne, e tre lódole.

Go call for a chafing dish.
Andáte a domandár' úno scaldavivánde.

Tell the landlord we want to speak with him.
Dite all' óste che vénga a parlárci.

DIALOGUE XVI.

To reckon with the landlord.

A Good evening, gentlemen, are you satisfied with your supper?
BUóna séra, signóri, sónoconténte le signorie lóro della céna?

We are, but we must satisfy you too.
Siámo contenti, ma bisógna soddisfárvi.

What's the reckoning?
Quánto abbiámo spéso?

The reckoning is not great.
La spésa non è gránde.

See what you must have for us, our men, and our horses.
Vedéte quánto vi viéne, per noi, per i nóstri servitóri, e per i nóstri caválli.

Reckon yourselves, and you will

DIALOGO XVI.

Per contár coll' óste.

Digitized by Google

will find it comes to seven crowns.
vedránno che sóno séttе scúdi.

Methinks you ask too much.
Mi páre che domanddte troppo.

On the contrary, I am very reasonable.
Ánzi fò buonissimo mercáto.

How much do you make us pay for the wine?
Quánto ci fáte pagár per il vino?

Fifteen pence a bottle.
Quíndici sóldi la bottíglia.

Bring us another, and tomorrow morning we will pay you seven crowns, with breakfast included.
Portátene un álтro fiásco, e vi darémo domattína sétte scúdi facéndo però colazióne.

Methinks the gentleman is not well.
Páre che'l signór non stia béne.

I am very well, but weary and fatigued.
Stò béne, ma son' affatticáto e stánco.

You must take courage.
Bisógna fársi ánimo.

It would be better for me to be in bed than at table.
Cérto che saréi méglio in létto ch'a távola

Get your bed warmed, and go to bed.
Fáccia scaldáre 'l sío létto, e váda a dormíre.

Bid my man come and undress me.
Díte al mio sérvo che vénga a spogliármi.

He waits for you in your chamber.
L'aspétta nella di léi cámera.

Good night, gentlemen, I wish you merry.
Buóna nótte, signóri, stiano allegraménte.

Do you want any thing?
Avéte bisógno di qualche cosa?

Nothing at all but rest.
Di niénte affátto, che di riposáre.

Order them to give us clean sheets.
Dáte órdine che si diano lenzuóla biánche.

The sheets you shall have are whitened, and washed in lie.
Le lenzuóla ch'avránno sóno di bucáto.

Let us be called to-morrow very early.
Fáteci svegliáre dománi a buón' óra.

I will not fail. Farewel, gentlemen; good night.
Saránno serviti. Addío, signóri, buóna séra.

DIA-

Digitized by Google

DIALOGUE XVII.

To get on horseback.

THERE is a horse methinks looks very bad.
Give me another horse, I will not have that.
He cannot go.
He's broken winded; he's foundered.
Are you not ashamed to give me such a hack as this?
He has no shoes, he's prickt in his foot.
You must lead him to the smith's.
He goes lame, he's maimed, he's blind.
This saddle will gall me.
The stirrups are too long, too short.
Let them out then, shorten them.
The girths are rotten.
What a wretched bridle is here!
Give me my whip.
Tie on my portmanteau, my cloak.
Are my pistols loaded?
I forgot to buy powder and ball.

Let us put on, let us go faster.
I never saw a viler beast.

DIALOGO XVII.

Per montár a cavállo.

E'CCO un cavállo che mi páre cattivo.
Dátemi un' áltro cavallo, i non vóglio quésto.
Non può cammináre.
E' bólzo, è rappréso.
Non avéte vergógna di dármi una carógna di quélla sórte?
E' sferrato, è inchiodáto.
Bisógna condúrlo dal marescálco.
Zóppica, è stroppiáto è ciéco.
Quésta sélla mi farà mále.
Le stáffe sóno tróppo lúnghe, tróppo córte.
Allóngate le stáffe, tírate sú le stáffe.
Le cínghie sóno márcie.
Che cattiva briglia!
Dátemi la mia frústa.
Attacáte la valigia, il mio mantéllo.
Sóno caricáte le súe pistóle?
Mi sóno dimenticáto di comprár délla pólvere, e délle pálle.
Spromiámo, andiámo più présto.
Non ho mái visto úna più cattiva béstia.

He

Digitized by Google

He will neither go forward nor backward.	*Non vuól nè andar' innánzi, nè indiétro.*
Let go the bridle a little.	*Lasciátegli la briglia.*
Hold the reins shorter.	*Pigliáte le rédini più córte.*
Spur him stoutly, make him go.	*Spronáte cón vigóre, fatélo andár' innánzi.*
I have spurred him in vain.	*Pósso béne spronáre, non ne pósso venír' a cápo.*
Alight, I will make him go.	*Scendéte, chè lo farò ben' andáre.*
Take care he don't kick you.	*Avvertíte che non vi tiri un cálcio.*
He winches then, I find.	*Tira cálci adúnque per quel che védo.*
See if I have not tamed him.	*Vedéte se l'ho saputo domáre.*

DIALOGUE XVIII.

To visit a sick person.

HOW have you passed the night?	*COME avéte passáta la nótte?*
Very badly, I have not slept at all.	*Malaménte, non ho dormíto.*
I have had a fever all night.	*Ho avúto la fébbre tútta la nótte.*
I have pains all over my body.	*Sénto dolóri per tútta la víta.*
You must be let blood.	*Bisógna fárvi cavár sángue.*
I have been bled twice.	*M'è státo caváto sángue dúe vólte.*
Where does your apothecary live?	*Dóve stá di cása 'l vóstro speziále.*
Go bid the surgeon come and dress me.	*Andáte a dir' al cirúsico che vénga a medicármi.*
I cannot imagine why the doctor does not come.	*Non so perchè 'l médico non viéne.*
We do not know what health is, till we are ill.	*Non si sá cósa sia sanità, che quándo si sta mále.*

DIALOGO XVIII.

Per visitár' un' ammaláto.

You

Digitized by Google

You must have a good heart; it will be nothing.	*Bisógna fársi ánimo, non sará niénte.*
My wound pains me prodigiously.	*Sénto un gran dolóre nélla mía piága.*
Have you been purged?	*Siéte státo purgáto?*
How much physic have you taken?	*Quánte medicine avéte préso?*
I am tired of physic.	*Sóno faticáto di medicine.*
I am afraid of being light-headed.	*Témo di dar' in delírio.*
Drink some ptisan.	*Bevéte ácqua cótta.*
Take nothing but broth.	*Non pigliáte áltro che bródi.*
The doctor has ordered me some whey.	*Il médico m'ha ordináto 'l siéro.*
I am not able to stir myself.	*Non mi pósso muóvere.*
Give me a pillow.	*Dátemi un guanciále.*
Put my bolster right.	*Accommodáte 'l mio capezzále.*
Draw the curtains.	*Tiráte le cortíne.*
They want to bleed me in the foot.	*Mi si vuóle far cavár sángue dal piéde.*
Every thing I take seems bitter to me.	*Tútto ciò che prèndo mi par' amáro.*
How my mouth's out of taste!	*O quánto sóno svogliáto!*
It is a long sickness.	*Quésta è úna malattía lúnga.*
How tired I am of lying a-bed!	*Quánto mi rincrésce lo star' in létto!*
How happy are you in the enjoyment of health!	*Beáto vói che státe béne!*

DIALOGUE XIX.

A person cheapens goods of a shopkeeper.

YOU see that I always come to your shop.

DIALOGO XIX.

Si párla con un mercatánte per compráre.

VE'DE béne che véngo sémpre da léi.

I am

I am infinitely obliged to you. I shall endeavour to render myself worthy of the confidence you repose in me.

Le sóno sommaménte tenúto. Non mi renderò indégno della confidenza che V. S. ha in me.

I hope to please you as usual.

Spéro che sarà contènto di me all' ordinário.

You must not mind a little more or less, provided you are well served.

Non bisógna risguardáre a quálche cósa più o méno, perchè sia ben servíta.

I do not complain of the goods, but of the price only.

Non mi dólgo délla róba, ma del prézzo solaménte.

You have no occasion to complain of me. Let us see in what I can serve you.

Non ha occasióne di lagnársi di me. Vediámo a che débbo servírla.

I should like to make me two suits of cloaths, one for summer, the other for winter, but I do not know of what stuff to chuse.

Vorréi fármi dúe ábiti, úno di estáte, l' áltro d'invérno, ma non sapréi di che.

I should be glad to have a suit in taste, well chosen.

Vorréi un vestito di gústo, un vestíto ben intéso.

You might make the close coat of a very good scarlet embroidered in gold.

Potrébbe fáre 'l giustacóre d'un óttimo scarlátto ricamáto d'óro.

Or of another fashionable cloth, with a vest of gold tissue.

O di un' altro pánno alla móda, con úna véste di canaváccio d'óro.

I should rather have a surtout of black velvet.

Avréi più a cáro fármi un surtú di vellúto néro.

This would be also very elegant.

Ancór quésto sarébbe nóbile.

For your summer suit you may chuse a Brussels camlet, with a little silver lace.

Per l'ábito di estáte potrá préndere un camellotto di Brusséls, con un piccól gallóne d'argénto.

Let us see the camlet.

Vediámo'l camellótto.

This

This dark grey pleases me best.
Quésto cenerognólo mi piáce 'l piú.

Don't you think that a grogram lining of a red colour will suit it best?
Créde che la fodéra di spomiglioncino colór di fuóco convénga?

The grogram lining might do very well, but not of a red colour.
La fódera di spomiglioncino starébbe béne, ma non rósa.

For this in the summer would be prejudicial to the sight.
Perchè quésto colóre l'estáte fà mále alla vista.

It is true; we will chuse another.
E véro, ne prenderémo un' áltra.

And have you no occasion for a spring or autumn suit?
E per un' ábito di mézzo témpo non ne ha bisógno?

No, I have enough of those.
Nò, ne ho abbastánza.

Now tell me the very lowest price.
Ora mi dica 'l prézzo al piú giústo.

You know I do not like to make many words.
Sà chè non ámo móltо a stiracchiáre.

Here it is not at all necessary; we deal upon conscience, I will tell you in a word.
Quì non è necessário; si vende in cosciénza. Le diró de úna paróla sóla.

You shall pay for the scarlet cloth two-and-twenty livres, and eighteen for the camlet. I shall not abate one penny.
Pagherà lo scarlátto vénti dúe lire, e 'l camellótto diciótto. Non vi é un sóldo da leváre.

Cut me ten yards of one, and four of the other.
Mene tágli diéci bráccia dell' úno, & quáttro dell' álтro.

We should previously settle the old account. I have a partner at present, and am no longer at liberty to give credit.
Bisognerébbe prima soldáre 'l cónto vécchio. Orá ho un compágno, non sóno piú in istáto di dáre a credénza.

I do not ask credit, I buy with ready money.
Non domándo credénza, cómpro a danári contánti.

Ibeg

Digitized by Google

I beg you will not be offended; we have been so often imposed upon, that we no longer know whom to trust.

La supplico non offendersene; siámo státi tánte vólte ingannáti, che non suppiámo di chi piú fidárci.

I vow I do not gain ten pence a yard in the piece.

Le giúro che non guadágno diéci sóldi per bráccio nel pánno.

Here is the money; and I am obliged to you. Farewell.

Ecco' 'l danáro, e le sóno obligáto. A rivedérci.

I hope you will be pleased with me.

Spéro che sarà contènta di me.

DIALOGUE XX.

On civility.

I AM overjoyed, sir, to meet you here, because I intended to wait upon you this very moment.

GO'DO, signóre, di trovárla quì per accidénte, perchè intenzionáto éro d' andármene in quésto momènto a cása sua.

You do me too much honour, far beyond any thing I can possibly merit.

V. S. mi fà tróppa grázia, ed un onóre che non mérito.

But what is your pleasure? please to lay your commands on me.

Ma chè cománda, signóre? in che pósso io ubbidírle?

All I wanted, sir, was to assure you of my most humble respects.

Altro non volévo, padrón mio, se non assicurárla de' miéi rispétti umilissimi.

And at the same time to beg a favour of you, which was to recommend me to your mother's protection.

E nel medésimo témpo fárle úna preghiéra; cio è di raccommandármi alla protezióne délla signóra sua madre.

You may rest assured that my mother and myself are entirely at your service.

Essa puó viver sicúra che tánto mia mádre, quánt' io viviámo dipendénti da' suói cénni.

Digitized by Google

I may therefore expect your mother and you will, on this occasion, favour me with your interest?

Dúnque pósso spérare che la signóra súa mádre, e lei mi favoriránno in quést' occasióne délla lor' efficacissima interposizióne?

Do not make the least doubt of it: and believe me, that both my mother and myself will receive a particular pleasure in serving you.

Non ne dúbiti púnto, signór mio, e créda púre che la mádre mia, ed io ci furémo un sensibilissimo piacére servéndola.

By these noble expressions I am enabled to form a judgment of your generosity and goodness.

Conósco in véro dálle nóbili súe espressioni, quánto generósa sia l' ánima che pórta in pétto.

And from your strong professions of friendship, I can easily perceive, that you are the worthy offspring of so worthy a mother.

E ben m'accórgo da' suói cordiáli sentiménti, esser V. S. dégno figlio délla degnissima súa genitrice.

Truce, I pray you, sir, with your compliments; the event will afford you a sufficient proof of the sincerity of our friendship.

Non piú compliménti, signóre; gli effétti le daránno próve sicúre délla, nóstra servitù.

I will be silent now, but when I have obtained the favour, I shall wait upon you with my thanks.

Tacerò adésso; ma, ottenúto che avrò la grázia, verrò da lei per ringraziarnela.

Will you do me the favour to pay my respects to your mother.

Mi favorisca di riverire distintissimaménte per párte mia la signóra súa mádre?

DIALOGUE XXI.

DIALOGO XXI.

SPRING is of all seasons the most agreeable.

LA primavéra è la piú gráta di tútte le stagioni.

Every thing then smiles in nature.

Tútto ride allor' nélla natúra.

The

Digitized by Google

The country looks like a vast garden.	*La campágna è cóme un gran giardíno.*
The meadows resemble a large green carpet.	*I práti somigliano ad un gran tapéto vérde.*
The weather is both very mild and serene.	*Il témpo è mólto dólce e mólto seréno.*
The air is temperate.	*L'ária è temperáto.*
The trees are full of leaves.	*Gli álberi sóno copérti di fóglie.*
The melody of the birds enraptures me.	*Il cánto degl' uccélli m'innamóra.*
The weather is neither too hot, nor too cold.	*Il témpo non è nè troppo cáldo, nè tróppo fréddo.*
It is very healthy.	*E mólto sáno.*
All the living creatures are then in love.	*Tútti gli animáli allór' fánno l'amóre.*
Nature seems to revive.	*La natura par che rinásca.*
We have no spring this year.	*Quest' ánno non abbiámo púnto primavéra.*
The spring is backward.	*La primavéra è tardíva.*
It is winter-like.	*E' un piccol' invérno.*
I am fond of the country in summer-time, and of the town in winter.	*A'mo la campágna nell' estáte, e la cittá nell' invérno.*
We have a very hot summer.	*Abbiámo una estáte ben cálda.*
The heat makes me both dull and idle.	*Il calóre mi rénde pesánte e pigro.*
The harvest will be very plentiful.	*La raccólta sará mólto abbondánte.*
It would be still more fertile, if we had a little rain.	*Lo sarébbe ancór piú, se avéssimo un póco de piógg ia.*
There is a great plenty of fruit.	*V' è úna gránde abbondánza di frútti.*
We want a little rain.	*Abbiámo bisógno d' un po' di piógg ia.*
Rain would be very beneficial.	*La piógg ia ci farébbe mólto béne.*
They begin to cut down the corn.	*Si commíncia a tagliár i gráni.*

Digitized by Google

Summer is gone.	*L'estáte è passáta.*
Summer did not last long.	*L'estáte nón ha duráto un pézzo.*
Autumn has taken its place.	*L'autunno ha préso il súo luógo.*
Autumn is the season of fruits.	*L'autúnno è la stagióne de' frútti.*
Wine will be good this year.	*Il víno sarà buóno quest' ánno.*
We shall drink good wine.	*Beverémo buón víno.*
The vines are very fine.	*Le vigne sóno bellissime.*
They are loaded with large grapes.	*Sóno caricáte di grósse úve.*
The days are very much shortened.	*I giórni sóno mólto accorciáti.*
We shall soon use candle at five o'clock.	*Accenderémo quánto prima la candéla a cinque óre.*
The mornings are cold.	*Le mattináte sono frédde.*
We shall soon be obliged to make a fire.	*Sarémo ben tósto costrétti d' avére del fuóco.*
Winter comes on.	*L' Invérno viéne.*
Winter draws near.	*L' Invérno appróssima.*
The mornings are short.	*Le mattináte son córte.*
The evenings are long.	*Le seráte son lúnghe.*
The trees are divested of their leaves.	*Gli álberi sóno spogliáti délle lóro fógie.*
Nature appears benumbed.	*La natúra sémbra intormentíta.*
Winter does not please me.	*L' Invérno non mi piáce.*
It pleases nobody.	*Non piáce a nessúno.*
Nevertheless it is pleasing to walk in the sun.	*Nulladiméno è dólce di passeggiáre al sóle.*
It is soon night.	*E' présto présto nótte.*
The days are very short.	*I giórni sóno mólto córti.*
We scarcely have eight hours full of day light.	*Appéna abbiámo nóî ott' óre di giórno.*
Twilight does not makes its appearance before seven o'clock in the morning.	*Il crepúsculo non commíncia máî ad apparíre avánti le sétte óre della mattína.*

They

Digitized by Google

They light the candles at five in the afternoon.	*A cinque óre dópo pránzo s'accéndono le candéle.*
It is not daylight the next day before eight o'clock.	*Il giórno non ritórna a comparír avánti le ott' óre del giórno dópo.*
The days are somewhat lengthened.	*I giórni sóno alquánto slongáti.*
That foretells the return of spring.	*Questo ci annúnzia il ritórno della primavéra.*
Its return will exhilarate Nature.	*Il súo ritórno rallegrerà la natúra.*

DIALOGUE XXII.

DIALOGO XXII.

WHENCE do you come from?	*D'Onde viéne élla?*
I come from the city, where I met your brother.	*Véngo dálla cittá óve incontrái súo fratéllo.*
Where are you going?	*O've va élla.*
Where do you run so fast?	*O've córre cósi frettolosaménte?*
Which way do you go?	*Di che párte va?*
Which way do you take?	*Che via prénde?*
Can I go with you?	*Pósso io andár con léi?*
Stay a little, I will go with you.	*Aspétti, che l'accompagnerò.*
Will you wait for me ten minutes?	*Vorrébbe aspettármi diéci minúti?*
I shall be ready in less than ten minutes?	*Sarò prónto in méno di diéci minúti.*
Tell me where you are going.	*Mi dica óve va?*
I am going into the country.	*Vádo alla campágna.*
Come up in my room, I have something to tell you.	*Mónti nélla mía cámera, ho qualche cósa da dírle.*
Come in, and sit down.	*E'ntri, e sí séda.*
Don't you stir from thence.	*Non si muóva di lá.*
Stay there.	*Stía lá.*
Now, you may go out.	*Può uscire adésso.*

Digitized by Google

Come down with me.	*Smónti méco,*
Adieu, I wish you a happy journey.	*Addío, le augúro un buon viággio.*
But, stop, come hither.	*Ma, aspètti, vénga quì,*
Wait a little.	*Aspétti un póco.*
Stop, that I may speak to you.	*Si férmi, ch'io le párli.*
Don't go so fast.	*Non váda cósi présto.*
You go too fast.	*V. S. va tróppo présto.*
What do you stop me for?	*Perchè mi férma élla?*
Don't touch me.	*Non mi tócchi.*
You make me lose my time.	*Mi fà pérder il mio témpo.*
My time is too precious for me to mis-spend it.	*Il mío témpo è tróppo prezióso per pérderlo cósi.*
Leave that alone.	*Lásci quésto.*
Don't touch that.	*Non tócchi quéllo.*
Touch nothing.	*Non tócchi niénte.*
Why do you recommend me that?	*Pérche mi raccommánda élla quésto.*
Because I recommend it to every body.	*Pérche lo raccommándo a tútti.*
I am well here.	*Sto béne quà.*
I find myself very well here.	*Mi tróvo mólto béne quì.*
The door is shut.	*La pórta è chiúsa.*
Who has shut the door?	*Chi ha chiúso la pórta.*
I can't open it.	*Non pósso aprírla.*
I can't turn the key.	*Non pósso voltáre le chiáve.*
The lock is not good.	*La serratúra non è buóna.*
Open the door.	*A'pra la pórta.*
It is open.	*E' apérta.*
Shut the door.	*Chiúda la pórta.*
It is shut.	*E' chiúsa.*
Open the window.	*A'pra la finéstra.*
Shut the window.	*Sérri la finéstra.*
What do you look for?	*Che cérca, V. S.*
What have you lost?	*Che ha pérduto?*
If you have lost any thing, I have not found it.	*Se ha pérdúto quálche cósa, non l'ho trováta.*
I never find any thing.	*Non tróvo mai niénte.*

Speak

Digitized by Google

Speak aloud.	*Párli fórte.*
Speak distinctly.	*Párli distintaménte.*
Open your mouth.	*A'pra la bócca.*
You speak too low.	*V. S. parla tróppo piáno.*
Why do you speak so low?	*Pérche párla élla cósi piáno?*
Don't be bashful.	*Non sía tímido.*
To whom do you speak?	*A chi párla élla?*
Do you speak to me?	*Párla a me?*
Tell, is it to me that you are speaking?	*Dica, é a me ch' élla párla?*
Speak to me then.	*Mi párli dúnque.*
Speak to him.	*Gli párli.*
Speak to us.	*Ci párli.*
Speak to them.	*Párli lóro.*
Do you speak French?	*Párla, V. S. Francése?*
I speak it a little.	*Lo párlo un póco.*
What do you say?	*Che dice?*
Do you say any thing?	*Dice V. S. quálche cósa?*
I say nothing.	*Non dico nulla.*
What have you said?	*Che ha élla détto?*
I have said nothing.	*Non ho détto niénte.*
I don't believe it.	*Non lo crédo.*
What does he say?	*Che dice égli.*
He says nothing.	*Non dice núlla.*
Does he not speak?	*Non párla égli?*
I thought he had spoken.	*Credévo ch' avésse parláto.*
What has he told you?	*Che le ha détto?*
Has he told you nothing?	*Non le ha détto niénte?*
What does she say?	*Che dice élla?*
She does not speak.	*Non párla.*
What has she told you?	*Che le ha détto éssa?*
She said nothing to me.	*Ella non m' ha détto niénte.*
Don't tell her that.	*Non le dica quésto.*
I will tell it her.	*Glielo dirò.*
I won't tell it her.	*Non glielo dirò.*
Don't tell it to them.	*Non lo dica a lóro.*
Have you said that?	*Ha détto quésto?*
No, I have not told it.	*No, non l'ho détto.*
If I had said it, I would not deny it.	*Se l' avéssi détto, non lo negherèi.*
What do you?	*Che fa, V. S.?*

Digitized by Google

I do nothing.	*Non fo nulla.*
What have you done?	*Che ha fátto?*
I have done nothing.	*Non ho fátto niénte.*
Have you done your work?	*Ha élla fátto il súo lavóro?*
No, I have been idle.	*No, sóno státo pigro.*
Shall you soon have done?	*Avrá, V. S. finito présto?*
Yes, in half an hour.	*Sí, in úna mézz' óra.*
Have you not done?	*Non ha élla finito.*
I thought you had done.	*Credévo che avésse finito,*
You go very slow.	*Va mólto adágio.*
You are very long.	*E' mólto lénto.*
What does he do?	*Che fa égli?*
Is he doing nothing.	*Non fa égli niénte?*
Has he nothing to do?	*Non ha égli niente a fáre?*
Has he no business?	*Non ha égli alcúna occupazione?*
How does he spend his time?	*Como pássa égli 'l súo témpo?*
What is she doing?	*Che fa élla?*
What is her amusement?	*Che è 'l súo passatémpo?*
Is she fond of musick?	*A'ma élla la música?*
Does she write? Does she read?	*Scrive élla? Legg' élla?*
Does she go to the play?	*Va élla al teátro?*
What do you ask?	*Che dimánda, V. S.?*
Do you ask for any thing?	*Dimánda élla quálche cósa?*
Say what you ask.	*Dica élla ciò che dimanda.*
If you want any thing, speak.	*Se ha bisógno di quálche cósa, párli.*
Answer me.	*Mi rispónda.*
Why don't you answer me?	*Pérche non mi rispónde?*
Are you afraid, or do you scorn to answer me?	*Téme, ó sdégna élla di rispóndermi?*
If you don't answer me, I'll speak to you no more.	*Se non mi rispónde, non le parlerò piú.*

DIALOGUE XXIII.

DIALOGO XXIII.

I HAVE a good stomach.	*HO buón appetíto.*
I could eat something.	*Mangeréi volontiéri quálche cósa.*

I could

Digitized by Google

I could willingly eat.	*Mangeréi volontiéri.*
Eat something.	*Mángi quálche cósa.*
Make no ceremonies.	*Non fáccia cerimónie.*
Do just as if you were at home.	*Fáccia élla cóme se fósse a cása súa.*
What will you to eat?	*Che vuóle V. S. mangiáre?*
What would you wish to have?	*Che desídera élla d'avére?*
Say what you like.	*Dica quel che áma.*
Which will you have, some meat or fish?	*Vuóle délla cárne o del pésce?*
Give me a knife, a spoon, and a fork.	*Mi dia un coltéllo, un cucchiájo ed una forchétta.*
I have eaten enough.	*Ho mangiáto assái.*
I have eaten sufficiently.	*Ho mangiáto sufficientemente.*
I can't eat any more.	*Non potrei mangiár di più.*
I ate a good dinner.	*Ho ben pranzáto.*
I am satisfied.	*Sóno soddisfátto.*
You gave me a princely entertainment.	*M'ha trattáto cóme un príncipe.*
Will you eat any more?	*Vuóle élla mangiáre davantággio?*
You eat very little.	*Non ha mangiáto quási niénte.*
We had but a very indifferent dinner to-day.	*Abbiámo avúto un cattivissimo pránzo óggi.*
But, if you don't eat, do drink at least.	*Ma se non mángia, almáno béva.*
What, will you neither eat nor drink?	*Che! non vuóle nè bére, nè mangiáre?*
I could drink a glass of wine.	*Beveréi volontiéri un bicchiére di vino.*
I like red better than white wine.	*Pref risco il vino rósso all biánco.*
Drink which you please.	*Béva di quel che le piáce.*
I hope you like this wine.	*Spéro che troverà buóno quésto vino.*
I have the honour to drink your health.	*Ho l' onóre di bére álla súa salúte.*
I thank you.	*La ringrázio.*
Drink another glass.	*Ne béva un áltro bicchiére.*

Digitized by Google

I have drunk enough.	*Ho bevúto assái.*
I drank more to-day than I commonly drink.	*Ho bevúto óggi più che non bévo communeménte.*
It is a long while since I drank so much.	*E' un pézzo che non ho bevúto tánto.*
My thirst is quenched.	*La mia séte è sedáta.*
I would not drink for all the gold in the world,	*Non beveréi per túttо l' óro del móndo.*
I earnestly entreat you will not make me drink any more.	*La prégo instanteménte di non fármi più bére.*
Your wine is exceeding good, or else I would not have drunk so much of it.	*Il súo víno è eccelléntе, altriménte non ne avréi bevúto tánto.*
Yet, I could not possibly drink any more of it.	*Nientediméno, mi sarébbe impossibile di berne davantággio.*

DIALOGUE XXIV. *DIALOGO XXIV.*

DO you know that?	*SA élla quésto?*
I don't know it.	*Non lo so.*
I know nothing of it.	*Non ne so núlla.*
Did your friend know it?	*Il súo amico lo sapéva?*
Did he not know it?	*Non lo sapéva?*
He has never known it, nor shall he ever know it.	*Non l' ha mái sapúto, nè lo saprà mai.*
He shall know nothing of it.	*Non me saprà niénte.*
Have you seen my uncle?	*Ha V. S. vedúto mio zio?*
Do you know him?	*Lo conósce élla?*
I know him very well.	*Lo conósco mólto béne.*
Have you ever seen my aunt?	*Ha élla mái vedúto mia zia?*
Do you know her,	*La conósce?*
You speak of my sisters.	*E'lla párla di mie soréllе,*
Do you know them?	*Le conósce?*
I don't know them.	*Non le conósco.*
I have never seen them.	*Non le ho mái vedúte.*

As

Digitized by Google

As to your cousin, I have known him.	*A riguárdo di súo cugíno, l' ho conosciúto.*
He has left a son, whom you ought to know.	*Ha lasciáto un figlio ch' élla déve conóscere.*
I know him by sight.	*Lo conósco di vista.*
He has also a very amiable sister.	*Ha pariménte úna sorélla mólto amábile.*
I know her by reputation.	*La conósco di riputazióne.*
But, sir, you speak to me as if you knew me.	*Ma, signóre, mi párla cóme se mi conoscésse.*
Do you know me?	*Mi conosce élla?*
I know you very well.	*La conósco mólto béne.*
Yet, I have forgotten your name.	*Però mi sóno scordáto del súo nóme.*
I am surprized at it.	*Ne sóno sopréso.*
What! is it thus you forget your friends?	*Che! si scórda cósi de' suói amíci!*
Have you entirely forgotten me?	*S'è interaménte scordáto di me?*
Had you not sworn to me an eternal friendship?	*Non m'avéva élla giuráto úna etérna amicízia?*
I have not transgressed my oath.	*Non ho violáto il mio giuraménto.*
I love you as much as I ever did before.	*L' ámo quánto l' ámava avánti.*
Your brother does not recollect me neither.	*Súo fratéllo non mi riconósce neppúre.*
He has forgotten me.	*S'è scordáto di me.*
He has made fresh acquaintances in my absence.	*Ha fátto nuóve conoscénze duránte la mia assenza.*
I have seen Mr. C. at Paris.	*Ho vedúto il signóre C. a Parigi.*
I have the honour of being known by him.	*Ho l' onóre d'éssere conosciúto da lúi.*
Don't you recollect me?	*Non mi riconósce élla?*
We have played together at school.	*Habbiámo giuocáto insiéme álla scuóla.*
We are nearly of the same age.	*Siámo quási dell' istéssa etá.*
You are younger than I.	*Ella è più gióvane di me.*

Digitized by Google

If you are not younger, at least, you appear to be so.
Se non è più gióvane, almé-no lo sémbra.

What are you in mourning for.
Pérche è élla in lútto ?

I have lost both the best of fathers and the best of mothers.
Ho perdúto il miglióre de' pádri e la miglióre delle mádri.

My father is dead.
Mio pádre è mórto.

My mother is dead.
Mia mádre è mórta.

My sister is married again.
Mia sorélla è maritáta un áltra vólta.

How many children have you?
Quánti figliuóli ha ?

I have four.
Ne ho quáttro.

Sons or daughters?
Mácchi o femmíne ?

I have a son and three daughters.
Ho un figlio e tre figlie.

How many brothers have you?
Quánti fratélli ha ella ?

I had three, but now I have none.
Ne avévo tré, ma ádésso non ne ho alcúno.

They are all dead.
Sóno tútti mórti.

Unmerciful death has carried them off.
La spietáta mórte li ha prési tútti.

The physicians, with the assistance of the surgeons and apothecaries, have cured them of all their diseases.
I médici ajutáti da' chirúrghi e dágli speziáli, li hánno guariti de tútte le lóro malattie.

We are all mortal.
Siámo tútti mortáli.

Digitized by Google

A COLLECTION OF ITALIAN PHRASES.

OR

IDIOMS, which constitute the peculiar Delicacy of that Language.

THE Italian language surpassing all others in the delicacy and elegance of its expressions, I apprehend it would be of public utility to print this small collection, which contains the true idioms, or modes of speaking, and the turns of the Italian phrases, divided according to their respective subjects.

For Example.

To pray or exhort.

DEAR sir, do me that favour,	*CA'RO vói, fáteni quésto favóre.*
My love,	*bén mio, ánima mia, amór mio.*
My delight, my soul,	*tesóro mío, ánima mia.*
I conjure you,	*deh! vi scongiúro.*
I pray you,	*deh! vi prégo.*
I beseech you,	*per cortesía.*
Do me the favour,	*V. S. mi favorísca.*

To shew civility.

Your servant, sir,	*Servitór, padrón mio.*
I am intirely yours,	*sóno túto súo.*
Your slave,	*schiávo súo.*
I kiss your hands,	*báccio le máni a V. S.*

I thank

Digitized by Google

I thank you,	*la ringrázio.*
You may depend upon me,	*fúccia capitále délla mia persóna.*
See if it is in my power to serve you,	*véda V. S. se son capáce di servirla.*
Command me,	*V. S. mi comándi.*
Do what you please with your servant,	*V. S. dispónga del súo servitóre.*
I wait for your commands,	*aspétto i suói comándi.*
Since you will have it so,	*poich' ella cománda così.*
You are the máster,	*V. S. è padróne.*
At your service,	*al suo comándo.*
I am obliged to you,	*résto con óbbligo appréssо a V. S. son obbligáto a V. S.*
I am infinitely obliged to you,	*résto obligáto infinitaménte a V. S.*
I will not be guilty of that fault,	*non farò quésto mancaménto.*
Away with these titles and ceremonies,	*lasciámo quésti titoli, quéste ceremónie.*
It is my business to serve you,	*tócca a me di servírla.*
You are very obliging,	*V. S. è tróppo cortése.*
I know not how to make a proper return for so many favours,	*non sapréi cóme contracambiáre tánti óbblighi.*

To complain, hope, or despair.

How unfortunate am I, if that be,	*Guái a me, se questo è!*
Poor miserable wretch that I am!	*poverétto me, meschíno me!*
Poor miserable creatures that we are!	*poverétti nói!*
How unfortunate am I!	*sventuráto, sciaguráto, infélice. disgraziáto me!*
O my God, what sad pain!	*o Dio, che péna!*
Ah cursed fortune!	*ahi sórte avérsa!*
To what are we reduced!	*a che siam giúnti; ridótti, condótti!*

We

Digitized by Google

We are undone; we are ruined!	*siámo morti; spediti; rovinàti!*
There wanted only that,	*quésto ci mancáva.*
We are at last come to it,	*ci siám pur giúnti.*
That was the cause of my grief,	*écco dóvè mi doléva.*
There is what completes our ruin,	*éccol 'última nóstra rovina.*
That is the misfortune,	*quésto è'l mále.*
It is really a pity,	*è peccáto veraménte.*
O the poor child!	*o póvero figliuólo!*
I am the most unfortunate of men!	*io' són pur il rè délle disgrázie!*
What is to be done?	*che 'c' è da fáre? che farò? che farémo?*
We must have patience,	*bisógna avér paziénza.*
We must conform ourselves to the will of God,	*bisógna conformársi, bisógna riméttersi álla volontà di Dío.*
Nothing farther can be done,	*non si può fár' áltro.*
I hope that God, I hope that heaven,	*spéro in Dío, spéro nel ciélo.*
It is enough, in the name of God,	*básta, in nóme di Dío.*
We must swallow that,	*fórza è che céla leviámo.*
We must die, sooner or later,	*ad ógni módo bisógna morire.*
We find bread to eat every where,	*ánche altróve si mángia páne.*

To give tokens of affirmation, consent, belief, or refusal.

However it is true,	*E' pur véro.*
It is but too true,	*è pur tróppo véro.*
To tell you the truth,	*a dirvi 'l véro.*
Indeed it is so,	*in fátti è così, così è.*
There's no doubt of it,	*non 'v' è dúbbio.*
I believe yes,	*crédo di sì.*
I believe no,	*crédo di nò.*

I lay

Digitized by Google

I lay it is,	*scommétto di sì.*
I lay it is not,	*scommétto di nò.*
I think so, I think not,	*pénso di sì, pénso di nò.*
Not to tell an untruth,	*sálvo l' véro.*
Nobody would say such an extravagant thing,	*niúno dirébbe una stravagánza simile.*
Say likewise that the snow is not white,	*díte ánche che la néve non è biánca.*
I can tell you she is very handsome,	*vi so dire ch' ella é bellissima.*
I would lay a wager,	*scommetterèi quálche cósa.*
You jest,	*oh búrla V. S.*
I speak in earnest,	*párlo da senno.*
You have guessed right,	*l' avéte indovináta.*
I believe you, one may believe you,	*la crédo, vi si può crédere.*
Let it be then, so let it be,	*sia dúnque, così sia.*
You shall be satisfied,	*V. S. resterà servita.*
Softly, not so fast,	*adágio, adágio, a bell' ágio.*
Nor that neither,	*nè mánco quésto.*
I would not give thee a trifle,	*non ti darèi un frúllo.*
Yes, truly,	*veraménte sì, sénza dúbbio.*
They are trifles,	*son cipólle.*
Do not break my head,	*non mi rompéte 'l cápo.*
Do not make me giddy or deaf,	*non mi stur' ad intronáre le orécchie.*
Get thee to bed.	*vá a dormire.*

To deny.

I say not,	*Dico di nò.*
It is not true,	*non è véro.*
It is not so, it is so,	*quésto nò, quésto sì.*
Positively I will not,	*non vóglio in cónto alcúno: in nissún módo, in nissúna manièra.*
I joked,	*io burlávo.*
I did it only by way of jest,	*lo facévo da schérzo.*

To

To consult.

What is to be done?	*Che c'è da fáre?*
What course shall we take?	*che partito piglierémo?*
Let's do so and so,	*facciámo così.*
Let's do one thing,	*facciámo úna cósa.*
It will be better that,	*sará méglio che.*
Stay a little,	*sáldo un póco.*
It would be better that,	*sarébbe méglio che.*
Let me alone,	*lasciáte far' a me.*
I had rather,	*vorrei più tósto.*
Were I in your place,	*se io fossi in luógo vóstro.*

To wish well to a person.

Heavens preserve you,	*Il ciélo vi guárdi.*
God send you good luck,	*Iddio vi féliciti.*
I wish you every thing that's good,	*vi prégo ógni véro béne.*
God assist you,	*Iddio v'ájuti.*
God forgive you,	*Iddio vi perdóni.*
God be with you,	*andáte con Dio.*
May you be happy,	*andáte felice.*
I wish you true content,	*vi prégo ógni maggiór contentézza.*
God grant you all the prosperity you desire,	*prégo Dio che vi conceda ógni prosperitá più desiderábile.*
Till I see you again,	*a rivedérci.*
I am your most humble servant,	*la riverísco.*
You are welcome,	*ben venúto.*
Well met,	*ben trováto.*
Much good may do you,	*buón pró vi fáccia.*

To swear.

Upon my faith,	*Alla fé, a fé di Dio, per mia fé.*
In my conscience,	*in cosciénza mia.*
Upon my life,	*per vita mia.*
Upon your life,	*per vita vóstra.*

I swear

Digitized by Google

I swear, as I am a gentleman,	*vi giúro da cavaliére.*
As I am an honest man,	*da galantuómo che sóno.*
As I am a man of honour,	*da uómo onoráto.*
As I am a poor man,	*da póver' uómo che sóno.*
As I am an honest man,	*da uómo dabbéne.*
May my eyes be plucked out, if,	*che mi sian cavàti gli ócchi, se.*
That I may die,	*póssa io morire.*
That I may be killed,	*póssa io ésser' amazzáto.*
By Bacchus,	*pel córpo di Bácco.*
As God shall keep me, / Shall save me,	*che Dio m'ajúti, mi sálvi.*

To threaten or insult.

I will break thy head,	*Ti romperò la tésta.*
I will beat thee,	*ti batterò.*
Thou wilt make me give thee fifty blows with a stick,	*tu mi caverái dálle mání cinquánta bastonáte.*
May the plague take me, if I don't kill him,	*si io non l' amázzo, mi póssa venir la rábbia.*
I will affront thee after such a rate,	*ti farò uno scórno tále.*
I will give thee a Rowland for thy Oliver,	*ti renderò pan per focáccia.*
Let me alone, I will know if,	*lásciafar' a me, ch' io saprò.*
Thou will pay it me,	*tu méla pagherái.*
I swear thou shalt repent it,	*giúro al móndo che tene farò pentíre.*
Thou hast done it,	*tu mel' hái fátta.*
I will give it thee, go,	*te la darò, va.*
Thou wilt laugh with me, but,	*tu vuói burlár méco, ma.*
If you put me into a passion,	*se tu mi fái andar' in cóllera.*
If I put myself into a passion,	*se mi cominvia a fumáre.*
Do not stun me,	*non mi stuzzicár le orécchie.*

Digitized by Google

Do not waken a sleeping lion,	*non destáre 'l can che dórme.*
Softly, softly,	*pián, piáno.*
Woe be to thee,	*guái a te.*
Thou shalt not escape me,	*tu non mi scapperái.*
Hold your tongue, don't speak to me,	*non piú paróle, táci.*
'Tis enough, 'tis sufficient.	*básta, tanto básti.*
Thou art undone,	*séi mórto va.*
In spite of thee,	*al túo márcio dispétto.*
To his face,	*álla barba sua.*

To admire.

O God!	*Dio mio! Dio buóno!*
O God! O blessed Jesus!	*Cristo benedétto!*
Jesus Maria!	*Giesù Maria!*
Is it possible?	*poter di Cristo, púo far' il móndo, púo far' il ciélo?*
(These marks of admiration cannot be turned into English without losing all their beauties.)	*poter di Bácco, potér del móndo, cáspitta, cáppari.*
Who ever saw the like!	*chi vide mái cóse simili!*
Who would have thought, believed, said!	*chi avrébbe pensáto, credúto, détto!*
Look a little now!	*guardátemi un póco!*
What a beast it is!	*che bestia!*
I did wonder,	*Io mi maravigliávo.*
O strange!	*che maraviglia!*
I don't wonder,	*non mi maraviglio.*
How can that be?	*come può éssere? com' è possibile?*
So goes the world,	*così vánno le cóse del móndo, così va 'l móndo.*

To shew joy, or displeasure.

What pleasure!	*O che gústo!*
What glory!	*o che glória!*
What joy!	*o che allegrézza!*

Digitized by Google

How pleased I am!	*che conténto è 'l mío!*
O, how happy am I!	*o me felice!*
O happy day!	*o giórno felice!*
What happiness!	*o che fortúna!*
O, how happy are you!	*beáto vói!*
I am sorry for it,	*mi dispiáce, mi rincrésce.*
That touches my very soul,	*mi dispiáce fin' all' ánima.*
It pierces me to the heart,	*mi trafigge 'l cuóre.*

To reproach.

Is this their dealing with gentlemen?	*Così si trátta co' galánt' uómini?*
Oughtest thou not to be ashamed?	*non ti dovrésti vergognáre?*
To affront me thus!	*a me far quést' affrónto!*
To such a man as I am,	*ad un pári mío.*
To me, is it not?	*a me, eh?*
Do you deal thus?	*a quésto módo si trátta?*
Ah, is it so?	*a quésto módo, éh?*
So and so, is it not?	*così, eh?*
See the simpleton!	*guárda minchióne!*
O, what fine manners!	*oh che bella creánza!*
What a fine way of proceeding!	*che bel módo di procédere!*
O, that is fine!	*bel módo cérto.*
Thou oughtest not to treat me thus,	*non doverésti usár simili termini néco.*
Dost thou think that is well?	*párti che stia béne?*
We shall see immediately,	*adésso si vedrà.*
What the devil has he done?	*che diávolo ha fátto?*
Do but see what a rascal he is,	*miráte un póco che furfánte è costui.*
What, are you obstinate still?	*ancór' ostináto?*

To call.

Hark,	*Ascólta.*
Listen,	*ódi.*

Where

Digitized by Google

Where art thou?	*óve séi?*
Hark ye,	*sentíte úna paróla.*
Hear you,	*sentíte, udíte.*
Hark ye a little,	*sentíte un póco.*
A word,	*una paróla.*
I will speak but two words to you,	*due paróle solaménte.*
Stay,	*férmati.*
Stay you,	*fermátevi.*

To shew uneasiness, trouble, or sorrow.

I am sorry,	*Mi dispiáce, mi rincésce.*
Leave me alone,	*lásciami in páce.*
Prithee get thee gone,	*va via, ti prégo.*
Do not break my head,	*nón mi rómpere 'l cápo.*
Away, away,	*via, via, ti prégo.*
Go, go, God be with you,	*via, váttene con Dío.*
Get you out of my sight,	*levátevi d' innánzi.*
Get thee gone from hence,	*levátevi di quà.*
Go, mind your own business,	*andáte a far' i fátti vóstri.*
Do not make me giddy,	*non mi stordíre.*
Do not split my ears,	*non m'intronár le orécchie.*
How tiresome you are!	*o che séi noióso!*
You have told it me a hundred times already.	*mel' hái détto cénto vólte.*

To give courage.

Cheer up, sirs,	*Anìmo, signóri.*
Come on, gentlemen, come on,	*sù sù, signóri.*
Come, let's see to work,	*or sù a nói alle máni.*
Let's give over,	*finiámola.*

To ask.

What news?	*Che si dice di nuóvo?*
What's that?	*che c'è?*

Where

Digitized by Google

Where are you going?	*dove si va; dove andate?*
Whence come you?	*donde si viene?*
What means?	*che vuol dire?*
To what purpose?	*a che serve?*
What do you think?	*che vi pare?*
To what end?	*a che proposito? a che fine?*
Why do you make such ado?	*a che tante storie, perchè tante smorfie?*
Tell me, may one know?	*ditemi se si può sapere?*
Tell me, may one ask you?	*ditemi s'è lecito di domandarvi?*
Who is it that has been so bold?	*chi ha avuto cotanto ardire?*

To forbid.

Let that alone,	*Lasciate stare.*
Do not touch,	*non toccare.*
Say not a word,	*non dir niente.*
Do not stir from hence,	*non ti partir di quà.*
In the name of God, do not do it,	*non lo fare in nome di Dio.*
Have a care,	*guardatevi bene.*
Take a care,	*avvertite.*
I forbid it,	*lo proibisco.*

A

COLLECTION OF' *Italian Proverbs.*

RACCO'LTA DI Proverbj Italiani.

TO expect, and not to come;	*A Spettare, e non venire;*
To lie a-bed, and not to sleep;	*Star in letto, e non dormire;*

To

Digitized by Google

To serve, and not to please ;	*Servire, e non gradire;*
Are three things enough to kill a man.	*Son tre cóse da far morire.*
Your mouth heals what it touches.	*La vóstra bócca sána quel che tócca.*
A hackney horse brings in money, but does not last long.	*Cavállo di vettúra fa profitto, ma non dúra.*
A house built, and a vine planted, is never sold for what it cost.	*Cása fátta, vigna pósta. Non si pága quánto cósta.*
There's no one happy in this world, but he that dies in his swaddling clouts.	*Nel móndo non è felice, se non quel che muóre in fáscie.*
Without bread and wine, love is cold.	*Sénza Cérere e Bácco, Venére è di ghiáccio.*
To travel post, requires the purse of a prince, and the strength of a porter.	*La pósta è úna spesa da príncipe, ed un mestiére da facchíno.*
It is better going alone, than in bad company.	*E méglio andár sólo, che mal accompagnáto.*
Misfortunes and pleasures never come single.	*Le sciagúre, e le allegrézze non véngono mai sóle.*
Fine to fine is not good to make a lining.	*Dúro con dúro, non è buón' a far' múro.*
A woman is like a chesnut, Fair to the outside, foul within.	*La dónna è cóme la castágna, Bélla di fuóri, e déntro ha la magágna.*
We must not choose women nor linen by candlelight.	*Nè dónna, nè téla non compráre alla candéla.*
Raw herbs, and sleeping on the ground, send a man to his grave.	*Erba, crúda e dormíre in piána térra, mánda l' uómo sotto térra.*
Love and greatness will not associate.	*Amór, e signoría non vóglion compagnía.*
A good stomach needs no sauce.	*Appetíto non vuól sálza.*
We think no more of vows, when the danger is past.	*Passáto 'l perícolo, gabbáto 'l sánto.*

Old

Digitized by Google

Old crimes, new penance.	*Peccáto vécchio, penitènza nuóva.*
The beast once dead, the venom dies also.	*Mórta la béstia, mórto 'l venéno.*
Fair words are very powerful, and cost nothing.	*Un bel parláre di bócca assái vále, póco cósta.*
A hundred pounds of sorrow won't pay an ounce of debt.	*Cent' óre di malinconía non pagáno un quattrino di débito.*
He that goes to bed without his supper, will toss and tumble all night.	*Chi và a létto sénza céna, túrta la nótte si diména.*
The ravens never pluck out one another's eyes.	*Córvi con córvi non si cávan mái gli ócchi.*
Tell me your company, and I shall know what you do.	*Dímmi con chi tu vai, saprò quel che fái.*
Let every one mind his own business.	*Ciascún' atténda a' fátti suói.*
He is fallen out of the frying-pan into the fire.	*E cadúto dálla padélla súlla brágia.*
Time and straw ripen medlars.	*Col tempo, e la páglia si matúrano le néspole.*
One scabby sheep infects a whole flock.	*Una pécora márcia ne gúasta un bránco.*
Every bird likes his own nest.	*Ad ógni uccéllo suo nído è béllo.*
A barking dog never bites.	*Can ch' ubbája non mórde mái.*
Do not wake a sleeping lion,	*Non destáre 'l can che dórme.*
He that is fonder of you than usual,	*Chi ti fa carézze piú che non suóle,*
Either has cheated you, or designs it.	*O t'ha ingannáto, o ingannár ti vuóle.*
To ask better bread than is made of corn.	*Cercár miglior páne che dá froménto.*
To ask my landlord if the wine be good.	*Domandar' all' óste se ha buón víno.*
Sorrow for a dead woman	*Dogliái di dónna mórta dúra*

gues

Digitized by Google

goes no farther than the door. — *in fin' álla pórta.*

Good wine needs no bush. — *Al buón víno non bisógna frásca.*

It is better one's foot slip than one's tongue. — *E' méglio sdrucciolár co' piédi che cólla língua.*

Wine brings out the truth. — *Il víno è úna mézza córda.*

The poorest hog has the best pear. — *Al più trísto pórco viéne la miglíor péra.*

He that waits for another's porringer, often dines ill. — *Chi per man d' altri s' imbócca, tárdi si satólla.*

He complains that his wife is too handsome. — *Si laménta dél bródo grásso.*

A hidden sin is half pardoned. — *Peccáto celáto è mézzo perdonáto.*

He that buys land, buys trouble. — *Che cómpra térra, compra guérra.*

He that cheats is often cheated. — *Chi cerca d'ingannár, résta ingannáto.*

Who lies with dogs, rises with fleas. — *Chi dórme coi cáni, si léva colle púlci.*

The maid surpasses the mistress. — *La sérva súpera la padróna.*

The Devil's not always at the poor man's gate. — *Non sémpre ría fortúna un luógo tiéne.*

Fair words and foul play cheat both the young and the old. — *Bélle paróle, e cattívi fátti, ingánnano savj, e mútti.*

There are no roses without thorns. — *Non si può avér la rósa sénza le spíne.*

There are no roses but what become heps. — *Non fù così bélla scárpa, che non diventásse brútta ciavátta.*

With artifice and deceit we live half the year; — *Con arte, ed ingánno, si vive mezzo l'ánno;*

With deceit and artifice we live the other half. — *Con ingánno, e con árte, si vive l' áltra párte.*

He that serves the publick, obliges nobody. — *Chi sérve al comúne, non sérve a nissúna.*

God preserve me from such people as flatter me to my

Digitized by Google

my face, and betray me behind my back.	*lécca, é diétro mi gráffia.*
A good friend is worth a hundred relations.	*E' méglio un buón amíco che cénto paréntí.*
Fevers in autumn are long or mortal.	*Fébbre autunnále, o è lunga, o è mortále.*
To sell bladders for lanterns.	*Vender lúcciole per lantérne.*
Every country has its fashions.	*Tal paése, tal' usánza.*
To mind two things at once.	*Aver' un' ócchio alla péntola, e l' áltro alla gátta.*
To be on both sides.	*Dar' un cólpo alla bótte, ed un áltro al cérchio.*
To have two strings to one's bow.	*Tenér 'l piéde in più stáffe.*
To cheat two at once.	*Pigliár due colómbi ad úna fáva.*
We must love the dog for his master's sake.	*Bisógna portár rispétto al can per amór del padróne.*
To set the fox to keep the geese.	*Dar le lattúghe in guárdia di páperi.*
The priest errs at the altar.	*E'rra il préte all'altáre.*
We must hide nothing from our physician and our lawyer.	*Al medico, ed all' avocáto non tenére 'l ver celáto.*
Nuns, monks, priests, and chickens, are never satisfied.	*Monáche, fráti, préti, e pólli, non si véggon mái satólli.*
Short reckonings make long friends.	*Pátto chiáro, amico cáro.*
Eggs of an hour, bread of a day, wine of a year, fish of ten, a woman of fifteen, and a friend of thirty.	*Uóvo d'un óra, páne d'un dì, víno d'un anno, pésce di diéci, dónna di quíndici, amíco di trénta.*
Wine of three virtues, that moistens, washes, and refreshes, without any strength in it.	*Vino di tre virtù, bógna, láva, e rinfresca, nè ha fórza alcúna.*

Bread

Digitized by Google

Bread that sees, wine that sparkles, cheese that weeps.	*Pan che véda, vin che sálti, formággio che piánga.*
A salad, to be well seasoned, ought to have little vinegar and plenty of oil.	*Insaláta ben saláta, poc' acéto, ben' ogliáta.*
It is better being a bird in the field, than in a cage.	*E méglio esser' uccéllo di campágna, che di gábbia.*
A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.	*E méglio un úovo oggì, che dománi una gallina.*
It is better to be friends at a distance, than enemies near at home.	*E méglio esser' amíci dá lontáno, che nemíci d'apprésso.*
When it is fair weather, take thy cloke; when it rains, wear it if you please.	*Nè di státe, nè d'invérno, non andár senza mantéllo.*
If thou wouldst be revenged of thy enemy, govern thyself.	*Vuói far vendétta del tuo nemíco, govérnati béne.*

Digitized by Google

A COLLECTION OF JESTS,

Several diverting Stories, Sentences, and the choicest Italian Proverbs.

D'un Birbánte.

UN Birbánte, per méglio procacciársi la limósina, andáva accattándo col suóno d'un campanellíno, mostrándo co' suói cénni ésser múto, e sórdo: il che vedéndo un galantuómo, lo chiámò a se, ed in presénza d'alcúni amíci suói ái quali avéva détto ch'egli voléva far' un mirácolo, díse al Birbánte, mostrándogli nella déstra un quattríno, e nélla man sinístra úna pézza di quattro sóldi: védi qual vuói scégliere. Se tu séi veraménte múto, sarà tuo 'l quattríno: ma se confesserái la verità, ti giuro da galantuómo di dárti la pézza di quáttro sóldi. Il Birbánte, sénza indugiáre, confessò non ésser múto; ébbe la pezzettína di quáttro sóldi, ed andóssene vía, póco curándosi délle rísa dégli áltri.

D'un Fúrbo.

UN mendíco trísto, e fúrbo contrafacéva con così verisímili maniére 'l moribóndo nélle stráde púbbliche di Parígi, e particolarménte apprésso délle Chiése, che i Préti medésimi venívano a fárgli la raccomandazióne dell' ánima. Méntre un' áltro fúrbo, piangéndo a dirótte lágrime, dicéva ésser súo fratéllo, ch'éra così venúto méno, e tramortíto di debolézza, per non aver mangiáto in túttо 'l giórno antecedénte. E per muóvere maggiorménte la génte a compassióne, soggiungéva, ch'esséndo éssi d'onoráta famíglia, non avévano avúto ardíre di domandáre la limósina. Sicchè mósso a pietà ogn' úno nel vedér dúe gióvani ben fátti, con buóni vestíti adósso, si sforzáva ciaschedúno di dar lóro quálche cosa. Póchi giórni dópo fúrono quéi medésimi fúrbi riconosciúti da un cérto, signóre,

Digitized by Google

signóre apprésso délla Chiésa di san Luígi dell' Isola; il quále cóme príma víde quel baronáccio distéso a térra, che paréva esaláre gli últimi spíriti, pregò alcúni di quei che stávano attórno a quel furfantáccio d'ascoltár' úna paróla in dispárte, e fátto lóro palése 'l suo intènto, l'approvárono gli áltri, e ne fécero consapévoli i lóro amíci. S' accostò quel signóre al moribóndo, nel témpo che un Préte gli gridáva con últa vóce; Giesù María. Féce 'l sopraccennáto signóre cénno al préte: e fingéndo avér compassióne di quel giovinétto, domandò un pocó di páglia, per méttergli sótto la tésta. Fù portáta la páglia, ed accésa in un púnto dálle dúe báude, per vía di dùe candéle. Sórse immantinénte 'l briccóne, ed a túlto potére si diéde álla fúga. S'imágini chi légge, quái fúrono le rísa, quále 'l rúmor de' fanciúlli, che gli corrévano diétro, gridándo. Al fúoco; fermáte, fermáte, è un mórto risuscitáto.

Rispósta Mordáce d'un Sérvo.

UN Napolitáno, uómo mólto ríco, e facéto, avéva un sérvo fedelíssimo, e mottegiatóre al maggiór ségno; e perchè costúi spésso pigliáva a schérzo i détti e fátti altrúi, il padróne ló facéva stár zítto, col dírgli: táci, táci, balórdo, che tu séi 'l Rè de' mátti. Dispiacéva non póco al sérvo il vedérsi chiamáto Rè de' pázzi e dal padróne, e dágli áltri servitóri. Sicchè úna vólta che credéva 'l padróne impórgli silénzio, tassándolo al sùo sólito di Rè de' pázzi; quéllo soggiúnse: volésse Dío che fóssi ío 'l Ré de' pázzi, e de' mátti? Sarébbe maggiore 'l mio régno di quél di tútt'i Rè délla térra; e vói ánche, signór padróne, saréste mío vassállo.

Astúzia d'un Contadíno.

UN Contadíno portándo una sóma di légna per véndere, benchè gridásse spésso, Guárda guárda; un bestiále non voléndosi scostáre, fù urtáto dal contadíno, e gli fù stracciáto 'l mantéllo; e voléndo che 'l contadíno glielo pagásse, lo condússe innánzi al Podestà, il quále, udíto 'l cáso dal querelánte, domandò al contadíno se ciò fósse véro, il quále non rispóse mái. Onde 'l Giúdice voltátosi

Digitized by Google

a quel del mantéllo: che vuói tu, gli disse, ch'io fáccia ad un múto? che múto? non è múto: perchè póco fa gridáva a tútta voce: Guárda, guárda. S'égli gridáva, dovévi dúnque guardárti, e così non t'avrébbe stracciáto 'l mantéllo.

D'un Francescáno, e d'un ministro.

UN Francescáno, essèndo in un bósco, montáto sù un' ásino, incontrò un minístro a cavállo sópra un bellíssimo Ronzíno. Dópo i compliménti ordinári, e più raggionaménti ch' ébbero insiéme, disputárono un pézzo, sù l' fátto délla véra ed única religióne Cattólica, nè mái si potéttero accordáre: con tútto che 'l Francescáno avésse con buonissime ragióni, e per vía de' tésti de' sánti Pádri prováto la continuazióne délla religióne Romána, da san Piétro sin' adésso. Il che negándo 'l minístro; non poiétte il Francescáno contenérsi di dírgli, ch' égli éra un véro bója délla súa ánima, giacchè conoscéndo la verità, non la voléva crédere. Non ébbe témpo di rispóndere 'l minístro, perchè allóra si trovárono con mólte áltre persóne, vicíni ad un fiúme, che si passáva per vía d'úna bárca, nélla quále entrárono, con tútti quéi che volévano passár' all' áltra bánda. Vedéndo 'l minístro che l'ásino del Francescáno tremáva tútto, credéndo fárgli úno scórno, in presénza di quánti érano nélla bárca, di cúi la maggiór párte éra Calvinísta, dísse: Pádre, se son siéte piú sicúro nélla vóstra religióne che 'l vóstro ásino non è nélla bárca, dovréste pur tremàre cóme fà égli. Il Francescáno piú astúto del minístro, con bel gárbo gli rispóse: Se vi trováste, cóme si tróva quésto ásino, signóre, coi férri ai piédi, la córda al cóllo, un confessóre da úna párte, e 'l bója dall' áltra, sicuraménte avréste maggiór paúra che non há l'ásino.

Di dúe Francescáni, e d'un Contadíno.

UN Contadíno geláto di fréddo, smontò da cavállo per camminár a piédi. Il che vedéndo due Francescáni, che in Fráncia sóno chiamáti, *Cordeliers*, disse l'úno al compágno: se avéssi io un cavállo, non saréi tánto pázzo di

Digitized by Google

di condúrlo per la bríglia, ma bensì mi farèi portáre sin al convénto. L'altro ch'éra d'umór allégro soggiúnse; mi básta l' ánimo di far' úna búrla a quel Contadíno, e' levárgli 'l cavállo, purchè vogliáte dármi un póco d'ajúto. Acconsentì súbito 'l fráte, e pián piáno s'accostárono ambidúe al Contadíno, sénza che sen' accorgésse. Levò 'l Francescáno con destrézza la bríglia al cavállo; sela míse in tésta seggitándo 'l Contadíno: méntre l'áltro con la cavézza condússe 'l cavállo in dispárte. Quíndi a non mólto, il Contadíno voléndo rimontár' a cavállo, si vólse in diétro; ma ébbe da moríre di paúra, vedéndo tanta metamórfosi. E sgridándo con terríbile voce, ohimè! ajúto! fù fermáto dal Francescáno, che prostrátosi in ginocchióne richiedéva con grand' umiltà la súa libertà; diçéndo, che per i suoi disórdini, e 'l enormità de' suói peccáti éra státo condannáto a tále trasformazióne; e ch' óra esséndo venúto 'l término délla penitènza, éra tornáto all primo éssere. Il Contadíno alquánto rasserenáto, non sólo gli diéde la domandáta libertà, ma non accorgéndosi della búrla, scioccaménte soggiúnse: andáte in sánta páce, adésso non mi maravíglio, se dópo una vita tánto disordináta, siéte riuscíto un cosi cattívo animaláccio. Il fráte si partì, dichiarándosegli obbligáto, ed andó a ricercáre 'l compágno: quándo víddero i fráti dilungáto 'l póvero Contadíno, per áltra vía si condússero ad úna térra vicína. Póchi giórni dópo, pregáron i Francescáni un' amíco lóro, che si compiacésse d'andár álla fiera per vendere 'l cavállo, e méntre andáva col compratóre per ricévere 'l pagaménto, vénne lóro incóntro 'l primo Contadíno, che riconoscéndo 'l cavállo dísse al compratóre, che lo pregáva d'ascoltár úna paróla in dispárte; e domandátogli di chi fósse 'l cavállo: il compratóre rispóse; l'ho compráto adésso adésso, ma non l'ho pagáto. Deh per víta vóstra, replicò 'l Contadíno, rendételo, non lo pagáte. Non siáte tánto sciócco di crédere, che quélla carógna sía un cavállo, è l'ánima d'un Francescáno ch' é tornáto nélle súe dissolutézze. Rendételo, vi díco ío, ch' è'l più trísto animaláccio di quánti n'ábbia 'l móndo, ed a me ha fátto venire la rábbia cénto míla vólte.

Digitized by Google

D'un Gentiluómo Francése.

PER intelligénza di quésta storiétta, básta sapére che la paróla, digiunáre, significa in Francése *jeúner;* e che per esprímere, *déjeuner*, bisógna díre, far colazióne.

UN gentiluómo Francése, curióso di vedér l'Italia partì da Parígi, con intenzióne d'osserváre, e di far una memória distínta délle cóse più memorábili ch' avésse vedúte per il viággio. Arriváto in Bológna, vólle trattenérvisi. Partíto dal suo albérgo, il giórno seguénte assái per témpo, andò per dúe óre camminándo di quà, di là, per la città. Dópo averne vísta la maggiór párte, tornò con grandíssimo appetíto all' ostería; e súbito nell' entráre dísse all' óste, Signór óste, oggì vóglio digiunáre. L'óste credéndo che 'l gentiluómo per cérta divozióne volésse digiunáre da dovéro, rispóse: V. S. n' è padróne. In quel méntre il gentiluómo salí sù in cámera súa, e scrísse per un buón pézzo le cóse osserváte da lúi. Ma stimoláto dall' appetíto, e dálla séte, tralasciò di scrívere, e s'affacciò alla finéstra, chiamándo l'óste, a cui dísse: Signór' óste, v'ho détto che volévo digiunáre sta mattína, vene ricordáte? Lo so, soggiúnse l'oste, e mene ricórdo. Il gentiluómo senz'aspettar' áltro, tornò a scrívere; ma un quárto d'óra dópo, mósso e dálla fáme, e dálla séte, chiamò di nuóvo l'oste, e con vóce disdegnósa gli dísse: Che módo di procédere è quésto? non v'ho détto un' óra fa, che volévo digiunáre sta mattína? E' vèro, replicò l'óste, e V. S. è padróne di digiunár' ánche tútto 'l giórno. Cóme, come, dísse l'áltro, tútto 'l giórno! non ho mangiáto ancóra niénte, mi burláte. Vóglio mangiáre, portatémi da mangiáre, e da bére. Se V. S. vuól mangiáre e bére, non vuóle adúnque digiunáre, soggiúnse l'óste: perchè digiunáre vale a dire non mangiáre, e non bére. Allóra, il Francése, accórtosi dell' equívoco, placevolménte dísse: Sía maledétto il digiunáre: dovévo io díre far colazione. Mai più dirò digiunáre, che tróppo béne ho imparáto a mie spése, che cósa è digiunáre.

Del

Digitized by Google

Del Pápa Giúlio Secóndo.

UN nóbile Románo, amíco intrínseco del Pápa Giúlio Secóndo, gli disse che mólti si lamentávano che súa santità attendésse con tróppo calóre alla guérra cóntro i Francési; giacchè Iddío gli avéva dáto le chiávi délla súa chiésa, per serráre le pórte délla discórdia, ed aprire quélle délla riconciliazióne. Il Pápa rispóse al nóbile: Quéi táli che dícono símili cóse, non sánno fórse che san Piétro, e san Páolo sóno státi compágni, & ambidúe príncipi délla chiésa. I predecessóri miéi si sóno servíti délla chiáve di san Piétro, adésso io vóglio adoperáre la spáda di san Páolo. Il nóbile replicò: Vóstra santità sa però che Crísto disse a Piétro: rimétti la tua spáda nel fódero. E' véro, soggiúnse 'l pápa, ma ricordátevi che Crísto non lo disse príma, ma dópo che Piétro ébbe feríto.

Di Sisto quínto, e d'un Agostiniáno.

FELICE Perétti fu príma porcáro, si féce poi fráte dell' órdine di san Francésco, e súbito fátto sacerdóte, e Bacceliére, si féce chiamáre 'l pádre Montálto. Pervénne a túlte le dignità del súo órdine, fu teólogo, ministro provinciále, procuratór generále, generále, véscovo, cardinále, e dópo pápa Sísto quínto. Essèndo procuratór dell' órdine, il pádre Avósta allóra generále che gli éra capitál nemíco, tentáva tutt' i mézzi possíbili per scavalcárlo dal súo offizio. E nel capítolo generále che fù intimáto a Firénze, accendéndosi di più in più l'ódio del pádre Avósta, non attendéva, ad áltro che a strappazzáre l' pádre Montálto. Sicchè sdegnáto costúi, fátte alcúne instáuze in iscrítto, ed affíssele alla pórta del Rifettácio, si partì da Firénze, Il che risapúto dal generále, fù privato del cárico 'l póvero pádre Montálto, e nel medésimo témpo fúrono mandáti órdini a tútti i guardiáni di ritenérlo in prigióne. La qual cósa presentíta dal pádre Montálto, fuggì quésto incóntro, andándo ad alloggiár in áltri luóghi. Una séra che dormì in un convénto de' pádri di sant' Agostíno, dópo aver cenáto, benchè non vi fósse

Digitized by Google

conosciúto, domandò in grazia al pádre Procuratóre diéci scúdi in préstito che súbito gli fúrono préstati, e ne féce 'l pádre Montálto una polízza sottoscrítta non col súo, ma con un' áltro nóme imaginário; di cui 'l pádre Procuráto per qualsivóglia diligénza che usásse, non potétte mai avérne nuóva alcúna. Il pádre Montálto dópo éssere státo creáto pápa, leggéndo i suói manuscrítti, vi trovò quésta partíta. Diéde súbito órdine che si procurásse con ógni diligénza d'avér nuóva di quel pádre, e cáso che fósse vivo, si facésse venír a Roma con buóna comitíva. Giúnsero gli órdini del pápa al véscovo in un témpo appúnto, che passáva póca buóna intelligénza tra'l véscovo, e'l pádre Procuratóre sopracennáto, che fu mandáto a Róma cóme prigioniéro in compagnía di quáttro frati che gli facévano la guárdia più strétta che non avrébbero fátto diéci sbírri. Il véscovo si credéva che quésto si facésse per via de' suói amíci, ai quáli avéva dáto cattivíssima informazióne di quésto pádre Procuratóre, acciò procurássero con ógni sfórzo d'allontanárlo da lúi. Il símile credévano i fráti, non che 'l medésimo Procuratóre; il quále condótto in presénza del pápa, dísse, beatíssimo padre, domándo perdóno a vóstra santità di quánto ho fatto contra'l mio véscovo, per giustificármi d'úna calúnnia imputátami a tórto essendone io innocentíssimo. Il pápa che non sapéva núlla di quésto differénte, gli rispóse: non avéte ragióne di prendérvela cól vóstro véscovo; ma vi vogliámo parlár d'áltro. Siéte accusáto d'aver dissipáto i béni del convénto. Il póvero Agostiniáno senténdosi rinfacciár' un tal fállo dal pápa, esclamò: O beatíssimo pádre, con licénza di vóstra santità, non si troverà mái ch''io ábbia fátto tórto alcúno álla mia religióne. Allóra 'l pápa con fínta vóce disdegnósa, soggiúnse: Ancór ardíte negárlo? non è véro ch'avéte dáto in préstito diéci scúdi ad un pádre Francescáno, nè mái più gli avéte riavúti? è tróppo véro, beatíssimo pádre, lo credévo un galantuómo; ma ho conosciuto poi ch'éra un fúrbo. Piáno, piáno, dísse 'l pápa, lo conosciámo, e ci ha dáto órdine di soddisfárvi, e quéllo siámo nói. Il pádre Procuratóre confúso al maggiór ségno, prostrátosi a térra, domandáva perdóno: súbito 'l pápa gli ordinò di rizzársi in piédi, pói gli parlò in quésta maniéra: vói ci accog-

Digitized by Google

accoglièste in tempo délla nóstra disgrázia nel vóstro convénto, nélla vóstra cámera; vi accoglierémo nel nóstro palázzo, nélla nóstra cámera: inténdo che siéte in litígio col vóstro véscovo, la' caúsa non và del pári, bisógna che ci váda, e adésso vi nominiámo véscovo, assegnándovi un vescováto trà i buóni non mediócre.

D' un cáso Fortuito.

UN Muratóre cádde per disgrázia d'un álto tétto dóve égli lavoráva, e per fortúna súa cascò addossò ad un uómo che sedéva di sótto: così, sénza fársi mólto mále, ammazzò quel póver' uòmo. Il figlinólo del quále fece citár' avánti al gíudice criminále il Muratóre, accusándolo d'omicídio. Ma 'l Muratóre si difése in quésto módo, dicéndo: amíco, se ío ho peccáto, ne vóglio fár la peniténza; mónta tu stésso in quel luógo d'ónde io caddi: ed io sederò dóve sedéva túo pádre, così precipitándoti abbásso, ammázzami, se tu puói, che io ne sóno contènto.

D' un Pittóre.

UN Pittóre monstrándo un cattivo quádro in presénza a mólti Pittóri di gran grído, si pregiáva d'avérlo finíto in pochíssimo témpo; il che senténdo APE'LLE, gli disse piacevolménte: non occórre che tu ci díca d'avérlo finíto in póco témpo, che 'l quádro medésimo lo díce abbastánza da per se.

D' úno Scultóre.

DISEGNA'NDO i cónsoli di Firénze di far' una státua, chiamárono Donátello, famóso ed eccellénte Scultóre, il quále intéso 'l diségno, domandò per la fattúra cinquánta scúdi. I cónsoli sénza proférirgli núlla, la diédero a far' ad un' áltro Scultóre mediócre. Costúi fátta che l'ebbe, il méglio che sèppe, ne domandò ottánta scúdi. Maravigliátisi i cónsoli, gli díssero che quésto era un burlársi di loro, giacchè Donatello, uómo

Digitized by Google

tánto illústre, non avéva domandáto per fárla più di cinquánta. In sómma non poténdosi accordáre, rimísero la caúsa ad ésso Donatéllo, il quále sentenziò che i cónsoli dovéssero pagáre settánta scúdi. Del che alterátisi, ricordándogli ch'égli medésimo di cinquánta s'éra vòlúto contentáre; Donatéllo graziosaménte disse: è véro, mi potévo contentáre, perchè avréi fátto la státuta in ménо d'un mése: ma quésto póver' uómo che a péna potrébbe éssere mío scoláre, v'è státo più di séi mési. Così Donatéllo si vendicò argutaménte dell' ingiúria ricevúta da' cónsoli.

D'un Contadíno.

UN Contadíno non potétte contenérsi di rídere nel vedér passár l' arcivéscovo di Bológna, accompagnáto da un cérto número di soldáti. L'arcivéscovo accortósene vólle sapér la ragióne délle súe rísa, e domandátogli perchè ridésse così, il Contadíno rispóse, che gli paréva cósa strána, ch'un arcivéscovo caminásse armáto, ed accompagnáto, non da préti, ma da úna man di soldáti. Soggiúnse allóra l'arcivéscovo: sáppi balórdo, ch' io sóno dúca, ed arcivéscovo insiéme; ch'in chiésa vádo vestíto da arcivéscovo, e díco l'offízio col cléro: ma in campágna vádo da dúca co' miéi soldáti. Ho intéso, monsignóre, replicó 'l Contadíno, ma dítemi in grázia, quándo 'l signór dúca andrà a cása del Diávolo, che sarà del signór arcivéscovo.

D'úna Dónna.

UN uómo virtuóso, e ben fátto, sposò una Dónna brutta per rispètto délla sua dóte, e per ragióne d'alcúni vantággi che quésta gli promettéva. Póchi giórni dópo 'l matrimónio la nuóva spósa s' innamorò d'un giovinétto, che spésso introducéva in cása. Il maríto accortósene, ed avéndo cólto la móglie all' improvíso insiéme col suo Drúdo, le dísse; che necessità v' era che tu ti cercássi un' uómo a spése del tuo béne, se n'hái trováto úno che ti fá 'l servízio grátis?

D'una

Digitized by Google

D' úna Zíngara.

UNA Zíngara dópo avér piánto a dirótte lágrime la mórte di súo marito, capitáno dei Zíngari, cioè di quéllo che tra i fúrbi éra státo 'l maggiór fúrbo; diéde órdine ad un amíço del defúnto, che vestísse 'l megliór vestíto del mórto, & andásse in chiésa a dar gli órdini per le esséquie, e che dicésse ch' essèndo 'l defúnto capitáno di nobilissima, e ricchíssima stírpe, tutt' i préti v'interveníssero, acciò si facéssero con maggiór pómpa, e decóro, confórme avéva ordináto 'l Zingaro. Vénnero i préti, accompagnárono, e portárono 'l cadávere del capitáno alla sepoltúra. Finíte le esséquie, vénne 'l sagristáno a domándar la pága. La Zíngara vedúta la sómma importár' assái più di quélla che s'éra immaginàta, dísse: è ragionévole, signóre, che ciaschedúno ábbia 'l suo dovére, e quésto soleva spésso díre la buóna ánima di mío maríto, che m'ha lasciáto alquánti béni; e giacchè, signór mío, tutt' i préti sóno concórsi alle esséquie del morto, vi prégo avvisárli, acciò véngano ánche tútti a ricévere 'l pagaménto. I préti intéso l'intènto délla Zíngara, tornárono tútti nel luógo délla sepoltúra, dóve con simuláte lágrime s'era fermáta la trúppa de Zíngari. Giúnti che vi fúrono, la scaltra Zíngara chiamò súa fíglia, e le dísse: fíglia mía cára, restiámo debitrici a quésti signóri ch'hanno cantáto, e pregáto per l' ánima di vóstro pádre. Giacchè hánno cantáto per l' ánima di mio pádre, rispóse la fíglia, così informata dálla mádre, bisógna soddisfárli. Cantáte voi, ed io ballerò; e ció dicéndo, si mise a cantáre la mádre, ed intórno alla fóssa ballándo i Zíngari con la fíglia, col cánto, e col bállo, pagárono i préti.

D'un nóbile Románo.

IL poéta E'nnio ordinò alla súa sérva che dicésse ad un nóbile Románo che picchiáva alla pórta, ch' ei non éra in cása. Il nóbile benchè póco innánzi avésse con gli ócchi próprj vísto entráre 'l poéta in cása: ricevúta ch'ébbe la rispósta délla sérva, si partì, dicéndole: mi dispiáce di mólto che 'l vostro padróne no sia in cása.

Alcún;

Digitized by Google

Alcúni giórni di là, il poéta andò dal gentiluómo per parlárgli di cósa di gran conseguénza, con speránza di ritrováre, e patrocínio, ed ajúto ne suói urgénti bisógni apprésso del nóbile. Nél medésimo tempo che picchiò alla pórta, s' affacciò alla finéstra 'l nóbile e disse al poéta: il padróne non è in cása. Cóme può égli non éssere in cása, giacchè lo védo, e mi párla, replicò 'l poéta, il nóbile gli soggiúnse; creciétti io ultimaménte álla túa serva, deh perchè non mi vuói créder' a me stésso? sáppi adúnque ch'io sóno in cása per áltri, ma non per te.

D' un Soldáto.

UN Soldáto ritrovándosi in álto máre con sua móglie in témpo d'úna grandíssima tempésta, víde che i marinári gittávano a tútto potére, quánte cose venívano lóro nélle máni, non avéndo rispétto alcúno per qualsivóglia sórte di mercanzía; ánzi gridávano tutti che si gittássero quánto prima le cóse più grávi, se non volévano pérdere la víta, ed i béni insiéme; il che udíto dal Soldáto prése súbito la móglie, é la gittò nel máre, dicéndo niúna cósa éssergli in quésto móndo nè più gráve, nè più incómodo di sua móglie.

In Lóde del Matrimónio.

IL Matrimónio è státo istituíto nel Paradíso terréstre, non meritándo veraménte d'éssere stabilíto in luógo men riguardévole. L'anéllo matrimoniále con la súa rotondità dinóta, che siccóme la rotondità è infiníta, così infiníto è 'l conténto che déve ésser concordeménte fra 'l maríto, e la móglie.

Nel sacrifízio di Giunóne, Déa del Matrimónio, i sacerdóti di quei témpi gittávano 'l fiéle degli animáli diétro agli altári, per dimonstráre, che nel Matrimónio non déve ésser' amaritúdine.

Apprésso gli Antíchi giudiziósi fù prima onoráta Giunóne, poi Vénere, e Cúpido, voléndo significáre che 'l Matrimónio figuráto per Giunóne déve andár' innánzi a tutt' i piacéri.

Perchè

Digitized by Google

Perchè Giove s' innamorò di bellézze mortáli.

GIO'VE scendéva spésso in térra, sótto la fórma or di quésto, or di quell' animále, perchè l' ésser maritáto con Giunóne, gli éra di tánta nója, che più tósto si contentáva di star in térra sótto fórma d'animále, servéndo a mortále bellézza, che nel ciélo alla presénza délla noiósa móglie reggéndo l'univérso. Lúca Assarino díce a quésto propósito quándo trátta dei disgústi che náscono trà Marito e móglie: che chi comíncia a far l'amóre con úna dónna, con intenzióne di pigliárla per móglie, si può díre ch' égli arruóta 'l férro per uccídersi da se stésso.

Amánte incostánte.

ISABE'LLA Andreíni díce nélle sue léttere; che gli amánti incostánti fánno cóme lo spécchio, che ricéve túttе le immágini, e non ne ritiéne alcúna.

Dónne a che son buóne.

NEL Rômolo di Malvézzi si légge, che le dónne in cása póssono ajutáre, fuóri non fánno se non impedíre. E addúce per ragióne, che 'l menárle a spásso & ai diporti, o condúrle álle féste, muóve talóra chi le véde, se sóno brútte, a disprézzo; se belle, a libídine. E con túttо che sian' onestíssime, bisógna ricordársi, che l' onestà e un colór delicáto, che téme l'ária, ed un cristállo che s'appánna per guárdo impúro di colóro ch' hanno agitáta la ménte dálle lascívie. Dévono per quésto fuggírsi le occasióni del perícolo, dóve 'l perícolo è dell' onóre. Quándo Isabélla Andréini párla dell' onóre, díce che,

Il seggio dell' uómo è la térra,
De' pésci, l'ácqua,
Dégli uccélli, l'ária,
Délla dónna, l' onóre.

Natúra

Digitized by Google

Natúra, e costúmi de' Francési.

ADRIA'NO Negozínte, dottíssimo astrólogo, e di profondíssimo ingégno, díce nélle congettúre astrológiche, scrítte di suo próprio púgno, che la spíca nobilíssima Stélla, e benéfica, ha domínio speciále sópra 'l régno di Fráncia. Il che facilméntе si può compréndere dálla proprietà de' suói influssi conveniénti mólto alla natúra, e costúmi di quésta nazióne, Mercuríale, Veneréa, a Marziále; imperrocchè sóno i Francési, Mercuriáli per l'indústria, curiosità, agilità, inconstánza, eloquénza, e vivacità, dell' ingégno, e perfezióne in túttе le árti. Veneréa, per l'ornaménto, civiltà, elegánza, polizía, gentilézza, ed inclinazióne alle delízie. Marziále, per il génio bellicóso ed essercízio militáre in cui non cédono in valóre ad alcúna nazióne antíca, e moderna.

Simpatía, ed Antipatía.

SICCO'ME la Matrígna per sovérchio ódio non discérne la virtù del figliástro, così la mádre per sovérchio amóre, non comprénde i difetti del figliuólo.

Digitized by Google

COSTUMI.

DE'

FRANCESI, TEDESCHI,

ITALIANI,

SPAGNUOLI, ED INGLESI.

IN COSTUMI.

IL Francése è cortése,
Il Tedésco benévolo,
L' Italiáno civíle,
Lo Spagnuólo disprezzánte,
L' Inglése altiéro.

IN STATURA.

Il Francése è di bel gárbo,
Il Tedésco gránde,
L' Italiáno mediócre,
Lo Spagnuólo píccolo,
L' Inglése di bélla presénza.

IN VESTITI.

Il Francése è novatóre,
Il Tedésco imitatóre,
L' Italiáno meschíno,
Lo Spagnuólo lesinánte,
L' Inglése spenditóre.

IN PASTI.

Il Francése è delicáto,
Il Tedésco bevitóre,
L' Italiáno sóbrio,
Lo Spagnuólo scárso,
L' Inglése pródigo.

IN UMORE.

Il Francése è motteggiatóre,
Il Tedésco affábile,
L' Italiáno piacévole,
Lo Spagnuólo gráve,
L' Inglése mutábile.

IN

Digitized by Google

IN BELLE'ZZA.

Il Francése è bell' uómo,
Il Tedésco non gli céde,
L' Italiáno nè bello nè brútto,
Lo Spagnuólo ha del' brútto,
L' Inglése dell' ángelo.

IN CONSI'GLIO.

Il Francése non è lénto,
Il Tedésco è piú tárdo,
L' Italiáno è sottíle,
Lo Spagnuólo cautelóso,
L' Inglése risolúto.

IN SCRITTU'RA.

Il Francése párla béne, scríve méglio,
Il Tedésco scríve molto,
L' Italiáno sodaménte,
Lo Spagnuólo póco, e buóno,
L' Inglése dottaménte.

IN SCIE'NZA.

Il Francése sa di tútto,
Il Tedésco è maéstro,
L' Italiáno e dótto,
Lo Spagnuólo è profóndo,
L' Inglése filósofo.

IN RELIGIO'NE.

Il Francése è zelánte,
Il Tedésco religióso,
L' Italiáno ceremonióso,
Lo Spagnuólo superstizióso,
L' Inglése è divóto.

IN ARDI'RE.

Il Francése è cóme un' áquila,
Il Tedésco cóme un' orso,
L' Italiáno cóme úna vólpe,
Lo Spagnuólo cóme un' elefánte,
L' Inglése cóme un lióne.

IN SERVITU'.

Il Francése è fedéle,
Il Tedésco buón compágno,
L' Italiáno rispettóso,
Lo Spagnuólo soggétto,
L' Inglése schiávo.

IN

IN MATRIMO'NIO.

Il Francése è líbero,
Il Tedésco è padróne,
L' Italiáno carceriére,
Lo Spagnuólo è tiránno,
L' Inglése servitóre.

LE DO'NNE.

In Fráncia, son le dáme fastóse,
In Germánia, rispármiano, e son frédde,
In Itália, prigionére, e cattíve,
In Ispágna, schiáve, ed amórose,
In Inghiltérra, regíne, e virtuóse.

Dicéva Cárlo-Quínto che parlerébbe.

IN LI'NGUA.

Francése ad un' amíco,
Tedésco al súo cavállo,
Italiáno alla súa signóra,
Spagnuólo a Dío,
Inglése agli uccèlli.

Digitized by Google

EPITE'TTI

DE'LLE

CITTA PIU PRINCIPA'LI D'ITA'LIA.

Róma la Sánta.
Nápoli la Gentíle.
Firénze la Bélla.
Génova la Supérba.
Venézia la Rícca.
Pádoua la Dótta.
Bológna la Grássa.
Miláno la Gránde.
Ravénna l' Antíca.

Nómi délle Accadémie d' Itália.

IN RO'MA, Umorísta, Lincéi, Fantástici, Arcádi.
FIRE'NZE, la Crósca, Immóbili, Infocáti, Alteráti, Rinováti.
BOLO'GNA, Geláti, la Nótte, Ottúsi, Oziósi, Indómiti.
VENE'ZIA, Incógniti, Discordánti, Gussóni.
PA'DOUA, Incógniti, Ordíti, Inflammáti, Ricovráti.
NA'POLI, Ardénti, Oziósi, Intronáti.
GE'NOUA, Addormentáti.
SIE'NA, Intronáti, Filomáti, Fisiocrítici.
LU'CA, Oscúri, Fréddi.
MILA'NO, Nascósti.
MA'NTOVA, Invaghíti.
MACERA'TA, Catenáti.
ALESSA'NDRIA, Immóbili.
ANCO'NA, Caliginósi.
BRE'SCIA, Occúlti.
CESE'NA, Offuscáti.
FABRIA'NO, Disuníti.
FAE'NZA, Filippóni.
FE'RMO, Raffrancáti.
FERRA'RA, Eleváti.
PA'RMA, Innominati.
PAVI'A, Assidáti.
PERU'GIA, Insensáti.
TREVI'SO, Perseveránti.
VERO'NA, Filarmónici.
VICE'NZA, Olímpici.
VITE'RBO, Ostináti.
URBI'NO, Assordíti.

Digitized by Google

A SHORT INTRODUCTION TO THE ITALIAN POETRY.

In this Treatise we shall consider, 1. The Italian Versification. 2. The different Compositions in Verse. 3. The Poetic Licences.

I. *Of the Italian Versification.*

THE Italian verse consists of a certain number of syllables, and rhyme. But they have also their blank verse.

There are eleven syllables in the heroic verse, which is used in Epic poems, theatrical pieces, sonnets, &c.

Non è questa colèi, che coll' ardóre.

Besides the heroic, there are lesser verses, consisting of eight syllables, as

A sfogár l' antica péna.

Or of seven, as

Amór nelle paróle.

Or of six, as

A'lmo spendór mirái.

Or of five, as

Chi può mirárvi,

Or of four, as

In diú módi.

The Italian verse, of whatever number of syllables it consists, has always the accent on the penultima, except it be what they call *versi sdrúccioli*, or slippery verses,

Digitized by Google

third rhyme to each other; the second rhymes to the first and third of the second stanza; and the second of the second stanza, to the first and third of the third stanza. But at the end of the canto or poem there must be a stanza of four verses, in order that every verse may have its rhyme; as,

Gli ánni son' al volár, sì liévi e présti,
Ch' al fine áltro non è ch' un vólver d' ócchi.
Quésto, che poi vi láscia afflitti e mésti.
Pero pria che l' offésa in noi trabócchi,
Armáte 'l pétto incóntro álla fortúna,
Che váno e l' aspettár che 'l colpo scócchi.
Così dicéndo, al rággio de la lúna,
Che gli ócchi mi feria, rivólse il víso,
Poi salutò le stélle ad úna ad úna;
E liéto se n' andó nel paradíso.

Sannazar.

There are also *térza ríma* in the verse called *sdrúcciolo*, or slippery; as

Quantúnque O pico mio si vécchio, e cárico
Di sénno, e di pensiér, ch'en te si cóvano,
Deh piángi or méco, e préndi il mio rámmarico:
Nel móndo óggi gli amíci non si tróvano, &c.

A fourth manner of ranging their heroic verses in Italian, is what they call *quarta rima*, when the first rhymes to the fourth, and the second to the third. This is made use of chiefly in elegies.

Cóntra gli assálti di Nettun spumánti,
Quándo Aústro a sdégno, ed Aquilóne il móve;
E cóntra i lámpi e 'l fulminár di Gióve
Ha l' ingégno mortále, ónde si vánti,
Ma cóntra i cólpi délla fálce oscúra,
Che árma di mórte l' implacábil máno,
Inváno ingégno s'affática, inváno
Stáme di víta contrastár pocúra.

Chiabréra.

But the sonnet is the favourite composition of the Italians: it is divided into two *quaternárii* consisting each

Digitized by Google

each of four verses, and two *terzétti*, each of three verses. The two *quatternárii* are ranged two different ways: the first and most usual is, when the first rhymes to the fourth, fifth, and eighth, and the second to the third, sixth, and seventh. The other, less usual, when the first rhymes to the third, sixth and eighth; the second to the fourth, fifth, and seventh.

There are also two different sorts of arrangement, in regard to the two *terzétti*, or the six last verses; one is to make the three verses of the first *terzétto*, of three different rhymes; and the last *terzétto* answering to those three rhymes in whatever order you have a mind; as,

Sólo e pensóso i più desérti cámpi
Vo misurándo a pássi tárdi e lénti,
E'gli ócchi pórto per fuggíre intènti,
Dóve vestígio umán l' ar na stámpi.
Altro schérmo non tróvo, che mi scámpi
Dal manifésto accórger de la génti:
Perchè ne gli átti d' allegrézza spénti
Di fuór si légge, com' io déntro avvámpi.
Sì ch'io créda omái, che mónti e piógge,
E fiúmi e sélve sáppian, di che témpre
Sia la mía vita, ch' è celáta altrúi.
Ma pur sì áspre vie, nè sì selvágge
Cercár non so, ch' amór non vénga sémpre
Ragionándo con me, ed' io con lui.

Petrarch.

The other arrangement of the two *terzétti*, is to make the first verse rhyme to the third and fifth, and the second to the fourth and sixth; as,

Interdítte speránze, e van desío,
Pensiér falláci, incérte, e ciéche vóglie,
Lágrime tríste, e vói sospíri, e dóglie,
Dáte omái páce al lásso viver mío.
E s' al mio mál non vál fórza d' oblío;
Nè per disdégno il nódo si discióglie;
Prénda mórte di me l' último spóglie,
Pur ch' ábbia fín mio stato acérbo e río.
U'sin le stélle, e' l ciel tútte lor próve;
Che a quel ch' io sénto, mi parránno un giuóco;

Digitized by Google

Da sì profónda párte il duól si móve,
Gulta amór 'l árco, e le saétte, e 'l fóco:
Drizza il tuo ingégno, e le tue fórze altróve;
Che nóva piága in me non ha più lóco.

Sannazar.

In the two preceding sonnets the two *quaternarii* are ranged alike, that is, the first verse rhymes to the fourth, fifth, and eighth. We shall give here an instance of the other sort of *quaternárii*, where the first verse rhymes to the third, sixth and eighth; the second to the fourth, fifth, and seventh.

Se lamentár augélli, a vérdi frónde
Movér soavemente all' aúra estíva,
O róco mormorár di lúcid' ónde
S' ode d' úna fiorita, e frésca ríva;
Là v' io sóggia d' amor pensóso, e scríva,
Léi, che 'l ciél ne mostró, térra n' ascónde;
Véggio, ed ódo, ed intérdo: ch' áncor víva
Di sì lontáno a' sóspir miéi rispónde.
Deh! perch' innánzi témpo ti consúme?
Mi dice con pietáte: a che pur vérsi
Dágli ócchi tristi un dolorósò fiume?
Di me non piánger tu, ch' i miéi dì fórsi
Moréndo, etérni; e nell' etérno lúme,
Quándo mostrái di vhúder gli ócchi, apérsi.

Petrarch.

There are likewise other compositions, consisting of an intermixture of larger and smaller verses, which may be infinitely varied; some stanzas consisting of twelve or thirteen, some of seven, eight, or eleven verses. The most common are of twelve, which frequently consist of two sorts of verses, *viz.* those of eleven or seven syllables.

Sul púnto di mia mórte,
Occhi, d'un guárdo non mi fáte avári,
E sta di quéi, che sóno a vói men cári.
Con sollécito stúdio amór non térga
I rái di sua beltáte,

E col

Digitized by Google

E col riso, é col gióco, e col dilétto,
Nè di quélla dolcézza égli l' aspérga,
Nè di quélla pietáte,
Che altrúi ragióna i fréddi cor nel pétto;
Sólo un gíro negléttо
Nè fian moréndo i miéi sospír amári.

Chiabr.

There is also a singular beauty in stanzas of seven, eight, or eleven verses; examples of which may be seen in the Lyric Poets. Chiabréra particularly abounds with great variety in his *canzonétte*; as,

O'cchi armáti di splendóre,
O'nde amóre
Per beárle úrde le génti,
Se la giória del mirárvi
Giústo párvi
Che costár débba torménti.

Or,

Poichè amór fra l' érbe e i fióri
Tra dolcézze, e léti cénti,
Per temprár del cor gli ardóri
Scórti avéa gli accêsi amánti
Ne' sembiánti;
Lieto únch' éi con lor s'asside
Sull' erbétta, e schérza, e ride.

Or,

Córa di sélce alpéstra,
Férvido ad innasprír gli altrúi torménti,
Con nuóva crudeltáte
Omái stánza è mia déstra
In súlla lira ad iterár gli accénti
U' si.a sueglíur pietáte;
Nè femminil beltáte;
Spéra prégio sembiánte en Elicóna,
Se di quéi váglı fiór tésse coróna
Per tuo gentil valóre.

Digitized by Google

Or,

Váni destri
Co' réi martíri
Non più ci stieno intórno;
Che pómpa, ed óstro?
Il viver nóstro
Puóssi chiamár un giórno
Cingiti Clóri di bel mirto adórno
E di rubini
Gospérgi i crini
Via più che lúcid' óro, e mirár cári.

Or,

Quándo l' Alba in oriénte,
L' álmo sol s'appréste a scórgere?
Giù dal már la veggiám sórgere,
Cinta in gónna rilucente,
Onde lámpi si diffóndono,
Che le stélle in ciélo escóndono.

The Italians are famous for their *madrigals*, which are a kind of epigram, in one stanza, composed of all sorts of verses, long and short, according to the fancy of the poet.

They have also their *vérso sciólto*, or blank verse, of eleven syllables, where the measure is observed without time, as the following:

E già, la Dío mercè lásciano i Péni
La lor fierézza; e la regína in prima
S' imbéve d'un affétto e d' úna ménte.

Annibal Cáro.

This verse is used in tragedy, and often in Epic poems.

IV. *Of the Poetic Licences.*

The Italians use very great liberties in their versification, not only as their poets adopt several words that are not allowed in prose; but likewise as they make such frequent

Digitized by Google

frequent use of elisions; these elisions are introduced for the sake of variety, but are never suffered at the end of a verse.

But they not only drop the final vowel before words beginning with a vowel, but even before those that commence with a consonant, as *fier' dracóni*, for *fiéri*; and sometimes they drop the consonant that precedes this final vowel, *animái* for *animáli*.

They likewise lengthen a great many words that have a grave accent on the final, by a adding an *e* or an *o*, as *fúe* for *fù*, *fèo* for *fè*, *póteo* for *potè*. It is customary with them also to have recourse to contractions and syncopés, as *pórre* for *pónere*, *pónno* for *póssono*, *vo'* for *vógliono*, *ú* for *óve*, and others, which may be learnt by the use of poets. Some words they write in a particular manner, as *súi* for *suói*, *núi* for *nói*, *feráte* for *ferite*, *féro* for *fúro*, *spéne* for *spéme*, &c. In short, there is hardly a language, not even excepting the Greek, that uses more figures or changes of words in their poetry, than the Italian.

Digitized by Google

A COLLECTION OF BEAUTIFUL PASSAGES

From the most celebrated Italian POETS.

Per cominciár un' impréſa. Guaríni nel Paſtór Fído.

CHI ben comíncia, ha la metà dell' ópra,
Nè si comíncia ben, se non dal ciélo.

Per persuadere ad amáre. Torquáto Tásso nell' Aminta, atto 1. *scéna* 1.

FORSE se tu gustássi úna solvólta
La millèssima párte délle gióie
Che gústa un cór' amáto riamándo.
Dirésti ripentíta sospirándo:
Perdúto è tútto 'l témpo
Che in amár non si spénde.
O mía fuggíta etáde;
Quánte védove nótti,
Quánti dì solitárj
Ho consumáto indárno,
Che si potéano impiegár in quést' úso!
Il qual più replicáto é più scáve.
Cángia, cángia consíglio,
Pazzarélla che séi,
Che 'l pentírsi da sézzo núlla gióva.

Idém, atto prímo, scena príma.

MOSTRO'MMI l'ómbra d'úna bréve nótte,
Allóra quél che 'l lungo córso, e 'l lúme
Di mille giórni non m'avéa mostráto.

D'un

Digitized by Google

D'un Médico.

IO batézzo da malígno,
O'gni mál che non inténdo,
La moneta in tánto préndo:
E depói tra me sogghígno;
Che vi sía génte si pázza,
Che stipéndii chi l' amázza?

Solilóquio d' Amarílli, nel Pástor Fído di Guarini.

O MIRTI'LLO, Mirtillo, ánima mía,
Se vedésti quí déntro,
Cóme, sta il cór di quésta
Che chiámi crudelíssima Amarílli;
So bén, che tu di léi
Quélla pietà che da léi chiédi, avrésti.
O ánime in amór tróppo infelíce?
Che gióva a te, cor mío, l'ésser amáto?
Che gióva a mè l'avér si cáro amánte?
Perchè crúdo destíno,
Ne disunísci tu, s'amór ne stríngе?
E tu perchè ne stríngi,
Se ne párte il destín, pérfido amóre?
O fortunáte vói fére selvágge,
A cúi l' álma natúra
Non diè légge in amár se non d'amóre.
Légge umána inumána,
Che dái per péna dell' amár la mórte!
" Se'l peccár è sì dólce,
" E'l non peccár sí necessário, o tróppo
" Imperfétta natúra,
" Che repúgni álla légge!
" O tróppo dúra légge,
" Che la natúra offénde!'
Ma che? póco áma altrúi, chi'l mórir téme,
Piacésse pur al ciél, Mirtíllo mío,
Che sol péna al peccár fósse la mórte!
Santíssima onestà, che sólo séi
D'alma ben nata inviolábil Núme:
Quest' amorósa vóglio,

Digitized by Google

Che svenáta ho col férro
Del tuo sánto rigór, qual innocénte
Víttima a te consácro.
E tu, Mirtíllo, ánima mía, perdóna
A chi t'è crúda sol dóve pietósa
E'sser non può: perdóna a quésta sóla
Ne' détti, e nel sembiánte
Rígida tua nemíca; ma nel córe
Pietosíssima amánte.
E se pur hái desío di vendicárti,
Deh! qual vendétta avér puói tu maggióre
Del tuo próprio dolóre;
Che se tu se'l cor mío,
Cóme séi pur malgrádo
Del ciélo, e délla térra,
Qualór piángi, e sospiri.
Quélle lágrime túe sóno il mío sángue,
Què sospíri, il mío spírto, e quélle péne,
E quel dolór che sénti,
Son miéi, non tuói torménti.

Le tre sórti d' Orológi addítan la mórte.

OMBRE, róte, ed aréne a pássi lénti,
Atre, dúre, minúte, il dì togliéte:
In línee, in térri, in atómi cadénti,
I móti, i córsi, I precipízj avéte.

Ombre letáli al víver mio nascénti
Róte crudéli, che l'età struggéte:
Aréne grávi à' míseri vivénti;
La péna, il crúcio, e'l péso mio voi siéte.

Tríplice mórte occúlta, edáce, e tríta,
Che présta ogn'óra, maniféstate, ingórda,
Lácci, strácci, perígli alla mia víta.

Quí m'intíma l' orróre un' ómbra sórda:
Ciéca la róta il mio passággio addíta:
E póca pólve il mio morír raccórda.

Digitized by Google

D'un che patisce di piétra.

SON nélle réni mie dúnque formáti
I dúri sássi, alla mía mórte infésti;
Che fánsi ógn'or più grávi, e più molésti,
C'han de' miei giorni términi segnáti.

S'áltri con biánche piétre i dì beáti
Nóta, io nóto con quéste i dì funésti:
Sérvono i sássi a fabricár, ma quésti
A distrúgger mia fábrica son náti.

Ahi che pósso chiamár mia sórte dúra!
S' ella di piétre ha préso a lapidármi
Nélle párti di déntro la natúra.

So che sù quéste piétre arruóta l' ármi
La mórte; e ch'a formár la sepoltúra,
Nélle víscere mie náscono i mármi.

Descrizióne d' un Cristo logáto álla Colónna. Madrigále.

DI mármo è la Colónna,
Di mármo son gli émpj minístri, e réi!
E tu púre, signór di mármo séi!
Mármo élla è per natùra,
Mármo quèi per durézza,
Tu mármo, per costánza e per fortézza,
Ed io, che di pietáde, e di cordóglio
Spettatór ne rimángo,
Mármo son, se non piángo.

O'cchi Bélli. Guarini ne' suoi Madrigáli.

O'CCHI, stélle mortáli,
Minístri de' miéi máli.
Che'n sógno ánco mostráte,
Che'l mio morír bramáte,
Se chiúsi m' uccid te.
Apérti che farète?

Digitized by Google

Amóre. Ligi Almándi.

CHI vuol dar légge all' amoróso nódo.
Non sa ben qual sia la sua natúra.
L'un d'úna cósa, ed io dell' áltra gódo,
Chi áma lo spírto, e chi sol la figúra.
Chi dilétta la vísta, chi l' udire,
Chi sfóga ógni desír sólo in servire.

Dúbbj Amorósi. Petrárca.

S'AMOR non é, che dúnque è quel ch'io sénto?
Ma s' egli è Amór, per Dío che cósa è quále?
S'è buóna, ónd' è l' effetto áspro, mortále?
S'è ria, ónd'è sí dólce ógni torménto?

S'a mia vóglia árdo, ond'è l piánto, e'l laménto.
S'a mal mio grádo, il lamentár che vale?
O viva mórte! o dilettóso mále!
Cóme puói tant' in me, s'io no'l consénto?

E s' io'l consénto, a gran tórto mi dóglio.
Frà si contrárj vénti, in frále barca
Mi trovo in álto már sénza govérno;

Si liéve di sapér, d'errór si cárca,
Chi medésmo non so, quel ch'io mi vóglio?
E trémo a mézza státe, ardéndo il vérno.

Amánte all' amáta. Guarini.

FELICE che vi míra,
Ma più felíce chi per vói sospíra.
Felicíssimo pói.
Ben' ébbe amica stélla,
Chi per dónna sì bélla,
Può far conténto in un l' ócchio, e'l desío
E sicúro può dir, quel cor' è mío.

Amánte Perfído. Aciósto.

L'AMANTE per avér quel che desía,
Sénza guardár che Dio tutt'óde, e véde,

Avvilúppa

Digitized by Google

Avvilúppa promésse, giuraménti;
Che túttì spárgon pói per l'ária i vénti.

Amánte Timido. Tásso.

El che modésto è sì, com' éssa è béllа,
Brámа assái, póco spéra, e núlla chiéde,
Ne sa scoprírsi e non ardísce; ed élla
O lo sprézza, o no 'l véde, o non s'avvéde,
Così sin' ora il mísero ha servíto,
O non vísto, o mal nóto, o mal gradíto.

Marini nélla Canzóne sull' Idalo.

Tre'ma parlándo, e i détti
Fa trónchi, ed imperfétti;
Impallidisce, e pói rivién vermíglio,
E mirándo il suo Sóle, abássa il cíglio.

Dónna Timida. Ariósto.

Con cor tremánte, e con tremánte piéde
Fúgge la tapinélla, e non sa dóve;
In ciò ch'intórno ascólta, in ciò che véde,
Véde di nuóvo orrór, sembiánze nóve.
Liéve arboscél, cúi débil aúra siéde.
Liéve fóglia che cáde, o che si scóte,
Di terrór dóppio, il dúbbio cor percóte.

Guarini nel Pastór Fido. Átto 1. scéna 4.

La misera tacéndo
Per sovérchio desío tútta si strígne,
Così pérde beltà, se'l fóco dúra,
E perdéndo stagión, pérde ventúra.

Amánte assomigliáto ad un Orológio. Petrácci.

Orolo'gio son' ío,
I pensíer son le róte,
E la squílla è il mio córe.

Digitized by Google

Ove lásso percóte
L'óre, e i minúti col suo strál' amóre:
E la vóstra bellézza ch'io sospíro,
E il cáro céntro, intórno a cui m'aggíro.

Amóre assomigliáto all A'pe. Tásso nell' Aminta.

Pi'cciola è l A'pe, e fa col picciol mórso
Pur grávi, e pur moléste le ferite.
Ma qual cósa è più picciola d'amóre,
Se in ógni bréve spázio éntra, e s'ascónde
In ogni bréve spázio: or sótto all' ómbra
Délle palpébre, or tra minúti rívi
D'un bióndo críne, or déntro le pozzétte,
Che fórma un dólce ríso in bélla guáncia.
E pur fa tánto grándi, e si mortáli,
O così immedicábili le piághe.

Dónna com' è fátta. Tásso.

Or non sai tu com' è fátta la dónna?
Fúgge, e fuggéndo vuól, ch' áltri giúnga.
Niéga, e negándo vuól, ch' áltri si tóglia.
Púgna, e pugnándo vuól, ch' áltri la vínca.

Ipérbole.

Se gli álberi del móndo fósser pénne,
Il ciélo fósse cárta, il máre inchióstro,
Non basterían descrívere la mínima
Párte délle vóstre perfezióni.
Se tánte língue avéssi, e tánte vóci,
Quánt' ócchi il ciélo, e quánte aréne il máre,
Perderían túttе il suóno, e la favélla,
Nel díre a pién le vóstre lodi imménse.

Guarini.

Guarini nel Pastór Fído. Atto 5. scéna 2.

Se le paróle míe
Fósser ánime túttе

E tutte

Digitized by Google

E tutte al vóstro onóre
Oggì le consecrássi, alle dovúte
Grazie, non basterían di tánto dóno.

Dónna Picciola. Tásso.

PICCIOLETTA Isabélla,
Picciola, o gránde nominár degg'io
La tua beltà ch'fiámma il mio desío?
Che picciola la frónte, il crín, le cíglia,
Picciolétta hai la máu, la bócca, il piéde,
I pássi, le fattézze, i béi sembiánti,
Gli ábiti, il vélo, i guánti,
La camerétta, il letticiuól, la séde;
Ma pur gran maravíglia,
Frà tánte cóse picciole si véde,
Che quél, che rimirándo io sénto al córe,
Non è picciolo ardóre.

Descrizióne d'un Cespúglio. Ariósto.

E'CCO non lúngi un bel Cespúglio véde,
Di spín fioríti, e di vermíglie róse,
Che de le líquid' ónde a spécchio siéde,
Chiúso dal sol fra l'álte quércie ombróse:
Così vóto nel mézzo, che concéde
Frésca stánza fra l'ómbre più nascóse,
E la fóglia coi rámi in módo e místa,
Che'l sol non v'éntra, non che mínor vísta,
Déntro létto vi fan ténere erbétte,
Ch'invítano a posár chi s'appresénta.

Descrizíone dell' E'co.

UNA Nínfa ch'al dír d'altrúi rispónde,
Ma comminciáre a dir élla non puóte,
Réplica il tútto, ma il parlár confónde,
E láscia sólo undír l'ultime nóte;
Che méntre l'úno e l'áltro dir, atténde,
Il parlár, che precéde non s'inténde.

Costéi

Digitized by Google

Costéi ch' Eco chiamóssi, e chiáma ancóra,
Che parla sol dall' altrúi dir commóssa.
Voce sóla non fù níuda com'óra;
Ma forma e quantità di cárne, e d'óssa,
Benchè com'ór quell' infelice allóra,
D'esser prima al parlár non avéa póssa;
L'ira il princípio al dir tólto le avéa,
Dè la sempre gelósa, e mésta Déa.

Bácio di vécchio sdentáto. Marini.

I SUOI canúti amóri,
Véccho sdentáto a la sua Clízia avánte.
Cantáva Alcón pargoleggiándo amánte;
L'udì la Nínfa; e'n lui vólto il bel víso,
Dísse con un sorríso:
Ben'a te si convién di Cígno il vónto,
Poi c'hai di Cígno il nel, di cígno il cánto.
Or de l'álta Armonía,
Io vo' che quésto bácio il prémio sía,
Che se mi báci, i báci
Temér non déggio almén, che sien mordáci.

Semplicità ingannáta. Ariósto, cánto 32. stanza 39.

FACIL ti fù ingannár una Donzélla,
Di cúi tu il signór éri ídolo, e Núme;
A cui potévi far con túe paróle
Ciéder, che fosse scúro, e fréddo il sóle.

In lóde délle Dónne. Ariósto.

LE Dónne antíche hánno mirábil cóse
Fátto ne' l'armi e ne' le sácre múse;
E di lor' ópre belle, e glorióse,
Gran lúme in túlto il móndo si diffúse.
Arpalíce, e Camílla son famóse,
Perché in battáglia érano espérte, ed úse:
Safo, e Corínna, perchè fúron dótte,
Spléndono illústri, e mai non véggon nótte.
Le Dónne son venúte in excellénza
Di ciascún' árte ov'hánno pósto cúra.

E qua-

Digitized by Google

E qualúnque a l'istória ábbia avverténza,
Ne sénte ancór la fáma non oscúra.
Se'l móndo n'è gran témpo státo sénza,
Non però sémpre il mal influsso dúra,
E fórse ascosi han lor débiti onóri
L'invídia, o il non sapér dégli scrittóri.

Bén mi par di vedér, ch'al sécol nóstro
Tánta virtù fra bélle dónne emérga,
Che può dar ópra a cárte, ed all' inchióstro,
Perchè ne' futúri ánni si dispérga;
E perché odióse língue, il mal dir vostro
Con vóstra etérna infámia si sommérga,
E le lor lódi appariránno in guísa,
Che di gran lúnga avanzerán Marfísa.

In lóde délla Libertà pastorále. Guarini.

CA'RE sélve beáte,
E voi solínghi, e tacitúrni orróri,
Di ripóso, e di páce albérghi véri!
O quánte volentiéri
A rivedérvi io tórno! e se le stélle
M' avésser dáto in sórte
Di víver' a me stéssa, e di far víta
Conforme a le mie vóglie,
I' gia co' cámpi Elísi,
Fortunáto giardín de' Semidéi,
La vóstra ómbra gentíl non cangerêi
" Che se bén dritto míro
" Quésti béni mortáli,
" Altro non son che máli.
" Men, n'ha, chi più posséde,
" Ricchézze nò, ma lácci
" De l'altrúi libertáte.
" Che val ne' più verdi ánni
" Títolo di bellézza,
" O fáma d'onestáte,
" E'n mortál sángue nobiltà celéste!
" Tánte grázie del ciélo, e de la térra!
" Quì larghi, e liéti cámpi,

" E là

Digitized by Google

" E là felici piágge,
" Fecóndi páschi, e più fecóndo arménto,
" Se'n tánti béni il cor non é contento ?"
Felice pastorélla,
Cui cínge a péna il fiánco
Póvera sí, ma schiétta,
E cándida gonnélla:
Ricca sol di se stéssa,
E délle grázie di natúra adórna
Che'n dólce povertáde
Nè povertà conósce, nè i disági
De le ricchézze sénte;
Ma tútto quel posséde,
Per cui desío d'avér non la torménta,
Núda sì, ma conténta.
Co' dóni di natúra,
I dóni di natúra ánco nudríva,
Col látte, il látte avvíva,
E col dólce del' Api.
Condísce il mél de le natíe dolcézze.
Quel fónte, ond' élla béve,
Quel sólo ánco la bágna, e la consíglia;
Pága léi, pago il móndo:
Per léi di némbi il ciél s'oscúra indárno,
E di grándine s'árma.
Che la sua povertà nulla pavénta:
Núda sí, ma conténta.
Sólo úna dólce, e d'ógni affánno sgómbra
Cúra le sta nel córe.
Pásce le vérdi erbétte.
La gréggia a léi comméssa, ed élla pásce
De' suói bégli ócchi il pastorél lo amánte;
Non quál le destináro
O gli uómini, o le stélle,
Ma quel le diéde amóre.
E tra l'ombróse piánte,
D'un favoríto lor Miréto adórno
Vaggheggiáta il vagheggia; nè per lúi
Sénte fóco d'amór, che non gli scópra.
Ne' della scópre ardor, ch' egli non sénta:
Núda sì, ma conténta.

O véra

Digitized by Google

O véra vitá, che non sa che sía,
Morire innánzi mórte.
Potéss'io pur cangiár téco mía sórte!

Amánte irresolúto. Canzonétta pastoréle.

MIO córe, che farémo?
Odierémo? amerémo?
Per lo dubbióso cálle
Dell' amorósa válle.
Andiámo, andiam, mio córe,
Dóve consíglia amóre.
Vága; nol niégo; e bélla
E' la mía pastorélla.
Ma non méno è crudéle;
E'mpia, ingráta, infedéle,
Odiámo: odíam, mío core;
Che lo consíglia amóre.
E' nol niégo; crudéle:
E'mpia; ingráta; infedéle,
Ma non mén vága e bélla
E'la mia pastorélla;
Amiámo, amiám, mio córe;
Che lo consíglia amóre.
Sópra tútte è vezzósa;
Piú d'ogn' áltra è festósa:
Ha módi amorosétti;
Costúmi ha leggiadrétti;
Amiámo, amiám, mio córe;
Che lo cománda amóre.

Stánze amoróse.

AMI A'M, o béll a Ióla,
Amiám: che 'l témpo vóla,
Velóce più che dárdo,
Che giúgne il liéve párdo.
Non è, non è immortále,
Ma fior caduto e frále,
Quel fiór di giovenézza,
La vóstra álta bellézza.

Qual

Digitized by Google

Qual la séra nell' ácque,
Il gran pianéta giácqu. ;
Tále, o più vágo ancóra,
Risórge coll' Auróra.
D' ombrósa e vérde fóglia
La selva il vérno spóglia:
E la stagión novélla
Gliéla rénde più bélla.
Dell' età nóstra il vérde
Mai più non si rinvérde;
La mórte a nóstra lúce
Ténebre etérne addúce.
E là giù nell' inférno,
In oblío sempitérno,
In sempitérno orróre,
Non si párla d'amóre.
Ah dúnque méntre líce,
Méntre non si disdíce:
Méntre ch' élla è vezzósa,
Cogliám d'amor la rósa.
Délla canúzia schiéra
A gli amánti sevéra;
Sprézzin váni romóri
Nostri amorósi córi.
Amiám; o bélla Ióla,
Amiám: che'l tempo vóla,
Velóce più che dárdo.
Che giúgne il liéve párdo.

Capríccio amoróso.

CHI può mirárvi
E non amárvi?
Jer vi mirái,
Vi contemplái.

Si, da dovvéro,
Son prigioniéro,
Délla Gentile,
Bella Isifile.

Ma in ógni clíma,
Via più si stíma,
Del conquistáre
Il conserváre.

E prénde in váno
Leggiádra máno,
Se di ténere
Non ha potére.

Dúnque

Digitized by Google

Dúnque sentíte.
Se lo gradíte,
Qual vo' che sía.
La dónna mía.

Sia graziosa,
Vága e vezzósa?
E sia modésta,
Non però mésta.

Non sia ritrósa,
Non isdegnósa
Ma ritrosétta,
E sdegnosétta.

Picciol martíre
Crésce il desíre;
Nè il dólce è cáro
Sénza l'amáro.

Non sía crudéle,
Non infedéle:
E non si' ingráta,
Nè dispietáta.

Ch'io sóno ardente,
Ch'io son fervénte,
Tútto amoróso,
Affettuóso.

E'l Dío d'amóre
Non ha amatóre
Di me più dégno.
Nel suo bel régno.

Pietosaménte,
Ma vagaménte,
So lacrimáre,
E sospiráre.

Délle mie amáte
Nélle brigáte
In dólci módi
Canto le lódi.

In rima e'n vérso
Per l' univérso
Délla mía dáma
Spárgo la fáma.

Nol niégo, amánte
Sóno incostánte;
E son gelóso,
E capriccióso.

Nè per rivále,
Gióve immortále
Rè dégli Déi
Io soffriréi.

E'cco, ben, mìo,
Qual mi son'io,
Qual vóglio sía
La dónna mìa.

Digitized by Google

A Collection of Superscriptions of Italian Letters.

IT is not my design to instruct you in the epistolary art, for in this every man follows his fancy, but to make you acquainted with titles and honourable appellations given to persons with whom we preserve an epistolary correspondence. But, since they are written with an abbreviation, I have here arranged them in an alphabetical order, that they may the more easily be understood.

Affmo.	*Affezionatíssimo.*
Affettuomo.	*Affettuosíssimo.*
Affettuota.	*Affettuosíssimaménte.*
Affta.	*Affezionáto.*
A.	*Altézza.*
Amatmo.	*Amatíssimo.* [*sima.*
V. A. Sermà.	*Vóstra Altézza Serenís-*
V. A. R.	*Vóstra Altézza Reále.*
Beatta.	*Beatitúdine.*
V. B.	*Vóstra Beatitúdine.*
Beatmo.	*Beatíssimo.*
Beatmo. Prte.	*Beatíssimo Pádre.*
Carmo.	*Carissimo.*
Carma.	*Carissima.*
Colmo.	*Colendíssimo.*
Cristmo.	*Cristianíssimo.*
Cristma.	*Cristianíssima.*
Divotmo.	*Divotíssimo.*
Eccta.	*Eccelléntе.*

Eccma.

Digitized by Google

Ecc^mo.	*Eccellentíssimo.*
Ecc^za.	*Eccellénza.*
V. Ecc^za.	*Vóstra Eccellénza.*
Em^mo.	*Eminentíssimo.*
Em^za.	*Eminénza.*
V. Em^za.	*Vóstra Eminénza.*
Ill^re.	*Illústre.*
Illma.	*Illustríssima.*
Illmo.	*Illustríssimo.*
M. M^tà.	*Maestà.*
S. M.	*Sua Maestà.*
M. Crist^ma.	*Maestà Cristianíssima.*
Mag^co.	*Magnífico.*
M^to.	*Mólto.*
Nrō.	*Nóstro.*
Obblig^mo.	*Obligatíssimo.*
Onor^do.	*Onorándo.*
Oss^mo.	*Osservandíssimo.*
Ptà	*Paternità.*
V. P.	*Vóstra Paternità.*
V. P. Rev^ma.	*Vóstra Paternità Reverendíssima.*
Pari^mo.	*Particolarissimo.*
Pré.	*Pádre.*
Prōne.	*Padróne.*
Prōna.	*Padróna.*
Rev^do.	*Reveréndo.*
Rev^mo.	*Reverendíssimo.*
Rev^ma.	*Reverendíssima.*
Riv^mo.	*Reveritíssimo.*
Stā.	*Santità.*
V. Stā.	*Vóstra Santità.*
Sant^mo.	*Santíssimo.*
Sant^mi.	*Santíssimi.*
Ser^mo.	*Serenissimo.*
Ser^tà	*Serenità.*
Serv^re.	*Servitóre.*
S^re.	*Signóre*, m. sing.

Sig^re.

Digitized by Google

Sig^re.	*Signóre*, m. sing.
S^ra.	*Signóra.*
S S^ri.	*Signóri.*
S S^re.	*Signóre*, f. plur.
V. S.	*Vossignoría.*
V. S. Illma.	*Vossignoría Illuſtríſſima.*
Ven^do.	*Venerándo.*

Of titles and honourable appellations used in Italian letters.

OBSERVE that the Italians put the date in the last line of the letter, and none but merchants and tradesmen put it at the top.

To the pope.

Alla santità di nóstro signóre Benedétto Decimoquárto. In the beginning of a letter, and in the discourse, *V. Santità*, or *V. Beatitudine.* In the conclusion, *e con ógni umiltà le bácio i santíssimi piédi.*

Di Parígi, il prima di Gennájo, 1807.
Di V. Sta.

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed
ossequiosíssimo servo.

To a prince-cardinal.

All' eccellentíssimo ed eminentíssimo príncipe, il signór cardinál Rezzónico. Róma.

Eccellentíssimo ed eminentíssimo príncipe. In the beginning, and in the discourse, *V. E.*

At the end, *E per fine le bácio con ógni riverénza la sácra pórpora*, or *il lémbo délla sácra porpora. Di Parígi, i 2 Febrajo*, 1807.

Umiſſíssimo, divotíssimo, ed
obbligatíssimo servitóre.

To a prince, who would have the title of *V. A. S.* if he had not been a cardinal, you must say *serenissimo*, and not *eccellentíssimo.*

To a cardinal that is not a prince.

All' eminentíssimo, e reverendíssimo signór cardinál Orsi.
Eminentíssimo

Digitized by Google

Eminentissimo signóre, e padróne colendissimo. In the middle of the letter, *V. Eminénza. E per fine a V. Eminénza bácio la sácra pórpora, e da Dio le prégo ógni maggior grandézza, e felicità;* or, *per fine le bácio umilissimaménte le máni. Di Parigi, i 3 Márzo,* 1807.

Di V. Eminénza,

Umilissimo, divotissimo, ed obbligatissimo servitóre.

A cardinal to a cardinal.

All' eminentissimo, e reverendissimo signór mio signór colendíssimo il signór cardinál Albáni. Róma.

Eminentissimo, e reverendissimo signór mio signór colendíssimo.

Nel résto ben sa V. Eminénza, ch' in ógni témpo sará immutábile la mía singolár divozióne vérso di lei che in tánto mi rasségno con baciárle umilissimámente le máni.

Parigi i 3 Aprile, 1807.

Di V. Eminénza,

Umilissimo, divotissimo, ed obbligatissimo servitóre.

Observe, that when the princes cardinals are at Rome, they are called by the title of *Eminence* and not *Highness;* pope Innocent X. having ordered it so, to make them all equal.

To a patriarch, an archbishop, a bishop, a nuncio, a prelate.

All' illustrissimo e reverendissimo signóre pr ne mio colendíssimo, mansignóre di Beaumont. Arcivéscovo di Parigi.

All' illustrissimo e reverendissimo signór pr ne mio colendíssimo monsignór di Choiseul, véscovo di Chalons.

Illustrissimo rev. signóre, prōne mio colendíssimo.

E con profóndo rispétto, e sommésso riverénza le bácio le sácre vésti. Di Parigi, i 6 Maggio, 1807.

Di V. S. ill. & rev.

Umilissimo, divotíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

If

Digitized by Google

If it be a cardinal that is a bishop or archbishop, you are to make use of titles belonging to such cardinals as are not princes.

To a secular abbot.

All' illustríssimo e reverendissimo signóre prône mío colendissimo il signór abbáte di Beaulieu. Mólto illústre reverendissimo, signóre prône mío colendissimo, e le bácio umilissimaménte le máni. Di Parigi, i 6 Giúgno, 1807.

Di V. S. ill. e rev.

Divotíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

If the abbot wears a mitre, they put, *Bácio le sácre máni.*

To a regular abbot.

Al reverendissimo pádre prône mío colendissimo il pádre D. Anselmo N. abbáte di N.

Reverendissimo pádre, e prône colendissimo.

Riverenteménte baciándo le mani a V. P. R.ma la prégo per singolár grázia volérsi ricordár di me ne súoi colloqui con Dio. Di Parigi, i 7 Giúgno, 1807.

Di V. P. rev.

Umilíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

To a canon, a curate, a priest.

Al mólto illústre e molto riveréndo signóre, e prône colendissimo il signóre V. canónico, or *arcipréte di,* &c.

If it be a person of distinction, you must say, *all' ill.mo e rev.mo sig.mo padróne colendissimo.*

To a general.

Al reverendissimo pádre mio osservandissimo il pádre N. N. generále de' P. P.

In the beginning.

Reverendissimo pádre, e prône osservandissimo.

Digitized by Google

At the conclusion.

Di V. P. rev.

Umilíssimo ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

To a prior, rector, guardian, or superior.

Al mólto reveréndo pádre e prône osservandíssimo il pádre N. prióre, rettóre, or *guardiáno,* &c. *d' PP. N.*

In the beginning.

Mólto reveréndo e prône osservandíssimo.

At the conclusion.

E le bácio umilissimaménte le máni. Di Parigi, i 8 Agósta, 1807.

Di V. P. mólto rev.

Umilíssimo ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

To a friar-priest.

Al mólto reveréndo pádre, or *Al mólto rev^do pádre e prône osservandíssimo il pádre N. del' órdine di san N.*

In the beginning.

Mólto reveréndo pádre.

At the conclusion.

E per fine a V. P. bácio con ógni affétto le máni, e mi raccomándo alle sue orazióni.

Di V. P. mólto rev.

Umilíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servítore.

To a lay-brother.

Al mólto onorándo fratéllo in Cristo fra Agostíno N. dell' órdine di N. or *nel convénto de' P P. di,* &c.

In the beginning.

Mólto onorándo fratéllo in Cristo.

Digitized by Google

At the conclusion.

E per fine vi bácio affettuosissimaménte le máni. *Di Parigi, il 9 di Settémbre,* 1807.

Mólto onorándo fratéllo in Cristo.

Divotíssimo ed affettuosíssimo servitóre.

To the emperor.

Alla sácra Cesárea ed Imperiále Maestà dell' imperatóre.

Sácra Cesárea maestà.

In the discourse, *Vóstra maestà.* At the end, *E per fine a V. M. bácio umilissimaménte le máni, pregándo Dío, che la cólmi di tútte le maggióri e più desiderábili felicità.* *Di Parígi, i* 10 *Lúglio,* 1807.

Di V. Cesárea Maestà.

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed ossequiosíssimo servitóre.

To the King of France.

Alla sácra reál Maestà del Rè Christianíssimo.

Or, *Alla Christianíssima Maestà del Rè di Fráncia.*

Or, *Alla sácra Maestà del Rè di Fráncia.*

In the discourse, *Vóstra maestà,* or *Sire.*

At the end, *Cólmi Dío N. signóre le felicità presénte délla maestà vóstra, d'áltre nuóve, e più grándi nell' avenire.* *Di Parígi, gli* 11 *Novémbre,* 1807.

Or, *Conservi Iddío lungaménte V. M. a quélle prosperità, che sótto il felicíssimo, e gloriosíssimo suo govérno élla fá godére a' suoi pópoli.*

D. V. M. Crist.

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed ossequiosíssimo servitóre.

To the King of Spain.

Alla sácra Cattólica reál Maestà del Rè di Spágna.

SIRE,

E per fine prégo Iddío ch' a V. M. concéda ógni grandézza, e felicità maggiore. *Di Parígi, i* 2 *Decémbre,* 1807.

Di V. M. Cattólica.

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed ossequiosíssimo servitóre.

To

Digitized by Google

To the king of Poland.

Alla sácra reál M. Ortodóssa del Rè di Polónia.

SI'RE,

Prósperi Iddío lungaménte la maestà vóstra, ed a misúra dell' accresciménto degli ánni, accrésca in lei la felicità de' succéssi. Di Parigi, i 5 Márzo, 1807.

Di vóstra Maestà Ortodóssa.

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

To other kings.

Alla sácra reál Maestà del Rè di Portogállo, d' Inghiltérra, di Suézia, di Danimárca, di Sardégna, di Prússia,

In the beginning, SI'RE.

At the end, as above.

To the dauphin of France.

Al serenissimo príncipe Delfíno di Fráncia.

At the beginning, *Serenissimo príncipe.*

In the middle, *V. A. R.*

At the end, *Consérvi Iddio per lunghissimo témpo quel béne alla Fráncia, che le ha dáto in dár la serenissima di lei persóna, a cui con profónda riverénza m' inchíno. Di Parigi, gli,* 8 *Maggio,* 1807.

Serenissimo príncipe, or *di V. A. R.*

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

To the duke of Burgundy.

To the count of Provence.

All' altézza reále del signóre dúca di Borgógna, di Berri, &c.

In the body of the letter, *V. A. R.*

At the end, *prósperi Iddio lungaménte l' Altézza V. R. e le concéda quel piéno cólmo di grázie che méritano le reáli virtù che'l móndo ammira néll' serenissima sua persóna.* In the end, *a V. A. R. bácio umilissimaménte le máni. Di Parígi, li* 7 *Giúgno,* 1807.

Di V. A. R.

Umilíssimo, divotíssimo, ed obbligatíssimo servitóre.

Digitized by Google

To a prince of the blood.

All' Altézza Serenissima del signór ducá d' Orleans.

All' Altézza Serenissima del signór príncipe di Conde.

Or, *Al serenissimo príncipe signōre, e prōne mio colendissimo, il príncipe di Conti.* One may also put, *All' Altézza serenissima*, &c. as above.

To the doge of Venice.

Al serenissimo príncipe N. N. Dóge di Venézia. Serenissimo príncipe.

E con profóndo inchino le bacio riverenteménte le mani.
Di Parigi 8 d' Agósto, 1807.
Di V. Serenità.

Umilissimo, divotissimo, ed obbligatissimo servitóre.

To sovereign dukes.

All' Altézza serenissima del Dúca di Parma.
di Módena, di Mántova.

In the beginning.

Serenissimo príncipe, or *S. A.*

At the conclusion.

E per fine a V. A. serenissima bácio rispettuosissimaménte le máni, pregándole dal ciélo ógni véra contentézza. Di Parigi, &c.

To the grand master of Malta.

All' eminentissimo signōre, e prōne mio colendissimo il Gran Maéstro délla religióne di Málta.

In the beginning.

Eminentissimo signóre, e próne mio colendissimo.

At the conclusion.

E per fine a V. eminénza prego dal ciélo ógni più desideráta prosperità, e le bácio riverenteménte le máni.
Di Parigi, li, &c.
Di V. eminénza

I shall

I shall put the conclusion of letters no more; you will find a number of them at the end of this collection.

To secular electors of the empire.

All' Altézza serenissima Elettorále del signór Dúca di Baviéra, príncipe Elettorále del sácro Románo Império.

To ecclesiastical electors of the empire.

All' Altézza serenissima Elettorále del signór Arcivéscovo di Colónia, príncipe Elettorále del sácro Románo Império.

To dukes who are not sovereigns.

All' illustrissimo ed eccellentissimo signóre e próne colendissimo il signór dúca, &c.

To ambassadors.

All' illustrissimo ed eccellentissimo signór padróne colendissimo il signór N. ambasciadóre di sua Maestà Christianissima.

To an earl, a marquis, or baron.

All' illustrissimo signóre próne mio colendissimo il signóre Cónte N. Marchése N. Baróne N.

To a governor,

If he is an ecclesiastic, as those of Italy.

All' illustrissimo e reverendissimo signóre próne colendissimi monsignór N. governatóre di Róma.

If he is not an ecclesiastic.

All' illustrissimo signóre e próne mio colendissimoil signóre N. governatóre di N.

To a privy-counsellor.

All' illustrissimo signóre e próne mio colendissimo il signóre N. del consíglio di státo di sua Maestà Christianissima.

In the beginning.

Illustrissimo signóre próne mio colendissimo.

At the end.

Di V. S. Illma.

Digitized by Google

To a president.

All' illustríssimo signóre e próne colendíssimo il signór N. Presidénte nélla córte sovrána del parlaménto di Parigi.

To a master of requests.

All' illustríssimo signóre e padróne colendíssimo il signór N. Maéstro délle súppliche, Consigliére di S. M. Christianíssima.

To an ecclesiastical counsellor in parliament.

All' illustríssimo e reverendíssimo signór padróne mio colendíssimo il signór abbáte N. Consigliére nélla córte sovrána del parlaménto di Parígi.

To a counsellor of parliament.

All' illustríssimo signóre padróne mio colendíssimo il signór N. Consigliére nélla córte sovrána del parlaménto di Parígi.

To a counsellor of the court of aids.

All' illustríssimo signóre padróne mio colendíssimo il signór N. Consigliére nélla cámera de' sussídj di Parígi.

To a doctor of law or physic.

Al mólto illústre ed eccellentíssimo signóre N. dottóre di légge, or *dottór médico in Parígi.*

To a professor, or language-master.

Al mólto illústre, e mólto eccellénte signóre il signóre N. lettóre di Teología nel collégio di N.

If he is a language-master, *Maésto insígne nélla língua Italiána, virtuóso di liúto, di chitárra, di schérma, maéstro a balláre.*

To an advocate, an attorney.

Al mólto illústre signóre padróne colendíssimo il signóre N. Avocáto, or *Procuratóre del parlaménto di Parígi.*

They write, *al mólto illústre signóre padróne osservandíssimo*, or *singolarissimo*, to a gentleman, a tradesman, a secretary;

Digitized by Google

secretary; but if he is a secretaay to a prince, they write *all' illustríssimo*, as to a resident and persons of distinction.

To a tradesman.

Al' mólto magnífico signóre, il signór N. sartóre, fornáro, macelláro, &c.

Or, *Al' mólto magnífico maéstro Francésco N. tinazzájo, marescálco, sartóre*, &c.

But it is better to write, *all' illústre signór mio*, &c. because the title of *magnífico* is become obsolete.

To a waiting-man, or any other domestic.

A Francésco N. Ortoláno che Dío guárdi.

At the end, *E sarò sémpre dispostíssimo a compiacérvi.*

Different Forms of concluding Letters.

OBSERVE that these are the Forms used by the old writers, and such as in epistolary collections occur most frequently.

E per fine V. S. or *a V. S. illustríssima*, or *a V. eccellénza*, or *V. A.* or *a V. Eminénza*, or *V. maestà bácio umilissimaménte le máni.*

E quì per fine le bácio con ogni più riveránte affétto le máni.

E le bácio affettuosaménte le máni.

E baciándole affettuosissimaménte le máni, le prégo ógni béne, e contento.

E per fine le báccio con ogni maggiór riverénza le máni.

E per fine a V. S. bácio con ógni affétto le máni.

E per fine a V. S. bácio le máni e le prégo ógni véro bene.

E per fine le bácio riverenteméntе le máni.

E le bácio umilissimaménte le máni.

E per fine a V. S. bácio le máni.

E per fine a V. S. bácio mílle vólte le máni.

E le bácio le máni.

E con quésto a V. S. bácio le máni, ed al signór Piétro suo zio.

E con pári, e congiuntíssimo affétto le baciámo, ed a tútti di cása sua, le máni.

Digitized by Google

Manténgami V. S. il luógo nélla grázia ch'io le bácio le máni di cuóre.
E le bácio le máni salutándo la signóra sua consórte.
E per fine nélla buóna grázia di V. S. mi raccomándo, e le bácio le máni.
E mi vi raccomándo cordialménte.
E per fine a V. P. mi raccomándo pregándola avér memória di me ne' suoi sánti sacrifizj.
E baciándole le máni, alle súe orazioni mi raccomándo.
Ed a V. S. bácio umilissimaménte le máni cóme ancóra fò al signór António.
E per fine salúto V. S. ed élla si compiacerà, a nóme mio baciáre le mani al signór Giovánni mio cugíno, ed álla signóra Caterína sua consórte.
E riverenteménte a V. eccellénza bácio le máni.
Ed a V. eccellénza fò umilissimo inchíno.
Ed a V. eminénza riverenteménte m' inchíno.
Ed alle sue orazióni mi raccomándo.
E le bácio con la dovúta riverénza le máni.
E résto facéndole umilissima riverénza.

To a mean person they write.

E sono { *al servízio.* / *affettuosissimo per servírvi.* / *vóstro avorévole.* / *a' vóstri piacéri.* }

The forms most used at present are, *E rassegnándole la mía servitù, fò a V. S. umilissima riverénza.*
E con tútta la stima mi dico.
E con tútto l' osséquio mi dò l'onóre d' assicurárla del mio profóndo rispétto.
E pregándola de' di léi stimatíssima comandaménti mi prégio d' éssere.
E résto con tútto 'l desidério di potér' incontráre quálche occasióne di servír V. S.
Fo sóno con tútta la stima ed il rispétto che le dévo
E per fine mi dò l' onóre d' offrírle la mia debolíssima servitù.
E sia persuása che sóno e sarò sémpre dispósto ad ubbidírla.

And others of the like kind.

Digitized by Google

LETTERE MERCANTILI.

VENEZIA, al Sigr. N. N.

AMSTERODAMO,
il 2d' Agósto, 1807.

Stimatissimo Signóre!

AVéndo risolúto col nóme d'Iddío d'erígere cása di negózio in quésta Città (Piázza) sotto 'l nóme mío, con facoltà, e govérno tále di potér' intrappéndere qualúnque onorévole negózio, e tenéndo voi nel número de' più cári, e parziáli Amíci, vene pórto l'avíso con quésta mía, acciò, nelle vóstre occorrénze possiáte valervi dell' ópera mía sì per provisióne mercanzíe, per le quáli ho módo di fárvi godér ógni vantággio, cóme in Cámbi, ed áltro che vi póssa di quá bisognáre! sicúro di riportárne óttimi e leáli trattaménti, esibéndovi la mía servitú, cólle sólite e consuéte provisióni, con che vi dichiariáte prónto ad úna recíproca corrispondénza. In táuto faréte nóta di non prestár féde ch' álla mia férma, cólla quále sarà la presénte sottoscrítta, e mi diréte cóme dovrò contenérmi per voi, per isfuggíre gli erróri. Atténdo l'onóre de' vóstri stimatíssimi comándi per fárvi sperimentáre 'l génio particoláre c'ho délla vóstra gráta corrispondénza, accertándovi ch'álle occasióni sarò per ricórrer' a' vóstri favóri, méntre affetuosaménte salutándovi, vi bácio le máni.

VERONA, N. N.

AMSTERODAMO.

PER mancánza d' occasióni non v' abbiámo più scrítto, servirà quésta óra per caraménte salutárvi, e dírvi, che per órdine del Signór N. N. di Róma v'abbiámo

biámo in Condótta di quésti SS. N. N. spedíta fránca, e bén condizionáta úna bálla con fuóri márca, e número contenénte Pánni d'Olánda che vi piacerà in témpo débito procurárla, per dispórne a vóglia del détto amico di Róma, dal quále vi varréte délle vóstre spése con avvisáre 'l seguíto. Con quésta occasióne v'offeriámo la servitù nóstra in túttò ciò che vi potésse occórrere, che prontíssimi sempre ci avréte, e B. L. M.

ROMA.

AMSTERODA'MO.

S'ENZA le carissime vóstre si sóno proviste le Pézze 6tto Pánni ch' avéte ordináto di perfettíssima qualità, ed úna Bálla délla fuóri márca e número résta spedíta a vóstra disposizióne in condótta di quésti SS. N.N. ai SS. N.N. di Veróna, che faréte a procurárla da' medésimi per dírcene a suo témpo la ricevúta, e soddisfazióne, cóme non dubitiámo, avendóvi procuráto 'fior di róbba, ed avantaggiátovi al possíbile táuto nélla cómpra, che nélle spése, il che sarà motivo di continuárci in abbondánza i vóstri impiéghi, e cóme dáll' ingiúnto cónto vedréte, ov' abbiámo dáto débito per il cósto e spéso di f . . . Bco. che di tánti ci daréte crédito, attendándo che celi rimettiáte al maggiór nóstro vantágio, e sópra di voi, alla ricevúta del cónto cólla solíta vóstra puntualità, e favoríteci di nuóvi, e maggióre vóstri comándi, che prontíssimi ci avréte con tútto l'affétto, col quále caraménte salutándovi, B. L. M.

AMSTERODA'MO, SS. N. N.

ROMA.

CO'LLA gratíssima vóstra dei . . ho ricevúto 'l cónto délle Pézze 8. Pánni d'Olánda che m'avéte proviste, e spedíte in Bálla N . . . . al SS. N. N. di Veróna a mia disposizióne, che la procurerò da medésimi.

Non ho dúbbio che saránno délla perfétta qualità che díte, ed a suo témpo vi dirò la ritrováta. In tánto per fárvi valére 'l vóstro avánzo ho ordináto al Sigre. N. di Venézia di provedérvi súbito f . . . Bco. importáre

detta

Digitized by Google

détta Bálla, che l'effettuerà con ógni puntualità, attendéndo da vói avvíso che sia seguíto, e che mene abbiáte dáto crédito a fronte di détta partíta: nel méntre vi piacerà fár nóta di provedérmi Pézze due Pánni di Berrì per Tabárri che potréte pagáre f. 5. incírca il bráccio in biánco, e fárli tíngere scarlátto cóme la móstra, ed in apprésso vi darò nuóvo órdine per compíre una ballétta, raccomandándovi che détti Pánni síano di buón córpo, buón lanággio e ben copérti per dármi ánimo alla continuazióne de' miei impiéghi che non saránno scársi, se mi troverò ben favorito, ed offeréndomi a' vóstri comándi, prontíssimo vi salúto, e B. L. M.

AMSTERODAMO, SS. N. N.

VENEZIA.

PER órdine, e conto del Signóre N. N. di Róma vi riméttо a úso D .... Bánco da N, N. léttera N. N. a grósси .... ducáta che ne procureréte proméssa, e pagaménto in témpo intendéndovene con détto Amíco avvisándo 'l seguíto, e pregándovi de' vóstre comándi vi salúto caraménte, e B. L. M.

ROMA, N. N.

AMSTERODAMO.

COLLA vóstra carissima dei ... Corrénte ci rimettéte da quésto N. N. f. Bánco ad úso léttera vóstra, sene procurerà accettazióne, ed a suo témpo ne cercherémo 'l pagaménto per creditárvene cóntro la Ballétta téle d' Olánda mandátavi, e quándo áltro in contrário non sentiáte, tenéte l'affáre terminato. Non ci résta, che pregárvi délla continuazióne de' vostri stimatíssimi comándi per i quáli prontíssimi sémpre ci avréte, salutándovi caraménte vi B. L. M.

Digitized by Google

FIRENZE, N.N.

AMSTERODAMO.

E MOLTO témpo che non v'ho scritto per mancánza d' occasióni, servirà quésta per salutárvi caraménte, e dírvi che a persuasióne, del S. N. N. di Livórno, ho risolúto fáre úna piccola pruóva délla vóstra fábrica, commetténdovi due cásse dráppi o mantíni di buóna qualità e de colóri che vi móstra l'ingiúnta fattúra. Vi piacerà fárne nóta per inoltrárle quésta vólta cólla maggiore celerità possíbile per la sólita Condótta facéndomi álla spedizióne Trátta dell' impórto, che'l vóstro cárico incontrerà il dovúto ricóvero, raccomandándovi che i colóri síeno ben viváci, di buón péso e di perfétta qualità, cosí che mi facciáte vantággio nel prézzo e rispármio nélle spése, se desideráte la continuazióne de' miéi impiéghi che saránno di quálche sómma, se mi vedrò ben trattáto, come non dúbito del vóstro affétto; ed offeréndovi la servitù mía in túttо ciò che quì póssa occórrervi affettuosaménte vi B. L. M.

Raccomandazióne d' un' Amico passaggiére, ed Assegnazióne fáttagli de' danári necessárj, &c.

Mio Signóre,

SE'NZA cáro vóstro, mi rappórto sópra la mia antecedénte, che fù ai 10 del passáto. Quésta sérve solaméntе per pregárvi, che se 'l signór N. che párte oggi di quì per N. venisse a riverírvi da párte súa e nóstra, con ricercár' i vóstri consígli ed ajúti d' assísterlo nelle sue occorénze: s'égli avésse bisógno di danári, di fornírgliene sin alla sómma di fl 1000 monéta corrénte cóntro quittánza, e di mettérmeli a cónto senza darmene avíso, Vi resterò con óbbligo per quésto, e per gli altri favóri ch' avréte la bontá di far' al détto Signóre, ch'é mólto nóstro amíco. Raccomandándovi 'l ricápito dell' inclúsa, caraménte vi B. L. M.

SE'NZA

SE'NZA cára-vóstra, la presénte sarà per dírvi ch'atténdo abbíate riscósso da' Signóri N. di costí fl———— e datómene crédito ed avvíso. In quésto méntre vi riméttо áltri fl--, sópra 'l Signór N. pur di costí, per léttera di quésti Signóri N. di cui vi piacerá di procurár l'accettazióne, e pagaménto al suo témpo, ed imborsáti che gli avréte, mene daréte pariménte crédito, ed avvíso. In tanto faréte nóta di provédermi le sótto notáte mérci e di spedírmele in duo Baríli, quándo però mele vogliáte dáre al prézzo avisátovi: in diffétto, tralasciáte ánco di riscuótere suddétta riméssa con rimandármene la léttera: ma quándo avréte risolúto di spedírmi i détti Baríli al prézzo accennáto, saréte rimborsáto súbito del vóstro avánzo, e sarà caúsa di dárvi Commissióni di maggiór sostènza. Marcheréte i Baríli di Num. 10. 11. colla sólita mía márca avánti, e per grázia non vi dimenticáte délla féde di sanità sópra cotésti Baríli, dóve si attésti che la róbba sia státa costi fabricáta, e résto.—

DA'LLA cortése vóstra dei 7 passáto sentiámo con gústo cóme siéte prónti a favorírci non soláméntе nell' occasióne di negózj, ma ánco in provedérci le gallanterie délle quáli vi pregámmo, per il che vi restíamo infinitaménte obbligati; e per corrispóndere nel prímo cápo, andiámo procurándo Commissióni de' nóstri Amíci di fuóri da' inviárvi, e per l'áltro vi mandiámo qui unita, (*o*r annéssa) una specificazióne di quánto bramerémo, rimetténdo 'l túttо al vóstro génio e piacére, e pregándovi di tánte cóse curióse, che si fabrícano in cotésta Città, di scégliere quélle ch'a voi parránno più próprie a regaláre e dilettáre cérte Damigélle nobili, a cui le abbiámo destináte. Quándo saránno prónte, ne faréte una scátola, ed inviándo ai Signóri N. di Bolzáno, faréte lóro la trátta del lóro impórto, che, compiránno a dovére per nóstro órdine; e per fíne vi B. L. M.

PER dar princípio a prevaléreі de' vóstri favóri esibítici, risolviámo di commèttervi i sótto nótati 7, Barili..... e c me vedr te dall' anéssa nota, che vi si mánda in túttа confidénza, ci véngono offérte quélle

róbbe

Digitized by Google

róbbe da áltri ai sottonotáti prézzi, percio vi preghiámo d'avantaggiárci di quálche coséttа, se sarà possíbile per obbligárci a continuáre con vói in' commissióni più rilevánti, ed a passár' una buóna corrispondénza a sodisfazióne comúne. Quanto più présto potréte, fáteci la spedizióne di quésti sette Baríli, per ordinárvene súbito, giúnti quélli áltri. Fáte nóta d'addrizzárci détti Cólli cólla lóro féde di sanità anticipáta per N. al Signór N. dal quále vene farémo provedér costi cólla dovúta puntualità l'ammontáre. Vi preghiámo di procurár di servírci in túttа diligénza, e con túttі gli estrémi vantággi, ma sópra túttо, fior di róbba, acciochè véuga aggradíta da questi nóstri Avventóri, e confórme le promésse fátteci de' 10 Febrájo prossímo passáto.

PER rispósta délla cára vóstra de' 22. passáto, gódo di sentíre abbiáte ricevúto ed imborsáto la cédola di cámbio di fl.———da me riméssivi sópra cotésti Signóri N. Di grázia, s'egli e' possíbile sénza vóstro pregiudízio, compiacétevi con sudétti fl....saldárne la partíta: mentre, cóme ben sapéte, avéte pósto la róbba più cára á me che non avéte fatto ad áltri di quì avéndo ciò visto con gli ócchi miéi propj, e v'assicúro, che se mi faréte godére qualche vantággio, non mancheréte mái di Commissióni dálla párte mía, ed in bréve vene ordinerò 2 Baríli; ma saldáte s' è possíbile la partíta suddétta, quándo però non lo vogliáte fare, avisátemele, che súbito vi farò pagáre quel póco avánzo che pretendéte; ma poi le míe Commissióni saránno scárse, perchè non è di ragióne ch'io pághi più dégli altri: e caramènte vi. B. L. M.

SIAMO ai 3 dí Lúgli tuttavía sénza vostre cáre, e ciò sarà caúsa di ménо dírvi. Sólo quésta servirà per confermár 'l déttovi in cópia, soggiungéndo che dai Signóri N. di N. vi saránno puntualménte provísti fl.... monéta corrénte avéndo ánco quest' ordinário scrítto a cotésti Signóri N. &c. di pagárvi per nóstro cónto contro vóstra sémplice quittánza áltri fl.... délle quáli due partíte vi piacerà sollecitáre l'imbórso per dárcene poi credito ed avíso, cosi cólle nóstre seguénti vi farémo áltre rimésse per contrapórle túttе all'

ammontáre

ammontáre de' sétte Baríli mérci commèssevi' de' quali sen' atténde quánto prima la spedizióne e quésta vólta, per potérvene commétter di máno in máno áltre in maggiór número; ma bisógna assolutaménte, che ci facciáte godére tútti gli estrémi avantággi ne' prézzi e nélla squisitézza della róbba. Con atténder d'ogni cósa gráto successo facciámo fine con B. L. M.

IN rispósta délla cára vóstra de' .... ho ottenúto accettazióne dei fl ... corrénti sópra quésti Signóri N. per léttera del Signór N. di N. allo scadére délla quále procurerò 'l pagaménto con dárvene crédito al suo luógo. Dal cónto inviátovi óggiotto, avréte vedúto quánto mi si déve per mio avánzo, il quále prégo di fármi entrár pariménte e d'onorármi d'altri vóstri cári impiéghi. Qui inclúsa và (*or* c'é) una fattúra e fédè di sanità sópra 'l Baríle Num. 6. mandáto ai Signóri N. di N. a vóstra disposizióne di cui procurerête la ricevúta: con dármi crédito del suo ammontáre: e per fine vi B. L. M.

CON gratíssima vóstra de' 17. stánte. In rispósta vediámo che per la mórte di vóstro Signór Pádre, che Dío ábbia in glória, avéte risolúto di far córrere in avvenire 'l negózio sótto nome vóstro; di cúi sen'è fátta la dovúta nóta, ed in particoláre, di con crédere per vói ad áltra máno ch'álla vóstra: e per nói lo faréte al sólito. I quáttro Baríli ... giúnsero poi in Bolzáno, dóve li facciámo fermáre per provárne la fine in fiéra próssima mézza Quarésima, nella quále ánco vediámo che vi varréte del vóstro avánzo il quále farémo ricapitáre puntualménte, e sta béne che procuriáte quánto prima d'inviár ánco gli altri sei Baríli per conto a metà, che di tútto ne procaccierémo lo smaltiménto a maggiór benefizio comúne, dándovi párte del seguíto; e pur fine vi B. L. M.

COLLA gratíssima vóstra de' 9 corrénte ci troviámo favoríti; dálla quále vediámo l'informazióne che' desideráte di quéste nóstre téle supponéndo biánche, e non grézze. Sópra ciò vi diciámo, che'n símili mércanzie abbiámo da lunga máno buonissima occasióne in far restár serviti gli amíci non sólo con fior di róbba, ma

ánco

Digitized by Google

ánco con ógni vantággio possíbile. Sérvavi che i Cóll per Chiózza si póssono fáre tánto pesánti che si vuóle, perchè vámo fino colà per carretóni e per ácqua; ma quélli che si spedíscono per Miláno e Génova, non si póssono fáre che di 160. libbrè il Baríli. Círca la spedizióne Messína, sogliámo mandar' i Baríli per Génova, perchè ivi è sémpre quálche buóna occasióne da potér' instradárli: álle vólte si gode ánco la commodità d'una Galéra da potér tragettár la robba sénza assicurárla, ma per Felúcca si potrà, chi vorrà fárla assicuráre; básta che amíci buóni colà non vi mancheránno e se noi áltri siámo ábili a secondáre 'l vóstro diségno, siámo a' vostri servízj prontíssimi, e vi B. L. M.

SIA'MO a' 14. Novémbre cólle favoritíssime vóstre de' 10. del passáto, dálle quáli sentiámo cóme avéte fátto nóta délla Commissióne dátavi per cónto nóstro di trè Baríli. . . . in conformità dálla fattúra e móstre mandátevi. il che sta béne; cosí che avréste procuráto diligenteménte di provedérci fior di róbba, é vantaggiárci nel prézzo e nélle spése più che sia possíbile; speriámo adúnque con próssime vóstre d'intendere ciò ch'avréte operáto. Frattánto risolviámo ordinárvi di provedére per il medésimo cónto nóstro áltri due Barrili . . . dell' istéssa qualità delle suddétte conforme la móstra che tenéte; con mandárceli per via di Genova per mézzo dei Signóri N. a nóstra disposizióne; e se troverémo quésta strada méno dispendiósa ché quélla di Firénze, si continuerà. Procuráteci in tánto ógni soddisfazióne, nélla róbba, e nel prézzo, e nélle spése ógni rispármio cóme si confída nel vóstro affétto, prendéndo 'l vóstro rimbórso dai Signóri N. di Venézia a' quáli darémo buón' ordíne per l'estinzióne del nóstro débito. Vi preghiámo solaménte, d'aver' a cuóre 'l nóstro interésse, acciochè se'l negózio tornerà profittévole, come speriámo, si póssano replicárvi le Commissióni con più larga máno. Farémo ancóra riflésso a' prézzi che ci accennáte che vágliano le . . . . ciò è il . . . . ., e trovándovi apparénza d'útile, ci applicherémo ánco a quésto; dovéte però sapére che áltri amíci cele darébbero, póste in Bológna, a fi. . . . . cioè . . . ., méno che voi ci avéte dinotáto:

Digitized by Google

notáto: che perciò quándo risolverémo dárvene Commissióne ci dovréte far' ógni facilità; e per fíne caraménte salutándovi, vi baciámo le máni.

LA passáta fù nóstra última délla quále quì congiúnta vi mandiámo la cópia, per servírvene in mancánza dell' originále: dapói ci troviámo cólla grata vóstra de' 15. scadúto da Bolzáno, in rispósta: Dei fl . . . che ci rimettéte in dúe partíte, procurerémo l' accettazióne, ed al suo témpo 'l pagaménto. Quánto ai fl . . . che ci dovéte per pézze 60 téle grézze, consegnátevi fránche d' ógni spésa, celi potréte provedére per Augústa o Norimbérga, per saldár tal cónto e comminciáre un nuóvo, e per fíne vi salutiámo caraménte.

RISPONDE'NDO alla gratissima vóstra de 6 stánte; vi dirémo, che'n quésta nóstra fiéra già terminata, abbiámo fátto fíne de' due primi Baríli . . . . e di Baríli sei . . . . che ci provedéste per cónto a méta: del tútto sene formerá 'l cónto per mandárvelo con áltra. Vediámo ora per détto cónto a metà ch' avéte provísto e spedíta per Bolzáno al Signór N. a nóstra disposizióne áltri due Baríli . . . . e Baríli otto . . . . dei quáli cóme ánco di quélli che réstano, procurerémo lo spáccio, il quále seguíto, vene darémo ragguáglio con mandárvene 'l cónto; cóme per tánto l' abbiámo ricevúto del loro importáre, che rivedrémo per scritturárlo, in mancánza di errori (di vóstra conformità) abbiámo fátto nóta che de fl. 682 ch' avanzáte per la nóstra metà di suddétte mérci, cene sarà fátta trátta in fiéra próssima di Bolzáno dai Signóri N. di N. la ónde vi farémo le disposizióni necessárie, acciochè résti puntualménte compíta e secóndo che s'andrà esitándo, s' ordineránno nuóve províste, cóme intenderéte, e nel résto in che vagliámo servírvi, comandáteci liberaménte, e per fíne vi B. L. M.

SIGNO'R mío,

Scriviámo a' 3 Decémbre prívi di gráte vóstre. La presénte sérve sólo per dírvi, che per órdine, e cónto del Signór N. N. v'abbiámo spedíto due Cólli di divérse

Mer-

Digitized by Google

Mercánzie, cóme vedréte a piè délla presénte segnáti con fuóri marca, e vi saránno addrizzáti dal Signór N. di N. sì tósto che gli avréte ricevúti, vi preghiámo di seguírne l'órdine, che supponiámo già vi sarà dáto dal détto Signóre, dándoci avíso del seguíto. Prevarrétevi per le vóstre spése diétro la róbba, o sópra la Mercanzía. Non occorrèndo per adésso áltra cósa, restiámo sémpre dispósti a servírvi, e caraménte salutándo vi baciámo le máni.

N. N.

P. S. Le nuóve d' Itália sóno mólto contrárie álla Spágna, méntre riceviámo in quésto moménto l'avvíso da úno de' nóstri amíci di Miláno, che'l Generále N.. é státo fátto prigioniére di guérra con cínque míla Spagnuóli.

Signór mío,

SO'PRA la cópia délla nóstra última del prímo Settémbre scadúto, e per adésso vi diámo avíso che 'l Signór N. v'ha indrizzáto per Carrettiére N. una cássa No. I. ch'abbiámo commésso per próprio cónto, séndovi déntro mílle nóve cento settánta sétte márchi d'argénto con áltre róbbe di prézzo, cóme vedréte dálla nóta qui sótto uníta, e vi preghiámo di farne célere inoltrazióne, e cólla minóre spésa che si potrà. Sérvavi l'avíso, e comandáte dóve ci troveréte capáci per réndervi servízj gradíti, non dubitáte che sarémo sémpre dispósti ad effetuárli con tútta quell' attenzióne che meritáte, e nélla stéssa maniéra, con cui ci favoríte sémpre, méntre caraménte vi salutiámo, ed augurándovi un felíce viággio, ed ógni vantággio possíbile álla próssima fiéra di N. deve fórse alcúno di noi avrà 'l piacére di vedérvi, restiámo.

IL falliménto del Signór N. seguíto in Parígi i 19 del Corrénte ci ha quási rovináti, perchè ci ha fátto pérdere dódici míla scúdi da qüálche témpo già spiráti, óltre un' áltra partíta di quáttro míla ótto cénto fiorini, che dovrà maturáre al natále di quést' ánno. Ma paziénza, Iddío ha volúto cosí, così sía. Vi dirémo, che témpo fà, démmo órdine al Signór N. d' addrizzárvi un Cóllo,

Digitized by Google

Cóllo, quéllo ch' ánco ci scríve d'aver fátto. Vi piáccia dúnque andárlo procurándo a suo témpo ben condizionáto, e celo rispediréte quánto príma per Líndo a nóstra disposizióne. Vi preghiámo a restríngere quánto mai sarà possíbile l' aggrávio délla Condótta, non dimenticándo d' unírvi, (o d' aggiungérvi) la bollétta di sanità. Avréte vísto cólla nóstra antecedénte un Baríle di Caffè all' indrízzo del Signór N. e méntre siámo entráti nel nuóvo ánno, v'auguriámo felicíssimo cápo d' ésso cólmo d' ógni béne e bramáta prosperità. L'istésso facciámo a quélli che v'apparténgono, e siámo di cuóre.

Príma Léttera di Cámbio a due mési di dáta.

Pisa. Gennájo 1797. per mille Piástre.

A DUE mési di dáta pagáte per quésta príma di Cámbio all' órdine del Signór N. mílle Piástre, valóre ricevúto contánte dal détto Signóre, e li passeréte secondo l' órdine di.

Al Signór N. ROMULÍNO.
a Cádice.

Príma Léttera a Vísta.

Liône i 10. Marzo 1807. per 300 Ducáti di Banco.

A VI' STA pagáte per quésta príma letléra di Cámbio all' órdine de' Signóri N. N. Fratélli, trecénto Ducáti di bánco, valóre ricevúto da' détti Signóri, che passeréte secóndo l' avíso di.

Al Signór N. CRISTO'FORO PAÚLI.
a Venézia.

Fórmula a' Assegnazióne.

SIGNO'R Filippo N. vi preghiámo di pagáre cóntra nóstra Assegnazióne al Signór Daniéle N. ad Ordine, ducénto Scúdi quaránta cínque Crucíferi in monéta, che passeréte cóme per avíso d

Francofórto, i 4 Agósto, CAR'LO N.
1797

Scúdi 200. 45, *Crucífero Monéta.*

Fórmula

Digitized by Google

Fórmula di Quittánza.

CONFE'SSO e dichiáro per la presènte d' avér ricevúto óggi dal Signór N. Mercánte di N. la Sómma di quaránta cínque Scúdi, che mi dovéva dópo la Fiéra passáta per divérse mercánze.

Lipsia, i 9 *Novémbre,* 1807 FERDINA'NDO N.

Fórmula di Ricevúta.

HO ricevúto dal Signór N. mille fiorini a' Cónto di quánto mi déve.

Argentina, gli ótto Decémbre, 1807. ANTO'NIO N.

Altra Ricevúta.

HO ricevúto dal Signór N. un plíco di N. per il Signór Príncipe N. che m' obbligò di fargli tenér' in máni próprie a mio risingo e pericolo.

Augústa, i 10 *Settémbre,* 1807. ANSE'LMO N.

Léttera di Vettúra per Térra.

Francoforto, i 15 *Giugno,* 1807.

Signóre,

B. T. ALL'A guárdia di Dío e condótta di Michéle Carrettiére di quésta Città, riceveréte úna Bálla di Mercánzie mercáta come in márgine, pesánte quáttro céuto cinquánta líbre, la quále avéndo ricevúta ben condizionáta, ed in témpo dovúto, gli pagheréte per la sua Vettúra a ragióne di due Scúdi per Quintále, come per avíso del

Vóstro umil^mo Servo N. N.

Léttera

Digitized by Google

Léttera di Vettúra per Acqua.

Amsterodámo i 20 d' Agósto,
Signóre, 1807.

VI mándo per la Náve (o bárca) di Giovánni N. Barcaruólo di N. quattórdici Cásse di Zúc-
D. P. chero marcáte cóme in márgine, le quali avéndo ricevúto i 25 del Corrénte in buóno státo, gli pagheréte per la sua vettúra a ragióne di duói fiorini per Cássa, ma solaménte la metà, se non le conségna al détto témpo. Sono

Vóstro umil^mo Servitóre,
N. N.

LETTERA DI CIVILTA

Léttera civile ad un Uómo.

Illustríssimo Signóre,

Padróne mío Colendíssimo.

LE réndo mílle distintíssime grázie per tutt' i favóri usáti vérso mío fíglio, méntre è státo Collegiále in quésta sua régia Accadémia, dóve mi páre ábbia fátto non mediócre profítto. Puo ésser' ben assicuráta V. S. Illustríssima, che mi farò sémpre glória di servírla in tútte le occasióni, nelle quáli vorrà onorármi de' suói pregiatíssimi Comandaménti, per testificárle l' indelébile gratitúdine che conservár débbo vérso l' innáta di lei gentilézza, ed in mancánza mía lo stésso mio fíglio, che si dichiára da léi favoritíssimo, non mancherà mái di compíre l' óbbligo suo per non rendérsi immeritévole délla di léi continuáta protezióne. Gradísca frattánto in ségno délla mía servitù e divozióne un forniménto di bottóni dell' última móda, venúta, solaménte la settimána scórsa da Lóndra, nè vóglia far' attenzióne álla qualità del dóno al di léi mérito in nissun módo

Digitized by Google

módo proporzionáto, ma al cuór del Donatóre fin' álle Céneri.

Di V. S. Illma.
Nápoli, i 7 Agósto 1807.

Divot^mo Umil^mo ed
osservandíssimo
Servitóre.

Léttera civíle ad úna Dónna.

Illustríssima Signóra,

Padróna mía Colendíssima.

PER farle vedére quánto stímo l' onóre de' di léi pregiatíssimi Cénni, al ricevimento dell' última súa in dáta dei 15. Mággior, ho pregáto 'l Giúdice di quésta nóstra Città Amíco mío strétto, affinchè spedísca la súa caúsa ventilánte nel súo Tribunále, e m'ha promésso che lo farà il mése próssimo, di maniéra tale che spéro, che V. S. Illmo sarà servíta sénza dúbbio, e le dico per suo ripóso, che le manderò a súo témpo Cópia della sentènza, cólla quále potrà éssa interaménte assicurársi, che vivo impazientíssimo d'ubbidírle, e rénderla persuása, e certificáta del rispétto, della veneraziône, e stima con cúi ho l' onóre di protestármele.

Di V. S. Illma.
Firénze
i 14 Lúglio
1807.

Divotíssimo ed obbligatíssimo
Servitóre
SEMPRO'NIO N.

P. S.

Súa Figlia góde assái buóna saláte, grázie al Ciélo, e per ésser dégna figlia d'úna degnissima Mádre, viéne stimáta ed amáta non solaménte da tútte quéste Religióse che quási l' adórano, ma da tútti quélli c'hánno la bélla sorte di conóscerla.

Léttera

Digitized by Google

Léttera
Del Serenissimo Príncipe LEOPO'LDO al Signór' Egidio Menágio.

SIGNO'R Menágio: Gli amorévoli sentiménti che V. S. mi significa di compatiménto e di duólo per la mórte del Serenissimo Príncipe *Mattias*, mío fratéllo, di felice memória, sóno próprj dell' animo súo cortése, esperimentáto da me in tánte occasióni; ónde li recévo io con affettuósa parzialità; e le réndo grázie ben grándi: desideráudo di póter corrispóndere álla cordialità di V. S. cólla pienézza déllà mía, in tútto ció che sía di súo gústo. Ed in tánto le áuguro dal Ciélo tútte quélle prosperità più perfétte che ella sáppia bramáre. Di Firénze, ai 25 Novémbre 1807.

Amorévole di V. S.

IL PRINCIPE LEOPOLDO.

Léttera del Sig^r MENA'GIO álla Signóra Contéssa déllà FAE'TTA.

SO'NO obbligatíssimo álla gentilézza di V. S. Illma déllà grázia singoláre che s'è compiaciúta di farmi cólla súa cortesíssima léttera. Che veraménte è fáre úna grázia singoláre ágli assénti, avérgli in memória in cosí aménо luógo, qual' é la Villa di *Frésne;* ed in compagnía di cosí amábili persóne, quáli sóno Madáma *du Plessis* e Madamigélla *le Gendre:* tútte cóse capacíssime d'occupáre interaménte l' ánimo súo, per gránde che sía. Quant' a me, non dirò già a V. S. Illma ch' ógni dì spésse fiáte ánch' élla mi tórna a ménte, non esséndone mái partíta. Le dirò béne che sóno a *Vitri*, luógo altresì aménо; dóve fra dótti Pastóri e vághe Pastoréllе si fánno tútt' i bálli e giuóchi che si scrívono del paése di Celadóne e d'Astréa: ma che ógni luógo m'attrísta dóv' io non vèdo V. S. Illma e che in quésto aménissimo luógo; vo fuggéndo tutt' i piacéri e passatémpi di cosi riguardévoli Pastóri e Pastoréllе.

Ch'a.

Digitized by Google

Sólo e pensóso, i più disérti cámpi
Vo misurándo a pássi tárdi e lénti.

Quíndi può ben conócere V. S. Illma: ch'io non son méno adésso délle di léi virtù e gentilézze invaghíto, ch' io n' era, allóra che dimorándo élla in *Angiò* nélla deliciosíssima Villa di *Ciampirè*. Tornerò a Parígi, súbito che vi sarà élla tornáta. Frà tánto le mándo il Madrigále Italiáno, da me fátto per Madáma di *Sevigni*, ad imitazióne di quéllo del Guarini, *Occhi stélle mortáli, &c.* tánto stimáto e tánto lodáto da V. S. Illustríssima. E per fíne le prégo ógni più desideráta felicità.

MADRIGA'LE DEL MENA'GIO.

Piánto di bélla Dónna.

Ah del Régno d' Amór prodígio tristo!
Spárger lágrime amáre
Que' dólci lúmi ho vísto;
La' trà le Grázie assíso
Soléa scherzáre il Riso.
Spargéan di pianto que' bógli occhi un mare,
Ma pur co' rággi ardénti
Spargéan fiámme cocénti:
E quel fatále ardóre
Tósto m' accése il córe.
O misera mía víta!
Occhi, lúmi immortáli.
Deh qual per i miéi máli
Rósso speráre dlta?
Se nubilósi ardéte,
Seréni che fárete?

FINIS.

T. C. Hansard, PRINTER, Peterborough-court, Fleet-street, London.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

JUN 2 5 1958

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: Dec. 2005

PreservationTechnologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION
111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111

Digitized by Google